



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

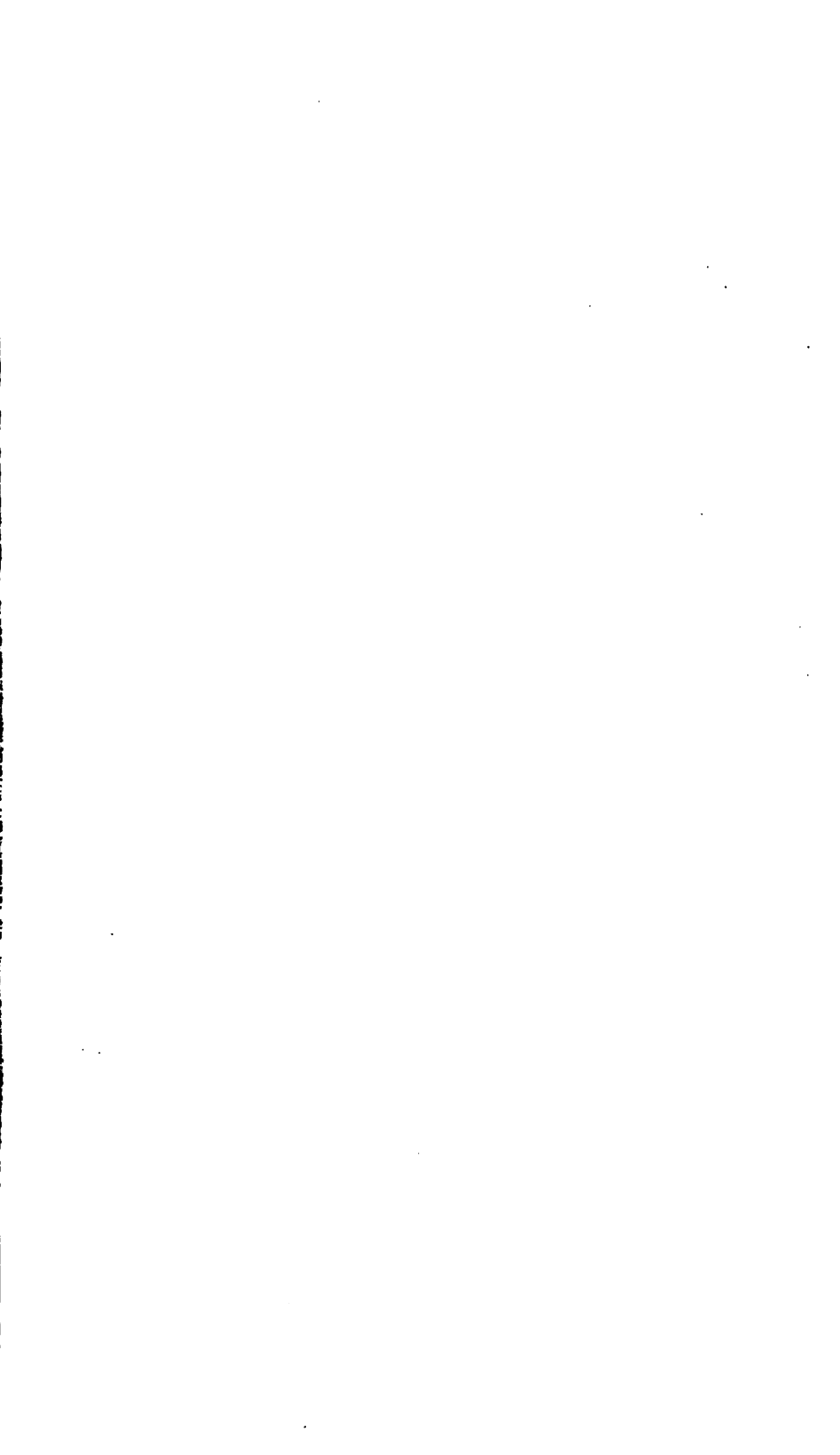
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

Br 2033.14



HARVARD  
COLLEGE  
LIBRARY









THE  
**HISTORY OF ENGLAND**

FROM THE

ACCESSION OF GEORGE III.

1760 TO 1835.

BY THE REV. T. S. *Thomas St. John* HUGHES, B. D.,

PREBENDARY OF PETERBOROUGH,

LATE CHRISTIAN ADVOCATE AT CAMBRIDGE, &c. &c.

IN SEVEN VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

LONDON:

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED BY A. J. VALPY, M. A.

AND SOLD BY ALL BOOKSELLERS.

1836.

~~2466.7~~

Bv 2035.14



411-176  
2464  
6

## ADVERTISEMENT.

---

THE Publisher flatters himself that this work will be favorably received by those who possess the various OCTAVO EDITIONS of HUME and SMOLLETT ; to which it will form a Continuation of the History of England to the present time —commencing with the accession of George III. in 1760, and including a narrative of important events more particularly interesting to the present generation.



## P R E F A C E.

---

IN this CONTINUATION OF OUR NATIONAL HISTORY the Author's principal object will be to give an accurate, and, as far as the limits of his work permit, a copious detail of the interesting and momentous events which have distinguished these latter times. In executing this task he will adhere as strictly as possible to those great rules which ought to govern every one who undertakes the very responsible office of compiling historical records—neither to advance what is false, nor to suppress what is true; to suspect his own judgment in the interpretation of motives, and to withhold his decision on important points, until he shall have diligently compared all the documents in his power, and fully considered the evidence thence to be derived. In some cases indeed historical truth is inscrutable: when such occur, he will content himself with stating the best opinions that offer themselves on each side of the question, and will leave the reader to decide for himself. Although it is impossible to

please all parties in these times of political excitement, he will not wilfully offend any : but he will not be deterred from exhibiting his own views of the truth by the fear of party misrepresentation, disclaiming at the same time any intention of advancing new theories, or indulging in fanciful speculations. He will be more than satisfied, if he shall succeed in perfecting a work that may be safely placed in the hands of a youth ; and which, by fairly detailing, and impartially commenting on, historical events, national institutions, and personal characters, may excite him to imitate what is good, and avoid what is evil ; may preserve him from a slavish apprehension of change on the one hand, and a headstrong zeal for innovation on the other ; may teach him to take an interest in the honor of his country, and to contribute, as far as in him lies, to the perfection of its constitution ; so that, like the monarch whose reign is now to be described, ‘ he may justly glory in the name of Briton.’

# CONTENTS

OF

## THE FIRST VOLUME.

---

PRELIMINARY ESSAY . . . . .	page 1
-----------------------------	--------

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### GEORGE III.—1760.

State of the country at the accession of George III.—Its prosperity due to Mr. Pitt—Aim of the new sovereign, in a change of system which he meditated—His coadjutor, the earl of Bute, unfitted for the purpose—Political problem of the interior cabinet—Characters of the principal members of the cabinet at the death of George II.—Interview of the new king with Mr. Pitt, and with the privy council—His speech to the council—Proclamation of his majesty—Duke of York and lord Bute sworn members of the privy council—Parliament prorogued—Speculations of the public on the new reign—Address to the king—Bishop of London's letter—Meeting of parliament and king's speech—Parliamentary addresses in return—King's reply, and second address from the house of commons—Supplies voted—Civil list, and new disposition of the revenues of the crown—The king's designs known to Mr. Pitt, and opposed to his policy—Great objects of the continental war—Reasons, and preparatory measures for the removal of Mr. Pitt from administration—Correspondence of lord Bute and Doddington—Subsidy voted to the king of Prussia—His victory at Torgau and its consequences—King's attendance at theatres, house of lords, and chapel royal—His excellent sentiments on Dr. Wilson's sermon—Political adulation rewarded—Tribe of political writers . 109

## CHAPTER II.

Grant of £300,000 to the Americans—Act relating to insolvent debtors—Lord chancellor appointed—Judges made independent of the crown—Unpopular duty laid on beer—Riots at Hexham—Speaker of the house of commons retires—Parliament prorogued and dissolved—Preparatory measures for an alteration of system—Earl of Bute appointed secretary of state, and other changes—Mr. Pitt continues in office—Military operations: capture of Belleisle and Dominica—Chastisement inflicted on the Cherokees—Siege and capture of Pondicherry—The great mogul's invasion of Bahar, in conjunction with Mr. Law—Defeated and taken prisoners—Treatment of Mr. Law—M. Lally's treatment in France—Operations of the war in Germany—Frederic's distress—His defence of Silesia—Capture of Schweidnitz by Laudohn and surrender of Colburg to the Russians, derange his plans—Operations in Westphalia and Hesse—Battle of Kirchdenkern—Subsequent operations, without any important result on either side—Inclination of France and the other allies to peace—Maria Theresa alone repugnant to it, but consents to a general congress at Augsburg—Proposals of a separate treaty between France and England—Negotiations respecting it—Interference of Spain—Policy of France and her allies obstructed by the talent and spirit of Mr. Pitt—Discussion still kept up—Mr. Pitt receives intimation of the family compact—Instructions given to the English ambassador at Madrid—Negotiations on the subject with the court of Spain—Spanish explanations unsatisfactory to Mr. Pitt—He proposes to seize their galleons and declare war—His advice being rejected by the English cabinet, he and lord Temple resign—His interview with the king—Receives the reward of his services—Changes in the ministry—Opposite opinions on Mr. Pitt's conduct—His popularity increases—Address of the city of London to the ex-minister—The king determines to marry—Method taken to procure an eligible consort—Princess Sophia Charlotte of Mecklenburg Strelitz chosen—The king's declaration of it to the council—Preparations, &c. to bring the queen over to England—Lands at Harwich—Received at St. James's—Marriage ceremony—Appearance of their majesties in public—Coronation—Civic feast at Guildhall, &c.—Meeting of the new parliament—Speaker chosen—The king's speech—Addresses—Settlement on the queen—Repeal of the compelling clause in the insolvent act—Supplies, &c. for 1762—Debates on them and the German war—New ministry determine to carry on the war with spirit—Lord Halifax meets the Irish parliament—His speech, and addresses in return—Negotiations with Spain respecting her secret treaty with France—Explanation demanded, and refused—Mutual departure of



the ambassadors—Memorial of the conde de Fuentes—Answered by lord Egremond—His majesty purchases Buckingham-house, and presents it to the queen—Death of eminent men. . . . . page 133

### CHAPTER III.

Determination of the British cabinet—War declared against Spain—Proceedings in parliament—Combination of France and Spain against Portugal—Firmness of his Portuguese majesty—Proposals made to him; his reply, and rejection of them—Declaration of war by France and Spain—King of England's message to parliament—Subsidy voted for Portugal—King's speech on the adjournment of parliament—Motives of the duke of Newcastle for retiring from office—His noble conduct at resigning it—Lord Bute succeeds him—Other changes in administration—Duke of Newcastle forms a political connexion with the duke of Cumberland in opposition to ministers—State of the king's sentiments with regard to Prussia—Death of the empress Catharine—Effect of it on the affairs of Prussia—Measures which led to the refusal of the British subsidy to Frederic—His resentment—His operations in Germany—His danger from the change of affairs in Russia, and escape—His success against Austria—Operations on the side of Westphalia between prince Ferdinand and the French generals—Affairs of Portugal, and successful resistance to the Bourbon confederacy—English efforts by sea—Conquest of Martinique and other West Indian islands—St. John's in Newfoundland captured by the French, but retaken—Attempts against the Spanish West Indian commerce—Attack and capture of the Havannah—Capture of Manilla, and of the Santissima Trinidad in the East Indies; also of the Hermione—Failure of an expedition against Buenos Ayres—French and Spaniards incline to peace, and send to open negotiations—Views of the minister and of other parties on this subject—Preliminaries of peace settled between Great Britain, France, Spain, and Portugal—Birth of the prince of Wales—The king's encouragement of literature and the fine arts—Addresses on the birth of the young prince, &c. . 184

### CHAPTER IV.

Facilities of carrying on negotiations—Terms of the preliminary treaty of peace—Objections urged against them, and the answers to these objections—Feelings of the French people respecting the treaty—Meeting of the English parliament, and the king's speech—Debates on the address to his majesty, which is carried by a great majority in both houses—Effect

of the reconciliation between England and France on the German powers—Miserable state to which they are reduced by the war—Negotiations between Austria and Prussia—Peace of Hubertsburg concluded—Relations of the states remain the same as before the war—Balance of power—Relations between England and Prussia—Growing power and influence of the former of these states—Her maritime code—General state of Europe—Political speculations, and increased intellectual activity—Attention paid by the different governments to their internal affairs—State of Prussia and Austria—Of France—Of Portugal—Of Spain—Of Russia—Of England—Her domestic policy, and alteration of system—Difficulties and extensive changes which ensued . . . . . page 215

## CHAPTER V.

Opposition to the minister—Necessity for taxation—Reduction of expenditure—Principle of taxation—Cider tax—General opposition to it—Resignation of lord Bute—Conjectures regarding the cause—Changes in the cabinet—Mr. G. Grenville prime minister—Publication of the North Briton—Character of Wilkes—Use of this demagogue in the altered circumstances of the constitution—Close of the session—King's speech—No. 45 of the North Briton—General warrant issued from the home secretary's office—Wilkes arrested—Committed to the Tower—Preliminary proceedings against him—Judgment of chief justice Pratt respecting the privilege of parliament—Wilkes discharged from custody—Lord Temple disgraced—Wilkes's violent conduct—Effect on public opinion—Death of lord Egremont—Negotiations with Mr. Pitt to bring him into administration—These fail—Recourse had to the duke of Bedford—Ministerial changes—Birth of the duke of York—Meeting of parliament—Proceedings against Mr. Wilkes—He is wounded in a duel—Debate on the privilege of parliament—Question carried against the decision of the court of common pleas—Protest in the house of lords—Address to the king—Riot when the order of parliament for burning No. 45 of the North Briton by the common hangman was put into execution—Proceedings of parliament in consequence thereof—Message from his majesty regarding the marriage of his sister—Actions brought by Wilkes against the secretaries and under secretaries of state—Chief justice Pratt's amended judgment respecting general warrants—Public gratitude displayed towards him—Mr. Wilkes required to attend at the bar of the house—Interposes delay, and finally escapes to France. . . . . 234

## CHAPTER VI.

Proceedings against Wilkes—Question on the legality of general warrants—Wilkes indicted, found guilty, and outlawed—Harsh proceedings against general Conway and others—Supplies raised—Notion taken up of taxing the American colonies—Manner in which the scheme was introduced—Postponed to the next session of parliament—Sentiments of the Americans on the subject, and measures taken by them to oppose it—These aided by other circumstances—The question considered, as to its right and expediency—War with the Indian tribes of North America—Peace concluded—Conduct of the savages and their prisoners, when the latter were delivered up—Bill for preventing abuses in franking letters—Exhortations in the king's speech—These needed by the state of the country—Voyages of discovery—Prince Frederic appointed bishop of Osnaburg—King of the Romans—Affairs of Poland, and election of Poniatowski to the throne—Affairs of Corsica—Final suppression of the jesuits in France—Death of Madame Pompadour—Injuries and insults offered by the French and Spaniards to the British nation redressed, and peace preserved. . . . . page 254

## CHAPTER VII.

King's speech—Notice of his sister's marriage—Questions in parliament relating to general warrants, and the attorney-general's powers—Discussion respecting the taxation of the American provinces—The Americans deny the principle and right—Opinions out of the house—Bill to purchase the regalities of the isle of Man—Causes in operation to weaken the administration—Distress of commercial men and laborers—Scarcity of provisions—Regency bill—Riots of the silk-weavers—Kind consideration of their majesties—Displeasure of the king against his cabinet—He applies to the duke of Cumberland to form a new administration—Conferences with lord Temple and Mr. Pitt—The attempt fails, and ministers propose the conditions of their continuance in office—These are accepted, but much dissatisfaction prevails on both sides—The king again makes overtures to lord Temple and Mr. Pitt, which fail—Formation of the Rockingham ministry—Its first acts—Death of its patron—Its influence diminished—Opposition in America made to the stamp duty—Acts of the presbyterian faction—Proceedings at Boston, New York, and Philadelphia, on the arrival of the stamp act—Reasons for the conduct of the colonists—Proceedings in the as-

sembly of Virginia, and in those of New England—Congress at New York—Its resolutions—Public irritation on the arrival of the stamps, and general proceedings of the colonists—Irritation in some of the West Indian islands—Conduct of the Rockingham ministry blamable—Obituary—Domestic events. . . . . page 277

## CHAPTER VIII.

Gloomy aspect of affairs at the opening of the session of parliament—King's speech—Petitions against the stamp duty—Debates on the address, which turn on American politics—Views of different parties regarding the right and expediency of taxing the colonies—Conference between ministers and Franklin—Opinions of the latter respecting the restoration of harmony between England and America—Repeal of the stamp act preceded by a declaratory bill, upholding the right of the British legislature to tax its colonies—Act of indemnity—Popular measures carried by the ministry regarding foreign trade and redress of domestic grievances—Question of general warrants—Tottering state of the cabinet, and reasons of it—Duke of Grafton resigns office—Sentiments of the Americans on the repeal of the stamp act—Those of Washington—Spirit of dissatisfaction still exhibited in the colonies, particularly those of New England—Disputes of the assembly at Boston with governor Bernard respecting the election of members of council—Compensation to the sufferers in the late riots—Provisions of the mutiny act—Same spirit shown at New York and other places—Intrigues of lord Northampton—Negotiations with Mr. Pitt and lord Temple—Quarrel of these two statesmen—Mr. Pitt, after several attempts, forms an administration—Distribution of the cabinet offices—Decline of lord Chatham's popularity and influence—Writings of Burke regarding the present changes—Ineffectual attempt of lord Chatham to establish a grand northern confederacy—Accurate information obtained by the king of Prussia regarding our administration—Alarming scarcity of provisions—Tumults in the country—Measures taken to remedy the evil—Embargo laid on vessels laden with wheat by royal authority—Altercation on this subject in parliament—Dispensing power of the crown vindicated by lords Chatham and Camden—Opposed by lord Mansfield and others—Act of indemnity passed—Signs of the cabinet's breaking up—Attempts of lord Chatham to support it—His bad state of health—Affairs of the East India proprietors—Interference of parliament in their concerns—Birth of the princess-royal—Marriage of the princess Caroline Matilda—Transactions in different states of Europe. . . . . 300

## CHAPTER IX.

Affairs of India—Retrospect of them as relating to the deposition of Mir Jaffier Ali Khan—Elevation of his son-in-law Cossim Ali Khan—His conduct—His interests clash with those of the company—Unjust usurpation of trade by individuals in the company's service—Attempts of president Vansittart to adjust matters with the subahdar—Interview between them—Regulations agreed on—Cossim's determination to throw open the trade if these should fail of success—Mr. Vansittart's agreement disavowed by the council—Injurious steps taken by the company's servants—Retaliation by the subahdar—Conduct of Mr. Ellis at Patna—Death of Mr. Amyatt—Recapture of Patna—Mr. Ellis and other English made prisoners—Cossim deposed, and Mir Jaffier again raised to the musnud—He grants the trade to private individuals, and other advantages to the company—Operations of the war between the company and Cossim—Battle of Geriah—Farther operations, and capture of Monghir—Murder of Mr. Ellis and other English prisoners—Patna taken by major Adams—Cossim takes refuge with Sujah Dowla, nabob of Oude—Alliance between him and the emperor to restore Cossim—Major Carnac takes the command of the army—Operations of the war—Major Munro assumes the command—Subdues the rebellious spirit of the army—Battle of Buxar—The emperor deserts the confederacy—Unsuccessful attack on fort Chandageer—Negotiations—Oppressive conduct of the company towards Mir Jaffier—His death—His son Najim u Dowla appointed to succeed him—Arrangements made with him—Steps taken by the directors to abate the oppressive conduct of their servants in the east—Lord Clive appointed governor in India, with a select committee—His sentiments and conduct on his arrival—His account of the proceedings of the company's servants—Lord Clive's progress up the country, and arrangements made with the subahdar—Military operations after the battle of Buxar—Sujah Dowla throws himself on the generosity of the English—Terms made with him and the emperor—Dewanee granted to the company—Disappointed expectations of the directors—Transactions of the select committee respecting the inland trade—Arrangement concerning military expenses—Double pay stopped—Conspiracy of the officers in consequence—Suppressed by the prudence and decision of lord Clive—Treaty of mutual defence between the company and native powers—Najim u Dowla dies—Succeeded by his brother Syeff—Affairs of the inland trade—Taken from the company's servants—Departure of lord Clive from India . . . . . page 338

## CHAPTER X.

Ministers defeated in a question regarding the land-tax—Parliamentary investigation of the affairs of the East India company—Bills relating to them brought in and passed—Question of supplies and the right of taxing America revived—Revenue bill, imposing duties on glass, tea, &c.—Bill for suspending the legislative assembly of New York—His majesty prorogues the parliament—Death of the duke of York, and birth of prince Edward—Death of Charles Townshend—Changes in the ministry, which takes the name of the Grafton administration—State of parties—Lord Townshend appointed lord lieutenant of Ireland—Meeting of parliament—High price of provisions—Measures regarding it—Adjournment—Expulsion of the jesuits from Spain; also from Naples, Sicily, and Parma—Origin of the measure—Danger and evils of the sudden abolition of the order—Affairs of Corsica—Parliament re-assembles—Supplies—East India company's act renewed—*Nullum tempus* bill—Arts used regarding the approaching election—Mayor and other members of the corporation of Oxford committed to Newgate—Parliament dissolved—Character of it—Proceedings in America in consequence of the revenue act . . . . . page 374

## CHAPTER XI.

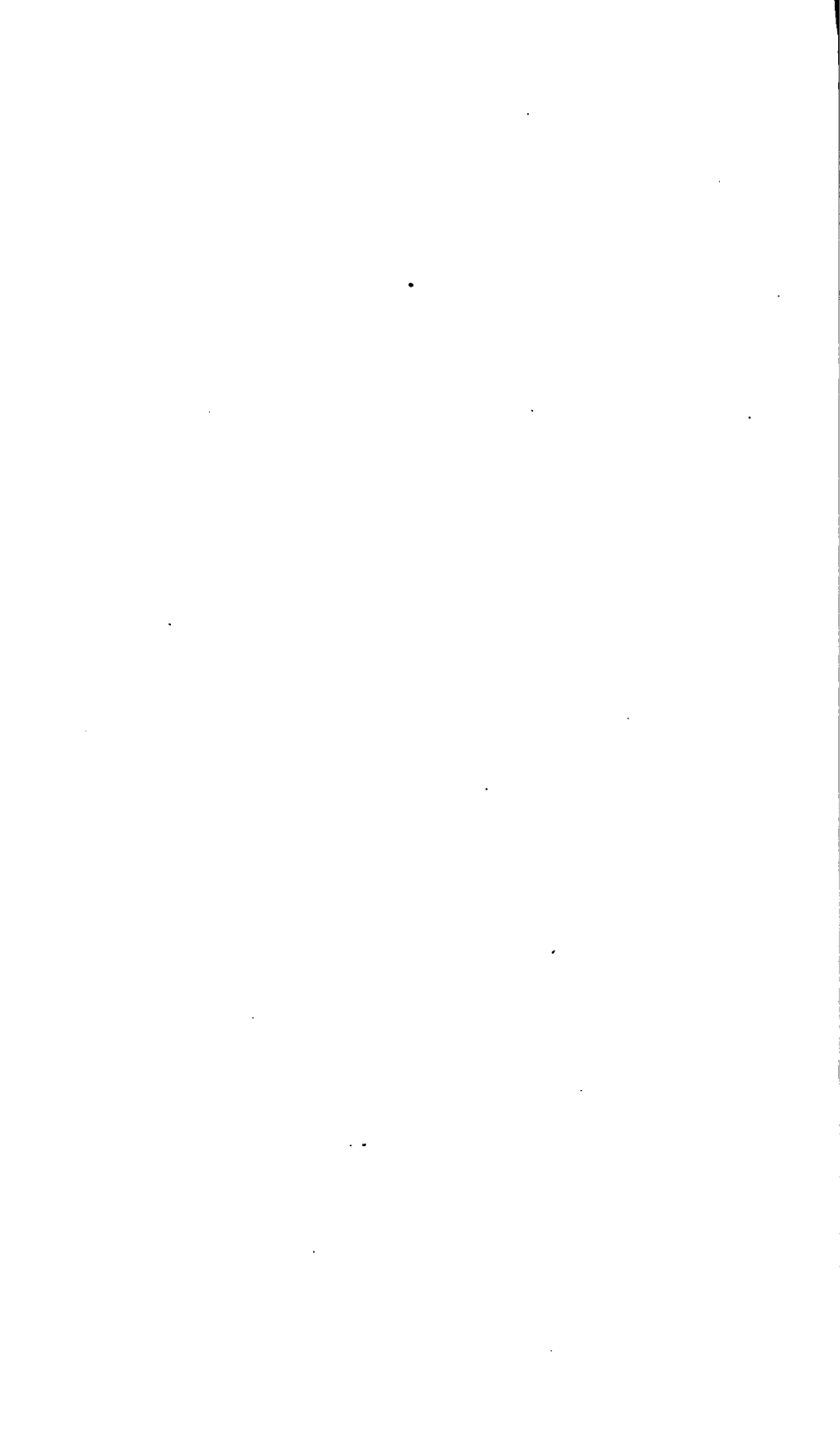
Domestic troubles and commotions—Difficulties in arranging the government—Democratic spirit—Wilkes—His application to the duke of Grafton neglected—His return—Is a candidate to represent the city of London—Fails, and is returned for Middlesex—Popular triumph—Legal proceedings against him—Is committed to prison—Popular tumults—Wilkes's conduct in prison—New parliament opened by commission—Prorogued to November—Riot in St. George's fields—Unfortunate consequences of it—Treatment of the soldiers—Wilkes's outlawry reversed, but verdicts against him confirmed—Lord Mansfield's vindication of himself—Wilkes in the zenith of his fame—The king patronises science—Death of princess Louisa—Visit of the king of Denmark to England—Birth of princess Augusta, and city address—Death of the duke of Newcastle and of archbishop Secker—Epitome of continental policy—Affairs of Ireland—Dissensions in the cabinet, and resignation of lord Chatham—Letters of lord Weymouth and Wilkes—Meeting of parliament, and king's speech—Debates on the address, &c.—Wilkes's petition—Lord Weymouth's

## CONTENTS.

xv

motion against him for libel—Expelled the house—Speeches by Mr. Burke and G. Grenville, &c.—New writ issued for Middlesex—Acts of the populace—New election—Wilkes and colonel Luttrell—The latter declared sitting member by the house of commons—Affairs of North America—Affairs of the East India company taken up by parliament—Arrears of the civil list—Prorogation of parliament—Conduct of the North American colonists—Discontents in England—Dr. Johnson and Junius—Addresses and counter-addresses, &c.—State of Ireland—Affairs of the East Indies and Hyder Ali—Alarm occasioned by them in England—Settlement between the company and the government. . . . . page 402

---





◊ PRELIMINARY ESSAY  
ON THE  
POLITICAL SYSTEM OF EUROPE,  
AND  
ITS CONNEXION WITH THE GOVERNMENT OF  
GREAT BRITAIN.

---

THE balance of power in Europe is a result of that federative union between its different states, which professor Heeren calls the 'States-system.' The relations of this system were produced, as he observes, by the progress of civilisation, which necessarily increases the points of contact among neighboring states : still they presuppose certain general objects, in which the common interest was concerned. Of this nature were the Italian wars—the affairs of religion after the reformation—the necessity of opposing the advances of the Turks—the commerce of the colonies, which was constantly increasing in value, and the commercial interests to which it gave rise. To all this there remains to be added, the facility of communication which printing and the establishment of posts afford ; whence the christian nations of Europe became, in a manner, morally united into one community, which was only politically divided.<sup>1</sup>

In this confederation, until within a few years, the monarchical principle exerted a predominant influence ; scarcely a

<sup>1</sup> Manual of the History of the Political System of Europe and its Colonies, &c., Oxford, 1834, vol. i. p. 9.

republic, beside that of the united Netherlands, having any weight in the system : hence the disorderly effects arising from great popular parties would have been unfelt and unknown, but for the intervention of religious dissensions : hence also the management of public affairs, becoming more and more concentrated in the hands of princes and their ministers, led to that cabinet policy which has been so long prevalent in Europe. The principles of this federative system were first developed by Lorenzo de' Medici, to sustain the independence of Florence : but though it terminated with him, it sprang up again in Italy, amidst the contests of France and Austria for that beautiful country ; and its central point was thenceforward fixed in the German empire ; which, being important to all, and dangerous to none, was peculiarly fitted to give strength and stability to the growth of such a confederation. One important consequence of this system was the recognised sanctity of legitimate possession—a second was the adoption of a principle called the ' Balance of Power ;' i. e. an attention paid by all the states to the preservation of their mutual independence, in preventing any particular nation from rising to such a degree of power as might be inconsistent with the general liberty.

The history of the States-system is divided by professor Heeren into three periods ; the first extending from the end of the fifteenth century to the accession of Louis XIV. ; i. e. from 1492 to 1661 ;—the second, from 1661 to the death of Frederic the Great, and the commencement of political changes in Europe in 1786—the third, from this latter period to the present times. The first is styled by him the political-religious period ; the second, the mercantile-military ; the third, the political-revolutionary and constitutional period ; in which he recognises successively, the rise, the establishment, and the dissolution of the ' Balance of Power.' In the first two periods and in the early part of the last, the northern European system, comprising Russia, Sweden, Poland, and Denmark, must be kept separate from that of the south, in which all the other states are included, with the exception of Prussia ; for this, after its aggrandisement, formed a connecting link, as it were, between them both.

In the States-system, at its commencement, Spain, France,

Austria, the German empire, and England, with the papal and Turkish powers, were the most important members in determining its political relations : of these, Spain, by means of her great American possessions, seemed to have the most brilliant prospects, though France had been considerably enlarged by the acquisition of Bretagne, and strengthened by the policy of Louis XI. The Austrian monarchy was yet in a state of formation ; while the German empire had attained to a more perfect organisation, by that established order and recognition of rights, which it owed to Maximilian I. The pope appeared in a twofold capacity, as spiritual head of the church, and as temporal ruler of its states ; a power strangely daring in its resistance and opposition to public opinion, though it had scarcely any other foundation on which it could rest : but it knew its consequence in the wants and jealousies of other potentates. The Porte, by the establishment of a regular corps of janissaries, and by its formidable navy, was at the summit of its greatness in Europe. Portugal was occupied in foreign discoveries and conquests. Venice was fast sinking into a rich but weak commercial establishment ; while in England a variety of causes contributed to exalt the monarchical power. The people being weary of those political disorders by which they had been so long harassed, and the nobles being extirpated or impoverished by the civil wars, nothing was left to withstand the cool and cautious ambition of Henry VII., in whom the long contest between the red and white roses terminated.

Though the English parliament had received its distinguishing features, it was still, and long continued to be, a body almost without a soul ; yet its peculiar organisation rendered it more capable of future life and energy than any other political association. Before the union with Scotland, and while bad government kept Ireland in a state of hostility, England rarely entered into combination with continental states, though the possession of Calais gave her both a claim and a power. In after times indeed, when Elizabeth had fixed the national character on the basis of protestantism, when Cromwell had taught nations to fear and respect her naval force, and when William had fixed her throne on the rights and privileges of the people, England, enriched by

commerce and illustrious by valor, became a central point, on which the balance of power rested—the very key-stone of history ; her name being connected with every great arrangement in which the cause of man was interested.

It has been found convenient, for the sake of clearness and distinction, to separate the general periods of the States-system into smaller divisions : accordingly the first division of the first general period is measured from the end of the 15th century to 1515 ; being occupied with the attempts of the French kings, Charles VIII. and Louis XII., to increase their power by Italian acquisitions : they were successfully resisted both in the north and in the south ; and France retained nothing of her conquests but the claims which led to them. In these contests were displayed chiefly the craft and treachery of Ferdinand of Spain ; the unconcentrated activity of Maximilian ; and the blind lust for aggrandisement of Louis XII. : but no grand interest, no great character appeared, as a moving spring in politics ; neither did the art of war, nor that of political economy, make much progress : the influence of extended commerce and distant colonisation scarcely came into play ; for the revenue drawn by Spain from the West Indies was not yet large ; and the principles of her colonial government were not yet developed.

The second division of this period extends from 1515 to 1556 ; involving those furious contests of Charles V. and Francis I., from which the great principle, called the balance of power, may be said actually to have arisen.

Both these princes became candidates for the imperial throne at the death of Maximilian : and as Charles was successful, the union of the crowns of Austria, Spain, and Germany on one head appeared fraught with danger to European liberty ; especially when the victory of Pavia seemed to constitute Charles master of Italy. He was prevented from becoming arbiter of Europe, not more by the defective organisation of his armies, than by the awakened jealousy of England and the Italian states : of this Francis was aware, when, with singular bad faith, he mentally protested against the treaty at Madrid, by which, after renouncing all claims on Italy, Flanders, and Artois, he ceded the duchy of Burgundy to his conqueror. A second contest soon became

unavoidable ; and a secret treaty was formed between Francis, the pope, Venice, and the duke of Milan ; which Henry VIII. of England also was induced by great promises to join. It was during this contest that Rome fell a prey to the imperial forces under the constable Bourbon ; and a secret alliance was formed, under the pretext of a commercial treaty, between the French monarch, and sultan Solyman II., the conqueror of Rhodes, and terror of Europe. The result, however, at the peace of Cambray, was an extension of the emperor's power in Italy, confirmed by his reconciliation with the pope, and followed by his coronation at Bologna : an hereditary dukedom was established in Florence, and the constitution of Genoa settled as it long afterwards remained.

The third contest between these two rivals had its origin in the articles of the last treaty. Francis could not endure the loss of Italy, especially of Milan ; so he determined on war, though he could not induce Henry VIII. or the German protestants to join him : he succeeded however in contracting an alliance with pope Clement VII., by the marriage of his second son, the duke of Orleans, with Catharine de' Medici, niece of his holiness :—a union, which, though it effected nothing at the time, owing to the pope's death, became afterwards of great importance. The French alliance with the Porte was now openly declared.

Italy, as before, was the chief, though not the only scene of war ; for the seizure of Savoy and Piedmont by Francis did not prevent an irruption of the emperor into the southern part of France. The contests, however, neither in Piedmont nor Picardy were decisive ; but a common danger, arising from the formidable advance of Solyman in Hungary, hastened the ten years' truce of Nice, which was concluded under the mediation of pope Paul III., though without the consent or knowledge of the sultan : its conditions were, that each power should retain what it possessed, their respective claims being referred to the pope : hence it happened, that the feudal investiture of Milan remained undetermined ; and the refusal of it to Francis, as well as the murder of his ambassadors in their passage through that state, determined him to engage in a fourth war, when only four years of the truce had expired.

## PRELIMINARY ESSAY.

He succeeded, not only in renewing his alliance with Solyman and the Venetians, but in adding to it Cleves, Denmark, and even Sweden ; though these two last-mentioned powers were of little importance on either side. The emperor, in the mean time, persuaded Henry VIII. of England, to join him in a league and a combined assault on France : yet the peace of Crespy was concluded in 1544, without procuring for either party the object of his contention. A period however was soon afterwards put to the rivalry of these monarchs ; Charles being occupied with his ambitious schemes in Germany, while Henry and Francis forgot their animosities in the grave ; both dying in 1547. Under Henry II. indeed, the son and successor of Francis, hostilities were renewed with the emperor ; but these arose intirely from transactions in Germany. The variable policy of Francis, with respect to religion, was succeeded by the inflexible severity of Henry II. ; who, during his whole reign, exerted, but in vain, every effort to eradicate from his dominions the doctrines of the reformation. His death was regarded by the protestants of France as a merciful interposition of Divine Providence.

The consequences of the preceding struggles were, 1. a practical application of the balance of power to the system, through the opposition of its two principal states : 2. a closer connexion among all parts of southern Europe, through the Turkish alliance, the affairs of Hungary, and the participation of England in continental wars : 3. the preservation of her independence to France, by which the projects of Charles so far were frustrated.

Several causes contributed to render Germany a favorable scene for the commencement of the reformation. The old and continued contests between the popes and emperors had disposed the minds of many to resist the pretensions of the Roman pontiffs, whose frequent success in the prosecution of their claims, by encouraging them to aggravate abuses, had prepared the people to receive impressions unfavorable to their religion : besides, the numbers of independent jurisdictions in the empire afforded protection to preachers of the reformed doctrines, which could not have existed under a government more simply constructed : Germany therefore was the cradle of the reformation ; and there it first assumed

a political character. The intermixture indeed of politics and religion was in this case unavoidable; because the efforts of the reformers were directed, not only against errors of doctrine, but against the usurpations of a hierarchy which had interwoven itself into the constitution and administration of every European state; so that an opposition of religious principles, interesting and influencing all classes, gave to each individual a direct and personal interest in the foreign policy of his country. The summons and appearance of Luther before the diet of Worms in 1521, imparted to his cause the character of a state trial; while his proscription by the emperor, and the undisguised protection afforded him by several princes of his own and other countries, laid the foundation of future schisms in the empire.

The signal success of the reformation in various parts of Germany, kept alive as it was by the strenuous labors of Luther, and the newly-invented art of printing, produced two events which opened the eyes of European powers more clearly to discern its political tendency: these were, the war of the peasants in Suabia, and the secularisation of Prussia, a territory, which had belonged to the Teutonic order from the middle of the 13th century. Here was the loss of a whole country to the popedom, and an example by which other ecclesiastical princes might profit. These circumstances, and that threatening attitude which the battle of Pavia enabled the emperor to assume, led to the first alliances distinguished by a difference of religious faith: several Roman catholic states leagued themselves together at Dessau in 1525; and the most prominent among the reformers effected a union at Torgau in 1526. These combinations did not contemplate aggressive measures; but peace could not have been long preserved, had not the plan of calling a general council held out hopes of composing strife.

The two next diets were important to the protestants: that of Spires, in 1529, against the intolerant decrees of which they entered a protest, gave them a distinguishing name; while that of Augsburg, in 1530, produced their confession of faith, showing that the principles of the two parties were irreconcilable. When Charles concluded the peace of 1529, he thought it necessary, for the support of his authority, to

declare himself protector of the ancient and established religion ; hence he determined to adopt coercive measures with the protestants, which produced a counter-association for their mutual defence in the league of Smalcald, in 1531. The speedy renewal of foreign war with the Turks again favored the reformers : by a treaty concluded at Nuremberg, and ratified at a diet in Ratisbon in 1532, the emperor granted them liberty of conscience, until the meeting of a general council should take place. His hands were scarcely free from the Mussulman, when he became engaged in the restoration of duke Ulric of Wirtemberg, the anabaptist war of Munster, and the Tunisian expedition ; all which occupied him till his third war with Francis ; when it would have been dangerous to attack the protestants, whose alliance was strenuously courted by that prince : the league of Smalcald was therefore enlarged and renewed for ten years in 1536. The German policy of Charles was founded on his notions of the imperial power ; and as these were very vague, his plans necessarily corresponded with them : the league of Smalcald was the first event which gave to his ideas any determinate form : in it he saw an armed opposition, a rebellion against the sovereignty of the empire, and he determined to crush it.

The protestants, having in vain demanded a general council, earnestly pressed on Charles the necessity of appointing a conference between a select number of divines from each party, to examine the points in dispute : for this purpose a diet was convened at Ratisbon in 1541, notwithstanding the opposition of the pope. Nothing satisfactory however being settled at this meeting, the emperor persuaded a majority of its members to sanction an edict, declaring a few speculative points on which the divines had agreed, to be decided, and referring all the rest to a general council ; or, if that could not be obtained, to a national synod ; and, in case of failure there, to a diet of the empire. The protestants being very much dissatisfied with this edict, Charles issued a private declaration, exempting them from whatever they thought injurious or oppressive in it, and confirming to them the possession of their former privileges. These concessions were rendered necessary by the prospect of a rupture with France, and the rapid progress of the Turks in Hungary : hence also



he obtained from the protestants liberal supplies of men and money, for his favorite expedition against Algiers. The council of Trent was convoked in 1542, but did not finally open till December, 1545; when by reason of its very form and first decision, the protestants were unable to take any part in it. In the mean time the crafty Charles had concluded the peace of Crespy with his antagonist Francis; which left the protestant associates unprotected, and gave signal for war: this however was directed not so much, according to the pope's desire, against the states which were considered guilty of heresy, as against the leaguers of Smalcald, who impugned the imperial authority. In this enterprise the emperor was at first flattered by appearances of decisive success; for the disunion and imprudence of the confederates soon reduced the whole body to an unqualified submission, the single city of Magdeburg alone continuing to resist the imperial arms. John Frederic, elector of Saxony, having been taken prisoner at the battle of Muhlburg, April 24, 1547, the electorate was bestowed on duke Maurice, his son-in-law; while the death of Francis I., by removing the only rival that could embarrass his measures, (for Solyman had turned his arms toward Persia) seemed to complete the assurance of his triumph. In the mean time, Charles, elated with success, proceeded to enforce by his authority a uniformity of religious opinions; and the confederates were compelled to accept, under an ordinance denominated the *interim*, a restoration of almost all the abuses which they had renounced. The emperor having determined to carry this ordinance into effect, the spirit of the protestants was again roused: Maurice of Saxony, who had joined him, under a selfish policy, though probably with a mistaken reliance on his promises, now embraced a critical moment for declaring himself protector of the liberties of Germany; having effected a confederacy with France, which had been projected by the protestants when they leagued together at Smalcald. Unable to resist so powerful a union, or to repeat the artifices by which he had ruined the former, Charles yielded to necessity, and ceded to the protestants, by the treaty of Passau, in 1552, the free and equal exercise of their religion.

This treaty, however, having been concluded by Maurice

without the concurrence of his ally Henry II., the war which continued between the French king and the emperor delayed the meeting of a diet for its ratification. This at length assembled at Augsburg, Sept. 21, 1555; and after a discussion of six months, secured to both parties an interval of tranquillity : but as its benefits were confined to those who embraced the confession of Augsburg, such limitation, together with the *reservatum ecclesiasticum*,<sup>2</sup> sowed the seeds of future discord.

Soon after these events, Charles, having failed in his favorite object of uniting the two crowns on one head, resigned that of Spain and the Netherlands to his son Philip II., and that of the empire to his brother Ferdinand I.; closing his own career at Valladolid, Sept. 21, 1558. The long reign of this monarch was a most important period for Europe, during which the energies of its principal states, developed and exercised by his restless ambition, were brought within the action of their mutual influences; at the same time a religious separation was effected, generating an opposition of political interests, and, through that opposition, a system of federative relations among the various governments. Besides, while the influence of the German reformation particularly appeared in its dividing the empire into two great parties, the struggles of which were so instrumental to the federative arrangements of European states; the contemporaneous reformation of Geneva served, by its ecclesiastical arrangement, to infuse into those states a spirit of civil independence, when the common welfare required such a reinforcement of liberal principles to oppose the general exaltation of monarchical authority: the whiggism of our own government, and the political advantages derived from its influence, may be traced to this source. The same reformation gave to the new republic of the united Netherlands an ecclesiastical establishment suited to the genius of its government, which has exercised a very important agency on the federative system of Europe: it also produced in the adjacent realm of France a

<sup>2</sup> 'The *reservatum ecclesiasticum* respected the question, whether the future freedom of religion should be extended only to the secular orders, or also to the ecclesiastical. The protestants, to a man, were bent on the latter; but the catholics neither would nor could grant it.'—Heeren, vol. i. p. 73.

religious party, which, though crushed for a time by the powerful monarchy that enclosed it, still survived the disaster, and mainly contributed to a revolution in that country, which, putting an end to an exhausted system of federative relations, gave a beginning to new political combinations. The great result however of the reformation at the time of which we have just been treating, was the increased interest attaching itself to the German empire; which thenceforth became the true point of balance in the European system. At the end of this period, 1558, protestant opinions prevailed throughout Saxony, Brandenburg, Brunswick, Hesse, Mecklenburg, Holstein, and some smaller states in the north; in the Palatinate, Baden, and Wirtemberg in the south; as well as in most of the important cities of the empire: Geneva, with great part of Switzerland, as has already been observed, admitted the new doctrines without delay: in England the struggle was going on; while in France and the Netherlands, as well as in Bohemia, Hungary, and Poland, the reformation obtained a footing, though not such as to ensure its future success. In the mean time, this very reformation, though it was a decided separation from a corrupt church which had ceased to inculcate genuine Christianity, so reacted on that church itself, as to moderate its abuses, and for a time to increase its stability. Not only was the powerful, intelligent, and zealous association of jesuits formed for the advancement of papal dominion; but doctrines, which had been received on tradition alone, and interpreted with some degree of latitude, were, in the council of Trent, sanctioned by a formal authority, and defined with a scrupulous exactness: ceremonies also, which had been observed only in deference to ancient usage, were then declared to be essential parts of religious worship. The distinct line, however, thus drawn between the two contending systems, and by which they were placed in more direct opposition, assisted the cause of the reformation, as well as the political combinations that arose from its struggles.

In the preceding contests political economy made but little progress; neither were the higher branches of military tactics yet studied, though the art of war was improved by the establishment of a regular infantry. With regard to colonies,

the Portuguese and Spaniards remained sole masters of the countries beyond the ocean, though deriving little advantage from them, beyond a supply of precious metals; and the abundance of these only contributed to strengthen the erroneous opinion, that a nation's wealth depends on the gold and silver which it contains. The forms of government, as well as the religious doctrines, of European states were transferred to their transatlantic colonies; but one insuperable bar existed against an intire and national union. The white colonists held all that partook of color in complete subjection; no creole was capable of holding any office under government: and this physical distinction led eventually to the most important results.

The third division of the first period, from 1556 to 1618, is distinguished by the names of Elizabeth and Philip, William of Orange, and Henry IV. of France; names quite sufficient to determine its character. The reformation became more than ever a leading principle in European policy: how indeed could it be otherwise, when the progress of protestantism was met by the open terrors of the inquisition, and by the secret influence of jesuitism, exerted against it in almost every cabinet? Besides, every hope entertained of reconciliation through the council of Trent, vanished at its final dissolution in 1562; when vindictive anathemas were pronounced against all such as should refuse subscription to the peculiar doctrines of the Romish church.

A knowlege of the reformation was early conveyed to Spain by its intercourse with Germany, then subject to a common sovereign: but the new doctrines were there met and quickly subdued by unsparing persecution, the most perfect and detestable form of the inquisition existing in that country and in Portugal: but the blood of Spanish martyrs, unavailing as it was to the reformation of their country, did not flow in vain; for the cruelty to which their faith was subjected, inspired their fellow-subjects of the Netherlands with such horror of the inquisition, as consolidated their resistance, and established in the United Provinces the reformed religion in connexion with civil liberty.

No country was so well adapted as Spain at this time to excite the commercial energies of Europe. Her possession of

the Netherlands, now rising to their highest degree of prosperity, connected her with the trading interests of the whole continent : her vast resources enabled her to equip and support fleets with which she might provoke the exertions of all maritime powers ; while her foreign dependencies and rich colonies presented objects of attraction, and splendid rewards, to the enterprise of her enemies.

Philip II., born and educated in Spain, did not entertain that predilection for the Netherlands which his father had cherished : the manners of the people were irksome to his haughty disposition, their privileges offensive to his love of arbitrary sway, and their toleration of the reformed doctrines insupportable to his bigotry. This latter consideration determined him to adopt at once the most rigorous measures : he therefore not only republished some severe edicts, which Charles V. had been induced to revoke ; but established, for the purpose of enforcing them, a tribunal of the same nature with the Spanish inquisition. Other measures in conjunction with these served to exasperate the popular discontent ; and a confederacy, named the Compromise, was formed against any introduction of the inquisition, which was met by Philip with a violence that put an end to every scheme of moderation.

The duke of Alva, who commanded the Spanish armies, was a man fitted beyond all others to goad a dissatisfied people into rebellion, and to reduce the first struggles of resistance into the organisation of a settled plan. To complete so desirable an object, Providence seems to have raised up a noble champion of liberty in William of Orange, a man eminently qualified for guiding the efforts of his countrymen, by devotion to their cause, by singular dexterity in conciliating their affections, and by great skill in preserving the combination of a confederacy, which, without the pervading influence of his spirit, must soon have been dissolved in its own weakness. Seizing the proper moment for action, after he had in vain made every effort for conciliation, he took up the cause of freedom, and began the war in 1568, with some forces which his brother had levied in the protestant districts of Germany. This dreadful contest continued its devastations for 35 years, not being terminated until 1607 : such was the

severity of the discipline by which these new republicans were trained to independence.

To France the present period was for thirty years one of religious and civil wars, threatening to overturn the very throne itself. The due arrangement of a confederative system of policy appears to have required, that the house of Austria should, from contingent causes, acquire a predominance over the power of France. By the lax constitution of the empire alone could the principles of that policy have been propagated throughout Europe; and the maritime superiority, acquired by the Spanish branch from its transatlantic discoveries, drew forth the naval energies of the Dutch and of the English; preparing by these means the machinery of another period. France, encircled as she was by the extensive territories of the house of Austria, and pressed more especially by the power of Spain, was reduced to a temporary inferiority. To Spain indeed, separated from Germany, she might have been a formidable antagonist, if religious dissensions had not paralysed her strength: certainly nothing but the exhaustion which they created could have hindered her from accepting the proffered sovereignty of the Netherlands, and thus preventing the independence of that republic.

The interior adjustment of the French government required some intervals of repose, in which the attention of its rulers might be withdrawn from external interests, and employed in controlling the domestic struggles of the nation. Such an interval now occurred, at the end of which the magnanimous Henry IV., assisted by a wise and cautious minister, rescued his country from the horrors of anarchy, and raised it to a degree of power which induced him to meditate a political transformation of the whole European state. This project was frustrated by the dagger of an assassin: and France again became the prey of faction, until the vigorous hand of Richelieu grasped the helm: but a hatred of Spain took deep root in the nation, on account of the intrigues of Philip II. during its domestic troubles. We may here advert to an extraordinary adjustment of circumstances, which allowed the temporary prevalence of a protestant interest in such a government as that of France: it is only to be ac-

counted for by the peculiar character of its sovereigns. The wavering conduct of Francis I. permitted the protestants to acquire strength, though merely as a religious sect: the steady severity of Henry II. animated them with a spirit of perseverance in their faith, while his weakness enabled their adversaries the Guises to assume a preponderating power in the government: the feeble reign of Francis II., transient as it was, afforded an opportunity for that union, effected by the Bourbon princes with the protestants, which converted the latter into a political party: the minority of Charles IX., giving occasion to a more violent conflict of court factions, brought the two religious parties into open hostility, which was at length exasperated by a perfidious and cruel massacre of the protestants: the yet remaining operation was effected by the artful management of Henry III., which determined the party of the Guises to seek in a great association, which was named the League, a power independent of the crown, and able to control it. The preparatory acts of the drama were then completed; for the king, having first declared himself chief of the League, was compelled to have recourse; for his own safety, to that connexion with Henry of Navarre, which procured for the protestants of France their temporary establishment.<sup>3</sup> The struggle between the two sects, after Henry himself had been obliged to abjure the protestant faith, terminated in the edict of Nantz; which ensured to the reformers their civil and religious liberty, while it rendered to the Roman catholics that superiority which belongs to the religion of the state. The arrangement was evidently only temporary; for a republican confederacy, possessing fortified places, was set up within the monarchy; two different religious principles, connected with different political interests, were at work within the government: it was impossible but that one of these must in time prevail over the other.

That jealous apprehension of Austria, which occupied the heart of Henry to his last moments, was transmitted to his immediate successors. The Austrian house of Hapsburg had been weakened by a separation of the Spanish from the im-

<sup>3</sup> See *History Philosophically Considered*, by G. Miller, D.D. London, 1832, vol. iii. p. 142.

perial crown ; but it acquired new strength from the personal character of its own princes, whose main object was to preserve peace in Germany ; though during this time the storm was gathering which was soon to burst forth in a general European war. The jesuits, who had established themselves in the Austrian dominions, were secretly, but busily employed : frequent collisions gave rise to controversies ; and the consequences were, associations on both sides ; the Evangelical Union under the elector palatine, and the Catholic League under the conduct of Bavaria ; while the expulsion of Rudolph II. from the Austrian dominions, with the succession secured to the bigoted Ferdinand of Stiria, and a closer connexion with the Spanish monarchy, gave rise to melancholy prospects of the future. Happily for western Europe, at this time, the wild spirit of Mahometan conquest fell with Solyman II., who died in 1566, during his campaign in Hungary, to the complete possession of which country Austria arrived by progressive steps : but the position of Transylvania, which insisted on having its own princes, was a source of contention ; while a yet greater might have been foreseen from the introduction of the new religion, though liberty of worship was allowed so early as 1606.

One of the most distinguishing features, however, of the foregoing period was the rivalry between Spain and England ; the political character, and almost the existence of each power, being interwoven with its religious faith ; both also being under rulers who felt an inordinate desire of interfering in the affairs of other nations. Each country may be said to have acquired at this time its peculiar character as a state : in one, the maintenance of catholicism was made more than ever the basis of politics ; the result of which was war with half of Europe, national degradation, and its consequent debility : in the other, protestantism, preserving the hierarchical forms as a support of the throne, and declaring the monarch to be supreme head of the church, became the very basis of the constitution ; so that the conviction that church and state must stand or fall together, was deeply impressed on the public mind. Thus Elizabeth became the great antagonist of Philip II. ; and the ensuing conflict with Spain called out the energies of her kingdom, and laid the



foundation of its greatness, by directing them to the attainment of maritime superiority.

Politics, during this period, were generally seen under the unfavorable aspect of bigotry, fanaticism, and intolerance; and though some few distinguished individuals rose far above the prejudices of their age, they were ever exposed to the conspiracies of assassins, by which several of them were sacrificed. Political economy began to attract that attention which necessity required: it was promoted in England by Elizabeth and her able ministers; in France by Sully: but the finance system of the Dutch, founded chiefly on indirect taxation, had the greatest influence on foreign states. The art of war, especially that of sieges, was advanced by the talents and experience of Henry IV., prince Maurice, and Alexander of Parma; but nothing like the naval power of England and Holland had yet been seen in Europe. During this period the fall of the Portuguese dominion in the East Indies was greatly accelerated; while the Dutch raised up theirs with proportional rapidity, usurping to themselves almost the whole commerce of the east. The English however entered the field against them, and like their rivals perceived the great importance of conducting the valuable trade of those countries intirely by sea. Soon after the discovery of a passage to India by the Cape of Good Hope, the merchants of England made efforts to participate with Portugal in the trade of that country; but private capital was found too limited for a commerce, which, however lucrative, was attended with great risk, and required a very considerable force to protect it: hence the original association of those opulent traders, who petitioned Elizabeth to grant them exclusive privileges for carrying on the commerce of India. That princess, alive to every project for increasing the wealth of her country, sent an embassy to the emperor Akbar at Delhi, soliciting his favor and protection for her subjects trading in his dominions; but without waiting for the result, she granted to them a charter, December 31, 1600, which invested them with an unlimited power of purchasing lands, and committed the direction of their affairs to a governor, and a committee of twenty-four, empowering them to make any laws which should not be at variance with those

of the realm, but reserving to the crown the liberty of resuming the grant on giving two years' notice, should it not prove profitable to the state. The original capital of this company amounted to £72,000, in shares of £50 each. Such was the first charter of a company of British merchants, who, in the course of a few years, by the enterprise and ambition of their agents, the hostile rivalry of other European nations, and the weakness or perfidy of Asiatic princes, found themselves driven into the possession of sovereign power, and called on to act as rulers over the extensive dominions of the east.

Notwithstanding considerable success at first, the trade with India depended too much on the good-will and honesty of the natives, as well as on the address of local agents by whom the concerns of the company were managed: destitute of settlements and forts, they had neither accommodation nor security for their property and servants, but were subject to insults and injuries from hostile rivals. Such checks however seem only to have excited their spirit of enterprise; and in 1609, they obtained a second and enlarged charter.

Though the British had received permission from the emperor to form settlements and factories on the shores of his realm, their efforts had been hitherto obstructed by the Portuguese, who arrogantly claimed an exclusive right to the commerce of the Indian seas. The company's ships were armed to oppose these pretensions; and in 1612, a fleet under captain Best defeated their antagonists in two actions. This success not only raised the reputation of the English, but enabled them to establish a factory at Surat under very propitious circumstances. At their request also, in 1614, James I. sent an embassy to the imperial court, then residing at Ajmere, with a view to place their commerce on a more liberal and secure foundation: all however that Sir Thomas Roe, the ambassador, could obtain, by reason of the caution of the emperor's son and ministers, and the intrigues of the Portuguese, was a confirmation of former grants, with the right of appointing resident agents at some of the principal cities: but having sailed to Persia, he was much more successful with Shah Abbas, the reign-

ing sovereign of that country, who granted to the company every privilege necessary to promote their commerce in the Persian Gulf. The efforts made by the Portuguese to check the progress of the English, served only to accelerate their success, by stimulating them to active and decided measures: but the contest tended to derange the finances of the company, whom it involved in the expenses of military equipments.

It was during this period that the first British settlement was made in North America. Though Henry VII. issued a royal commission to John Cabot for discoveries on that coast, it led to nothing more than a claim of sovereignty over the country which he visited. A considerable time elapsed before the title was effectually asserted; for it was not until the reign of Elizabeth, when the power of England was extended by commerce, and her cupidity excited by the wealth which Spain derived from transatlantic possessions, that Raleigh took possession of the soil; on which he bestowed the appellation of Virginia, in honor of the virgin queen. The hopes of the nation were at first greatly disappointed when no rich mines of gold and silver were discovered; nor was it until subsequent adventurers had surveyed higher latitudes of this great continent, and found a fertile soil, rich pastures, noble rivers and harbors, with the most magnificent scenes of forest vegetation, that opinions began to change in favor of a land which promised every thing to industry and perseverance. The first charter was granted to British settlers by James I., whose letters patent comprised that extensive region of America, which stretches along the sea-coast from the 34th to the 45th degree of northern latitude. This grant was divided between the London and the Plymouth companies; the colonists of the former association being authorised and required to settle south of the 41st degree of latitude, and those of the latter, north of the 38th degree. A few adventurers, drawn together with difficulty by the London company, undertook the settlement of South Virginia, 1607, and in the same year built Jamestown on the Chesapeake bay. After a long struggle with the difficulties of their situation, they succeeded in laying the foundation of that rich and powerful

state, into which they introduced the cultivation of tobacco, and negro slavery, in 1616. The Plymouth company was more feeble than its rival, and therefore slower in action : the tract of country also allotted to it was more inhospitable in climate, as well as more wild and difficult of cultivation : in addition to which disadvantages, its first settlers were persons possessed of less capital and spirit, but more exposed to outrages ; so that North Virginia, or what was afterwards called New England, became the subject of general detraction ; and being continually encroached on by the French and Dutch, it would soon have been deserted by its colonists, had not circumstances occurred in the mother country, which sent out shoals of brave spirits, to seek for civil and religious liberty in the untrodden wildernesses of a new world. The government of each colony was by the charter of James vested in a council of thirteen, to reside in the projected settlements, with a board of control in England, consisting likewise of two councils of thirteen ; the members of the several councils being nominated by the king, and obliged to act according to his instructions. Certain commercial privileges were granted to the colonists ; and every right which they or their descendants could enjoy in their native land, was nominally secured to them after their emigration : but all such rights and privileges were virtually annulled by those clauses in the charter, which empowered this vain monarch to rule the colonies by his own laws, instructions, and appointments : in fact, the letters patent were soon followed by a code of ordinances for the internal administration of the settlements, drawn up by the royal hand itself, and considered as a pattern of perfection in legislative ingenuity. This code, while it confirmed the charter in several particulars, added to it so many odious features, that, after several revisions, the colonists settled under its authority were tempted to establish, without waiting for the royal consent, representative forms of government after the model of the mother country : hence a quarrel ensued between them and the king ; and the company was broken up in 1624. Though these first attempts at foreign colonisation were but feeble, as being only private enterprises permitted by government, yet they necessarily led, in

connexion with the pretensions of the Spaniards and Portuguese, to the maintenance of the freedom of the sea, which England and Holland defended. France also made some settlements, which were important for the future, more than for the present time.

Fourth division of the first period : from 1618 to 1660.—The great and general wars which distinguished this portion of time originated in the closer connexion of interests among European states ; in the nearer alliance which took place, on Ferdinand's accession to the throne, between Austria and Spain, cemented as it was by the influence of the jesuits ; in the policy and influence of cardinal Richelieu, exerted against the house of Hapsburg ; and in the effect of these circumstances, which brought the northern powers, particularly Sweden, to take part in the contests of the south.

The celebrated war of thirty years, which made Germany a central point of European politics, is most important for its bearing on the law of nations. Its duration and extent never could have been anticipated ; neither was it carried on from beginning to end according to one plan, or with one object ; but during its course many extensive wars were joined to it, and swallowed up in its vortex : its great moving principle was the spirit of religious discussion.

The protestant party had spread themselves throughout Bohemia, as well as Austria and Hungary, where Bethlem Gabor, vaivode of Transylvania, seized the throne by their assistance. The first disturbances broke out at Prague in May, 1618, caused by the abuses of the imperial governor ; and the war was begun under Matthias in the following year. The Bohemian protestants took up arms under the count of Thurn ; and Ernest of Mansfeld brought them succors from Germany. In August, 1619, the Bohemians chose Frederic V. elector palatine, as their king ; who, as head of the protestant union, son-in-law of James I., and ally of Bethlem Gabor, had sufficient resources, had he known how to use them. Ferdinand II. however, being already in alliance with Spain, gained over the league by a compact with Maximilian of Bavaria, and rendered the union impotent : Spinola, by the aid of Spanish troops from

the Netherlands, transferred the war to the palatinate in 1620: Maximilian and Tilly gained a victory on the White Mountain near Prague on the eighth of November, the same year; and in 1621, Frederic was outlawed, the palatinate dismembered, and the electoral dignity transferred to Bavaria. Mansfeld and Christian of Brunswick were everywhere defeated by Tilly in 1622, and the following year; after which imperial despotism and spiritual tyranny were predominant throughout Germany: in the mean time, new and bolder projects were formed at Vienna and Madrid, where it was resolved to renew the contest with the united Netherlands. The suppression of the protestant doctrines, and the overthrow of German and Dutch liberty, seemed to be inseparable.

In 1625, the circle of Lower Saxony, the principal seat of the reformed religion, rising up in arms under Christian IV. of Denmark, as duke of Holstein, involved the northern states in the strife: but the elevation of the celebrated Wallenstein to the command of the army raised by himself, was of much more importance, as it affected the course and character of the war, which from this time became in a great degree revolutionary.

In 1626, Mansfeld and Brunswick were defeated by Tilly and Wallenstein, as Christian himself was at Lutter; after which the Danish war was prosecuted by Wallenstein, who recovered the countries on the Baltic as far as Stralsund. In January, 1628, the dukes of Mecklenburg were put under the ban of the empire, and Wallenstein was invested with their territories: he held Pomerania also, and was created admiral of the fleets in the Baltic and the ocean. Peace was at length made with Christian IV. at Lubeck, May 12, 1629; on the condition of his renouncing all right of interference in German affairs as king of Denmark, and sacrificing his allies. At this time, Ferdinand II., anxious to reduce the electoral princes and bishops to a state like that of Spanish grandees, and alive to the danger of alarming both religious parties at once, resolved to begin with the protestants: accordingly he issued an edict, ordering them to restore all the benefices and church lands which they had

enjoyed since the treaty of Passau: but it was easier to issue such an order, than to carry it into execution; and Ferdinand soon received effectual checks to his ambition.

The distinguished success of Wallenstein, and the conduct of that extraordinary chieftain, who by the investiture of Mecklenburg came forward, not as a conqueror only, but as a ruling prince, unveiled his daring plans; and so exasperated even the catholic as well as the protestant states, that all implored peace and Wallenstein's discharge: hence at the diet of electors held in Augsburg, the emperor was reduced to the necessity of resigning his general or his allies. Accordingly Wallenstein was dismissed, and Tilly appointed generalissimo of the imperial forces and of the league.

This disgrace of Wallenstein was chiefly due to the intrigues of cardinal Richelieu, who wished also to detach the German league from the interest of the emperor; but in this he failed. From the time when he became prime minister of France, he exerted himself in opposing the power of Austria and Spain; finding employment for the former in the Valteline; and for the latter in the war of Mantua, where he supported the pretensions of the duke of Nevers to the succession. Much more important however, with regard to the present contest, was the influence which he used with Gustavus Adolphus to take a share in it. This celebrated hero landed in Germany, June 24, 1630; and in August, 1631, gained the great battle of Leipsic over Tilly, about three months after that general had involved Magdeburg in all the horrors of destruction. This victory of Gustavus gave a decided superiority to the protestant cause in the empire; and the great advantages which must result to a successful supporter of that cause in Germany were made more evident: the league fell asunder, and he became master of the countries from the Rhine to Bohemia, from the Baltic to Bavaria. But the misfortunes and death of Tilly brought back Wallenstein, whose ambitious plans were as extensive as his own. The views of each however were soon closed; for Gustavus Adolphus fell in the arms of victory on the field of Lutzen, November 6, 1632; and no long time elapsed before the assassination of Wallenstein took

place at Eger, February 25, 1634. But the school of Gustavus produced men able to advance the cause in which he died : while Oxenstiern supported it in the cabinet, Bernard of Saxe Weimar and Gustavus Horn overran the greater part of Germany with the Swedish forces. In 1634 the fortune of war took a different turn ; Ferdinand, king of Hungary and Bohemia, obtaining the command of the emperor's forces, gained a great battle over the Swedes at Nordlingen, drove them back into Pomerania in 1635, and compelled the Saxons to make a separate peace. Sweden appeared for some time incapable of maintaining her ground in Germany ; but, having concluded a subsidy-treaty with France, she again advanced, when Baner and Wrangel gained a great victory at Wittstock, September 24, 1636, and inclined the scale once more in her favor.

The war became much extended and prolonged by the active share taken in it by France ; and an alliance contracted by Richelieu with the Netherlands, the conquest and partition of which were aimed at by the cardinal, mixed up the German war with that of the Low Countries. The contest in the empire was now principally carried on by France, arming Germans against Germans ; but as Bernard of Saxe Weimar, the great pupil of Gustavus, appeared desirous to fight for himself rather than for others, his removal was almost as much coveted by France as by Austria. After a career of victory on the Rhine and the reduction of Alsace, he died in 1639 ; when France took possession of Alsace and of the army which he left.

Under these circumstances, a faint prospect of peace became visible. The alliance between Austria and Spain, which latter state was embarrassed by civil war in Portugal and Catalonia, had been less close, since Ferdinand III. had succeeded his father on the imperial throne in 1637 : the independence of the new elector Frederic William of Brandenburg, 1640, left less of hope to Austria and Sweden ; and at the general diet which was at length convened, the emperor yielded to what was designated a general amnesty : but though preliminaries were signed at Hamburg, December 25, 1641, the time and place of congress being fixed, the war was continued after Richelieu's death, whom cardinal



Mazarin succeeded, through the hope which each party entertained of securing better terms for itself.

Besides, a new contest arose between Sweden and Denmark, which latter state had been gained over to the imperial interest. The Swedish general, Torstenson, was victorious at Holstein and Sleswick, 1644; and entered Moravia in the ensuing year. At length, the congress of peace was opened at Munster and Osnaburg; but negotiations were dragged on for three years, while the Swedes under Wrangel, and the French under the great Turenne, carried all the miseries of war, by repeated invasions, into the south of Germany, and especially into Bavaria. These successes of his adversaries disposed the emperor to accept terms of accommodation; for which France was more inclined, since the united Netherlands had just concluded a separate peace with Spain, on the basis of their independence, while France itself was threatened with intestine war. In consequence of these favorable occurrences, the memorable peace of Westphalia was signed at Munster, October 24, 1648.

The most important points of this treaty consisted,—1. in an indemnification of foreign powers engaged in the contest, as well as single states of the empire: 2. in the internal religious and political relations of the empire itself, and in the relation of some other foreign states to it. The foreign powers indemnified were France and Sweden; the German states were, Brandenburg, Hesse-Cassel, Mecklenburg, and Brunswick-Luneburg. In this indemnification, many ecclesiastical states were secularised, against which act the pope in vain protested. The internal relations of the empire were chiefly confined to points contested or uncertain: with respect to religion, the pacification of Passau was confirmed in its full extent, an equality of privileges being conceded to Lutherans and catholics.

In respect to the political relations of the empire, a general amnesty and restitution was agreed to; but an eighth electorate was created for the palatinate; that which had been taken away from it, together with the upper palatinate, being retained by Bavaria, to whom they were given during the war. To each state of the empire sovereignty within its

own territories, and all rights in the diets, were secured; while the united Netherlands and Switzerland were acknowledged to be wholly independent on the German empire.

By this peace also the Germanic body politic obtained its determinate forms: the imperial power was constitutionally restricted within its narrowest limits; and the various potentates being in the fullest sense rulers of their respective states, the welfare of Germany became more attached to the territorial than to the imperial government.

With regard to the political system of Europe, the maintenance of the Germanic constitution acquired a weight in practical politics which could not soon be lost: it seemed indissolubly connected with the balance of power, which consequently became more distinctly acknowledged and confirmed. By the alliance of France and Sweden, which latter rose to a high rank among the constitutional powers, the north and west of Europe came into closer connexion: this however soon languished for want of some common and permanent interest.

The war between France and Spain continued, because each power expected to gain by its prosecution, especially Spain; for she was disengaged from her contest in the Netherlands, while France was disturbed by domestic dissensions. Her fortune however changed for the worse, especially when Cromwell joined her adversary; and the peace of the Pyrenees in 1659 confirmed the superiority of France, not so much by acquisitions of territory, as by prospects which the marriage, concerted between Louis XIV. and the infanta of Spain, opened for the future.

The condition of Spain at the end of the reign of Philip IV. was greatly deteriorated. Philip II. had occasioned the dismemberment of the United Provinces, shaken the external power of the kingdom, and injured the national character, by establishing the inquisition in his realms Philip III. put a stop to all improvement, and completed the national degradation by his expulsion of the Moors. Philip IV. succumbed to the power of France, and was unable to make head against the struggles of Portugal for independence; while the system of ministerial government introduced by himself and his successor accelerated the

downfall of Spain : having fulfilled its important functions in forming the European system, it collapsed into a state of political inanition ; still standing indeed on the principle of vitality, as a decayed tree will stand for a long period on its external bark, but leaving other states at liberty to advance without embarrassment.

Austria soon gained influence in Hungary and Bohemia sufficient to compensate for the loss of it in Germany ; while the Turkish empire exhibited symptoms of decline common to all great monarchies in the east. England during this period was almost wholly occupied with domestic commotions ; and while its royal dignity was extinguished, that of France was aggrandised, and her national influence over the affairs of Europe extended by the talents of Richelieu and Mazarin.

Both to the forms and to the fundamental maxims of practical policy this period was important. The forms were rendered much more definite by Richelieu, that great founder of cabinet policy ; but the web at the same time became more complicated. Never before had Europe seen negotiations of such extent or consequence ; and henceforth nothing seemed too much to be transacted by a congress. With regard to political maxims, the book of Grotius, published in 1625, taught rulers that there existed a law of nations ; and the British revolution under Charles I. caused the question relating to the rights of a king and of his subjects to be thoroughly discussed. The maxims of freedom and equality of rights, promulgated by the independents, though they were not received and acted on by the English, were transferred to North America. The colonies in that country were now making such rapid strides, that their importance was sensibly felt by the nation. The persecution of puritans and the civil commotions in England drove numbers across the Atlantic ; while the various states, comprised under the general denominations of Virginia and New England, began to separate, and, as was before observed, received constitutional governments : these, though intended to be dependent on the royal authority, contained within themselves the elements of that republicanism which became

afterwards so largely developed. Boston, the capital of Massachusetts, was settled, in 1627, by many enthusiastic lovers of civil and religious liberty; and the introduction of a free representative system took place so early as 1634, in which year Rhode Island was founded by emigrants from this settlement. From the same state proceeded the first colonists of Connecticut in 1636; as also those of New Hampshire and Maine in 1637, subject however to the government of Massachusetts. In 1643 these provinces united together in a federative union for common defence, under the name of New England: even at the present day the origin of its inhabitants is discernible in their habits, manners, and general disposition.

Pennsylvania was a settlement of quakers, for whom William Penn framed a wise, consistent code of laws; and the prosperity of this colony, together with the mild manners of its inhabitants, rendered it easy to be governed. The provinces around it, New York, New Jersey, and Delaware, chiefly consisted of cessions made to the British crown by the Dutch and Swedes. The charter of Maryland was obtained from Charles I. in 1632, for the avowed purpose of providing an asylum for Roman catholics, whom the king reluctantly persecuted. Lord Baltimore was appointed absolute proprietary, saving the allegiance due to the crown, license of settlement being given to all British subjects: they, with their posterity, were entitled to all the rights and liberties of Englishmen, having power to make laws for the province, if not repugnant to the jurisprudence of England. North and South Carolina were granted by Charles II. to some persons of rank, for whom the celebrated Locke drew up a theory of government, which was not found to succeed in practice: besides, these colonies endured so many evils from the anomalous characters of their first settlers, puritans, cavaliers, and French hugonots, as also from the arbitrary sway of the proprietaries, that while the provinces of New England clung to their charters as the guardians of their rights, the Carolinas sought relief by an appeal to the throne, renouncing the proprietary government and establishing a royal governor; their laws being enacted in a

provincial assembly, like those in Virginia; which province soon rose to a very high state of prosperity, chiefly through the introduction of the tobacco-plant.

The American settlements suffered greatly by the revolution in England; especially Maryland and Virginia: the inhabitants of this latter province were the last of the British subjects that submitted to the arms of Cromwell, and the first of the colonists who proclaimed Charles II. In 1660 the famous navigation act of 1651 was renewed, embracing the North American colonies; a plain acknowledgement of their value to the mother country. In 1686 James II. determined to overthrow the proprietary governments; but more serious affairs at home prevented the execution of his design.

The French also fixed their views on both Indies, and their colonies began to rise into importance. While their attempts, under Richelieu, to acquire a share of the East Indian trade, were unsuccessful, the plantations on several of the West Indian islands thrived greatly; but they still remained private property. The English possessions also in the West Indies consisted of settlements made by private individuals on some of the smaller Antilles, and were little valued till the sugar-cane began to thrive in Barbados, where it had been introduced from Brazil. This, and the conquest of Jamaica in 1655, laid the foundation of British commerce in that part of the world. Spain lost the colonies of Portugal when the latter regained her independence; but she retained her own. Portugal lost nearly all her East Indian possessions to the Dutch, but retained her colonial importance by the possession of Brazil. The commerce and manufactures of the Dutch, favored as they were by national liberty, became so flourishing as to awaken the jealousy of their neighbors: their East Indian colonies increased to a great extent, and apparently secured a strong bulwark in the settlement of the Cape of Good Hope: their extensive carrying-trade, however, received a severe blow from the navigation act of Cromwell.

British commerce in the East was on the very verge of ruin, until the protector in some measure restored it by a renewal of its privileges. In 1616 the company possessed numerous

factories both on the continent and in the islands ; but from the latter they were driven by the Dutch, after a course of calculating cold-blooded policy, that terminated in the abominable massacre of Amboyna ; since which time the English have abandoned to their rivals almost all the insular commerce of the east. That catastrophe, added to the bad faith of government, some radical defects in the constitution of the company, the smallness of their capital, their increased expenditure, their want of forts, and a consequent reliance on the precarious protection of native governments, had reduced their affairs to the lowest pitch of distress, when accident led to the formation of a settlement in Bengal, which has since proved the source of their great prosperity. The company were indebted to the professional skill of a physician, named Boughton, for this origin of their extraordinary power : he obtained the privilege for them from the emperor Shah Jehaun, as well as from the nabob of Bengal ; and in 1636 their servants at Surat built a factory at Hoogley, about 100 miles from the mouth of the Ganges. The company suffered much from the troubles of the revolution, their very existence as a corporation being nearly annihilated : in 1651 however their interests began to revive ; and the war, brought on between the English and Dutch by the navigation act, humbled the latter so much, that, in suing for peace, they promised to make satisfaction to the East India company for injuries done to their trade ; but this promise was eluded by the forms of a treaty. The commerce of the company now began to be encumbered by the enterprises of private traders, until Cromwell granted them a new charter, on a joint stock capital of £739,782 ; though half only of that sum was subscribed. The hopes of the company fell with the death and energetic reign of Cromwell, but unexpectedly revived with the privileges granted them by a charter from Charles II. in 1661, which not only confirmed those of Elizabeth and James, but added many new and important rights. They were now allowed to erect forts ; to appoint governors, officers, and judges for the trial of civil and criminal causes ; to make war and peace with the ‘infidels of India ;’ to raise men in England for their settlements ; and to send back any British subjects who were found residing in the country, or

sailing in the Indian seas, without their permission. The right of voting was limited to proprietors of £500 stock.

Political economy made no material progress during the foregoing period: Richelieu and Mazarin merely provided for the necessities of the moment; and even in the united Netherlands, loans were the sole support of war, though the example of that state showed the vast resources which lay in manufactures and foreign commerce. In the military art the great Gustavus Adolphus struck out a new line of tactics, by the introduction of quicker motion, making the files less deep, and adopting lighter arms, with an improved artillery.

The beginning of the sixteenth century was an epoch for the north of Europe, as well as for the west. In its five principal states, Sweden, Denmark, Poland, Russia, and Prussia, as it then existed, revolutions took place, which either determined, or materially influenced, their future forms of government. These changes were brought about by two important events; the re-establishment of the Swedish throne, at the dissolution of the union of Colmar, 1524; and the reformation, which was so favorably received in Denmark, Norway, and Sweden, that its prevalence soon became very general: in the last-mentioned state it formed the very basis of its constitution: it affected all the subsequent relations of Prussia, and in a great degree prepared the future fate of Poland. The history of the Gothic or Germanic nations of Sweden, Denmark, and Norway, may be comprised in three general periods: the first preceding the dissolution of the union of Colmar; the second, between that event and the treaty of Westphalia; the third, extending from this treaty to our own times. The first exhibits these nations as influencing the southern states only by occasional agency, and maintaining with them no settled combination of political interests. The second period presents them as entering into a more orderly arrangement; first, as they were permanently distributed into two governments, at the dissolution of the triple union; and next, as these were successively engaged in the German war, attaching themselves as satellites to the great system which the southern governments were beginning to form. In the third period we shall see them separating themselves from the southern states, and constituting a dis-

tinct northern system, as influenced by the superior attraction of Russia.

In the early part of the 17th century fierce hostilities were carried on by the Poles and Swedes, in which the balance of success was greatly in favor of the latter. The long and active part which Sweden took in the thirty years' war gave to the north a period of repose ; but the jealousy of Sweden entertained by Denmark broke out in repeated wars ; the former however gained a decided superiority over her rival at the peace of Westphalia. In 1655, war commenced between Sweden and Poland, because John Casimir, king of the latter country, would not renounce his pretensions to the Swedish throne, and acknowledge those of Charles Gustavus. In this contest, the ill success of Poland, which was at the same time engaged in a Russian war, added to the bold schemes of Charles Gustavus, who aimed also at the subjugation of Denmark, and the establishment of a great monarchy in the north, roused the energies of the neighboring states, until nearly half of Europe was occupied in counteracting his ambitious plans. These however were frustrated by his sudden death ; after which peace was concluded at Copenhagen, May 27, 1660, under the mediation of France and the maritime powers ; also between Sweden and Poland, in the same year, at Oliva, when John Casimir renounced all claims to the throne of Sweden, and resigned to that power the greatest part of Livonia, Esthonia, and the isle of Oesel. The duke of Courland, taken captive by the Swedes, was released and restored to his dominions. In 1661, peace was also concluded between Sweden and Russia, conquests being mutually restored.

In the mean time, the elector Frederic William, under whom the house of Brandenburg rose to great importance, ably availed himself of these contests to break the feudal relations which connected Prussia with Poland. Appearing at first inclined to side with Sweden, he purchased this independence by the treaty of Welau : but when he penetrated into the design of Charles Gustavus to render him a vassal of the Swedish crown, he soon showed himself active in opposition to his plan of establishing a northern monarchy. The treaty of Oliva confirmed the intire independence of Prussia.



To Denmark, the storm which had thus arisen occasioned a revolution in its government, by which Frederic III. acquired an hereditary and absolute sovereignty.

Second Period of the States-System.—If the general character of the last period derived its tone and color from the interference of religion with politics, that of the present was equally affected by the influence of the monied system, a consequence of advancing civilisation, which induced governments to undertake numerous projects of an expensive nature. Men now discovered that a certain relation always exists between the means of government and the prosperity of the nation ; and therefore they endeavored to promote the wealth of the latter through trade and manufactures, increasing the value of raw materials by the application of ingenious arts : but as navigation and foreign commerce depend mainly on colonies, these naturally acquired a great importance ; and the maritime powers began to obtain a manifest preponderance in the system. Hence, during peace there was generated a continual distrust and an envy of those states which were supposed to be gainers by the losses of others : during war, attempts were made to annihilate an enemy's commerce, and the system of privateering was put in practice : the contest also extended itself to the colonies, and neutral trade suffered various restrictions and oppressions.

This mercantile character of the age had a peculiar effect on its military system : from the continual dissensions which it produced arose the institution of standing armies, which attained to its height under Louis XIV. and Frederic the Great. This rendered tranquillity in peace more secure, while it mitigated the evils of war : yet nations must grow ripe for subjugation in proportion as they lay aside generally the instruments of defence.

Though frequent attempts were made during this period by single states to acquire a preponderance by destroying the balance of power, yet were they always frustrated ; and their failure served only to confirm it. The relations of different countries were drawn closer by the agency of diplomacy, which soon acquired great perfection and authoritative influence : hence the enlarged system of foreign embassies.

First Division of the Second Period : from 1661 to 1700.—

This is often called the age of Louis XIV. ; in which France became the great opposing power against Austria, and acquired a predominance in the European system : this she effected, not only by her arms, population, situation, and extent of territory ; but by her superior refinement and the domination of her language. The regal power had been advanced greatly by the policy of Richelieu, though the constitution of the kingdom was too complicated to admit of a pure despotism : the rights of the nobility and clergy, the parliaments, and many local privileges, kept it in check, and confined its attacks chiefly to individuals ; so that the national spirit could not be extinguished.

With regard to the internal relations of the other southern nations, each seemed adapted to exalt France by serving as her foil. Spain languished in a passive state of insignificance under Charles II., while England's profligate monarch and his venal ministers became actual pensioners of the crafty Louis. The united Netherlands had weakened their power on land by the vast increase of their marine : Austria was engaged with the Turks, and her emperor in the hands of the jesuits ; nor could the Germanic empire conceal its weak points from the penetrating eye of Louis, who soon discovered what might be effected there by policy and force : but in the political system of Europe, as it now existed, there was no room for the ambitious plans which he meditated.

The commercial spirit excited in France by the genius of Colbert, acted no less strongly on Europe, than the spirit of conquest produced by the ambition of Louis, supported as it was by Louvois in the cabinet, and by Turenne in the field. The king's favorite scheme, which had also been that of Richelieu, was the conquest of the Spanish Netherlands ; which would immediately have established the sovereignty of France in Europe. Meantime a maritime war broke out between the English and Dutch, when Louis took up arms to enforce his claims on these countries, founded principally on the *jus devolutionis* by the death of his father-in-law Philip IV. of Spain : after the peace of Breda, however, a triple alliance was formed at the Hague, between England, Holland, and Sweden, to counteract such an aggression ; which, being one of the few energetic measures in the dis-

graceful reign of Charles II., seemed to restore England to its proper station in Europe, while it increased the consequence of Holland. The terms of this treaty however, and of that at Aix la Chapelle, which followed it in 1668, pleased neither France nor Spain: though the pride of Louis was mortified by a stop being put to his conquests, yet the renunciation of his unjust pretensions was not required: even twelve conquered fortresses, on the frontiers of the Netherlands, were left in his possession, as if to invite a future attack. Our surprise indeed is lessened, though our indignation is strongly excited, when we are told that the English monarch was actuated by no views of general policy; but that his motives were, 1, to gain a little temporary popularity with his own subjects: 2, to ruin De Wit by detaching him from France; and in consequence of his fall to raise up the family of Orange in the United Provinces.<sup>4</sup> With regard to Sweden, the affair was merely a matter of financial speculation: hence it happened, that when France determined to take revenge on Holland, and to gain, if possible, an accession of strength by conquest, she found no difficulty in breaking up the triple alliance, and persuading England and Sweden to become her allies.<sup>5</sup>

It was principally owing to the negotiations which preceded the peace of Aix la Chapelle, that the influence of Louis was established in the German empire: none of the inferior states could resist his proposals of neutrality, subsidies, and marriages. Cologne and Munster became allies; Austria and Spain were silenced; the duke of Lorrain, as a friend of the latter power, was expelled the country; and even de Wit himself was deluded. With such care and precaution were measures taken to secure success: yet when the storm of war burst on the republic, it passed over its battlements, and left them uninjured. By the destruction

<sup>4</sup> *Mémoires de Gourville*, tom. ii. Macpherson's *History of Britain*, vol. i.

<sup>5</sup> A secret alliance was formed between England and France by the cabal ministry, not merely to produce the fall of the republic, but also of the British constitution: and in consideration of subsidies, as usual, an alliance was soon afterwards made with Sweden, April 24, 1672, nominally only for protection. Sir William Temple, having been deceived by the king, retired into private life. —Heeren, vol. i. p. 218.

of de Wit, Louis himself became instrumental in raising up a hero, who nobly withstood his ambitious projects, as the first prince of Orange had withstood those of Philip II. The career however of William III. was more splendid, because he contended not only for the liberty of his own country, but for that of Europe combined with it: he contended also with equal success both in the cabinet and in the field.

In 1672 Louis made his grand attack on Holland by sea and land. Amsterdam was preserved only by the whole country around it being laid under water; a revolution took place at the Hague; de Wit and his brother fell victims to popular fury; and William III. was made hereditary stadtholder. All other states were filled with consternation at the imminent danger of the republic; England made a separate peace with her; she found allies in Austria, Spain, Germany, and Brandenburg; while France could not without great trouble induce Sweden to engage so far in the contest as to employ Brandenburg and the empire. The Spanish Netherlands and the country of the Upper Rhine subsequently became the principal scenes of combat; on the former of which Condé, and on the latter Turenne displayed his great military talents. The republic, that important member in the European system, was saved, as soon as the war was removed from its boundaries; but unoffending countries had to suffer in a foreign cause, and its weaker allies had the cost of making satisfaction to France, whose arms were generally victorious.

After fruitless attempts to bring about a peace at Cologne, Nimeguen was selected as a place for a general congress: negotiations however went on slowly: England again assumed an imposing attitude; but her exertions were paralysed by the infamous conduct of Charles, who was bribed by Louis with the sum of £300,000. The French monarch also contrived by his policy to make a separate peace with the republic, August 10, 1678, by which the old commercial relations between the two countries were restored. In September Louis concluded a treaty with Spain, retaining Franche Comté, with twelve fortresses on the frontiers of the Netherlands; and in February, 1679, he made peace with

the emperor, and kept possession of Freyburg. Thus France held a successful contest with the better half of Europe ; showing herself as great in the cabinet as in the field, and acquiring possessions which laid the Netherlands at all times open to her attacks.

Louis, instead of setting bounds to his ambition, employed the leisure which this peace afforded him, in perfecting his plans of absolute sovereignty, keeping up a large army, and raising his marine to 100 ships of the line and 60,000 seamen. Many acts of violence and aggression were perpetrated by France on all sides ; but by the unwearied exertions of the prince of Orange, a defensive alliance was formed to preserve the peace of Nimeguen ; and a truce of twenty years was finally agreed on : but the elements of strife had been for some time gathering, and it was not possible long to defer the explosion. Besides, the greatness of Louis began to show incipient symptoms of decline : the death of Colbert in 1683 relaxed the very sinews of his power ; his revocation of the edict of Nantz deprived his country of its most ingenious and industrious artisans, while it involved him in difficulties with the protestant powers, who were now unaccustomed to such scenes : his insolent treatment of the pope was the last insult offered by him to the dignity of sovereigns that was suffered to pass with impunity.

An ambitious attempt made by Louis to obtain the electorate of Cologne for the cardinal de Furstemburg, one of his own creatures, in opposition to the emperor, showed the necessity of a new league, while it rekindled the war in Germany and the Low Countries. The empire, Spain, and Holland were principals in this association at Augsburg ; Denmark, Sweden, and Savoy afterwards joined it ; so that the accession of England alone seemed requisite to make it complete, when an event occurred, which alone would have rendered war inevitable. The English revolution raised William III. to the throne of his father-in-law ; and the reception given to James II. by the French monarch was virtually a declaration of hostilities. In the course of three months so widely were the flames of war extended, that there was scarcely a neutral state in Europe ; nay, they reached

even to the East and West Indies ; so that it seemed impossible but that the contest now begun must end either in the subjection or in the pre-eminence of France : neither however occurred : the superiority of the French generals, trained in the school of Turenne, still remained ; though the exhaustion of the revenue became apparent, since Colbert had not formed a financial school : on the other hand, the persevering wisdom and unshaken courage of William III. enabled him, not only to pacify the disturbances of England, but to place her in the proud position of the chief arbitress of Europe.

The aim of France was to separate the members of the grand confederacy : this she effected by gaining over the duke of Savoy, who procured the neutrality of Spain and Austria in Italy : hence distrust among the allies on one side, and on the other, a desire of Louis to complete his projects regarding the Spanish throne, brought about the celebrated treaty of Ryswick, under the mediation of Charles XI. of Sweden. The concessions made by France were considerable ; but the pretensions of the house of Bourbon to the Spanish succession were left in full force, though one great object of the war had been to procure the renunciation of them, according to the treaty of the Pyrenees. It was stipulated that Louis should acknowledge William as the legitimate sovereign of Great Britain and Ireland, conquests being mutually restored. All acquisitions and annexations in Catalonia and the Low Countries, except a few villages necessary to adjust the boundaries, were restored to Spain. Freyburg, Brisac, and Philipsburg were given up to the emperor ; France retaining the annexations in Alsace, together with Strasburg. The duchies of Lorraine and Bar returned to their native prince ; and thus the principal object of the alliance, the freedom and independence of the states, was maintained.

The wars which were undertaken for this end, and which terminated in three such treaties of peace, placed the importance of the balance of power in so strong a light, that there was no danger of its speedy abandonment. Soon after the signature of this treaty, the army of the emperor, under prince Eugene, gained a great victory over the Turks, with

whom Louis had entered into negotiations, secretly encouraging them to war against the christian powers. By the treaty of Carlowitz, January 26, 1699, these barbarians were obliged to cede all Hungary on this side the Drave, with Transylvania and Sclavonia, to Austria ; Asoph, on the Palus Mæotis, to the aspiring young sovereign of Russia, Peter I. ; Podolia to the Poles ; and the Morea, with several places in Dalmatia, to Venice. After this, the Ottoman power was no longer formidable to Europe.

In Spain the germs of decay were so fully developed, that it would be difficult to account for the continuance of its political existence, did we not know how much vitality there is in a great established monarchy.

French influence increased in a greater degree than French power : even the expulsion of the hugonots contributed to this by a diffusion of the language and manners of France. Jansenism, as opposed to jesuitism, and therefore allied to freedom of thought and inquiry, began gradually to acquire a political character, and to become a vehicle of opposition to the government.

In the united Netherlands, William had formed a political, rather than a military school ; and his maxims of policy, which were ‘opposition to France,’ and ‘union with England,’ continued in operation long after his death.

With respect to the Germanic empire, changes were introduced among its princes by the influence of the French court. Louis found his interest in treating them as petty powers ; by which means individuals began to acquire increased importance, and through them the whole, though in a less degree. An elector of Brandenburg was able to throw a very considerable weight into the scale of general politics ; and the creation of a new electorate for Hanover was an occurrence of universal interest.

Austria by her religious persecutions raised violent disturbances in Hungary ; but an advantage was derived from them in the union of that country with Transylvania, and the erection of it into an hereditary monarchy. Henceforth all danger from the Turks on this side was greatly diminished.

But no kingdom experienced such important changes as England ; changes which determined not only its internal

constitution, but its future character as a leading state in the European system, and the powerful opponent of France. The supremacy of the protestant religion, and constitutional liberty, were the results of that revolution which placed William on the British throne; and both were formally ratified by the bill of rights. The evident advantages of this constitution consisted in the increased practical authority of parliament, especially of the house of commons, and the unrestrained intercourse of the sovereign with that branch of the legislature by means of his ministers, whose weight and responsibility were thus increased, while the maintenance of a parliamentary majority was the basis of their efficiency. Unity among themselves was also requisite; and provision was made for this by the manner of forming and arranging the cabinet. No nation, as then constituted, could possess within itself so much political spirit as England: her own freedom rendered her the great agent of independence in the European system; and the protection of this independence was not vested, as during the Austrian ascendancy, in an arbitrary government, inconsistently crushing at home that liberty which it supported abroad; but in a nation of freemen, making common cause with the friends of rational independence throughout the world. Henceforward the British constitutional monarchy was held forth to admiration as a model of good government; but even this constitution, as a very sagacious observer remarks,<sup>6</sup> ‘unavoidably contained within itself the seeds of corruption. These lay in the imperfect state of representation: yet not so much in that alone, as in the subsequent abuses of the elective franchise, by which ministers endeavored to secure a majority in parliament. Foreign powers had ample cause to use circumspection in their relations with England; for a change of ministers implied a change of political maxims, and the successors deemed themselves but slightly bound by the engagements of their predecessors.’

The adjustment of the continental policy of England, as before observed, was founded on a rivalry with France, originating in commercial jealousy, and permanently fixed

<sup>6</sup> Heeren, vol. i. p. 239.



by the sagacity of William III. 'His knowlege of foreign politics,' says Burke, 'his keen insight into the ambition of France, his powerful foresight of the consequences that must inevitably follow French victory, to the liberties of all nations; and even his sudden and singular possession of the secrets of national prosperity in a kingdom so new to him as England, constituted the king not merely the first man in rank, but the first in council; not merely the head of the government, but the government. On the head of that individual might have rested the whole question, whether within those twenty years there was to be an independent state in Europe; whether Europe was to be more than an immense dungeon, and France the holder of the chain.' Too weak to resist France by land, England attached herself to the Austrian house of Hapsburg, now the second continental power: her closer connexion with the united Netherlands was a consequence of William's accession to her throne: the fortunate circumstance that he was a native of Holland, gave him decisive influence in a country where a defection from his system would have hazarded the fate of Europe: under that influence Holland rejected every allurement and resisted every menace; with destruction at her very gates, she nobly refused to make a separate treaty, or detach her interests from those of England; and William, before he died, had the satisfaction of seeing that consolidation of common interests and common sentiments, which saved Europe from the detestable ambition of Louis XIV.

With regard to general politics during the foregoing period, a different spirit began to show itself. Religion, though it did not lose its effect on the internal affairs of individual states, ceased to determine the mutual relations of foreign nations, and to be a main-spring of general policy. The commercial and monied interest took its place, and soon disclosed its power over government and people, in envy, altercation, and public feuds: the forms of civil administration were more strictly defined; and the example, set by France, of dividing a ministry into different departments, was more or less followed by other states. Political economy made considerable advances, connected as it was with the spirit of the times, which sought to increase the wealth of

governments by the wealth of nations, and saw the quickest road to this through colonies and commerce. Here also Colbert led the way, and merited the praise of being not only a reformer, like Sully, but also a creator; partly by the relation in which he placed an increased and varied national activity to the finances; and partly by his system of loans founded on safe credit. His fabric fell with him, because it had no support in the constitution; but a different fate attended the British financial system, which arose near the end of the period: this consisted in funding the interest of loans, without any obligation to pay the capital, which was made transferable. No one, at its origin, could have had any notion of the extent to which it was capable of being carried; but it found support in the guarantee of parliament, and gradual extension in the national wealth, which for a long time had been greatly on the increase.<sup>7</sup>

The affairs of war also, during this period, assumed a different aspect; since France, even in peace, kept up large armies well trained and provided. Other powers imitated her example, especially Austria, on account of Hungary. England and Holland followed more slowly, the one country being kept back by her parliament, and the other by her States-General, through fear for national liberty: the reform of the military art necessarily proceeded from such an arrangement.<sup>8</sup> In an equal degree with the land forces, did the marine also increase, by means of the mercantile system now adopted. At no period was the navy of France so powerful: her acquisition of a maritime dominion over all other states was only prevented by her defeat at la Hogue,

<sup>7</sup> The funding system had its origin in England in the establishment of the Bank in 1694, when it lent its capital to the government at a lower rate of interest than was ever done before, in consequence of the existing war. The extension of this system of loans was possible, therefore, only in case of the continual increase of the national wealth of Britain. It is true, indeed, that no right at home or abroad was thus violated; but even what is good may be abused.—Heeren, vol. i. p. 246.

<sup>8</sup> If the new art of war was carried to perfection by Turenne and others, the authors and improvers of the new military system in general, were Le Tellier, and his son and successor, Louvois. Instead of the 14,000 men under Henry IV., Louis XIV. maintained, since the peace of Nimeguen, 140,000. What changes in the whole condition of society does the mere possibility of effecting such a measure imply!—Heeren, vol. i. p. 247.

and the subsequent coalition formed against her by England and Holland : the political influence of the maritime powers was now firmly established.

During this period the French government first began to think seriously of planting colonies : those of England were strongly attached to the mother country by the commercial prosperity which the renewed navigation act contributed to produce ; but the colonial dependencies of other nations generally remained in an unaltered state. French settlements had been already planted in the West Indies, but they were the property of individuals : Colbert by purchase transferred them to the government, and for the first time introduced a fixed system of administration. A West Indian company was established in 1664, but abolished ten years after, chiefly on account of the smuggling trade. The cultivation of the land in Canada, now augmented by the cession of Acadia, made but small progress ; traffic in peltry, and the fisheries of Newfoundland, being more regarded. An East Indian company was also chartered by Colbert ; but it gradually decayed, and at the end of this period was near its dissolution. The mercantile system of France was in fact at war with itself : foreign commerce was shackled by numberless restrictions ; and to support domestic manufactures the importation of Indian commodities was prohibited.

The English colonies enjoyed greater prosperity, because they depended less on the government than on the nation : to them the political and religious contests under Charles II. and his successor were by no means unfavorable. Our settlements in the West Indies began to rise into importance by the possession and culture of Jamaica ; and their advancement was promoted by liberal constitutions and free commerce. Still more flourishing were the British settlements in North America, through the increase of emigration during the political troubles of the parent country ; and the fisheries of Newfoundland, with the peltry trade around Hudson's bay, were become objects of great national importance. The East Indian trade at the beginning of this period remained in the hands of the chartered proprietors, who had to contend at a disadvantage with the powerful

competition of the Dutch. In the reign of Charles II. however, they acquired a possession which gave greater stability to their affairs. That monarch having married the infanta of Portugal, obtained in 1662, the island of Bombay, as a part of her dowry ; but finding the expense of supporting it greater than its revenue, he ceded it to the company in 1669 ; he afterwards granted to them the island of St. Helena, and in other respects sought to promote their interests, confirming the charter given in 1661, and extending their privileges by an act passed in the thirty-fifth year of his reign.<sup>9</sup> But they were still more indebted to James II., whose influence it was which operated so much in their favor with his brother : he not only confirmed their former charter, but authorised them to build fortresses, to levy troops, to determine causes by court-martial, and to coin money, not resembling that of England : but by these privileges he conferred on them a degree of power, which they disgraced by many acts of corruption, violence, and oppression : rulers at home protected their favorites abroad in the most cruel and oppressive measures ; private resentments and selfish views were too often the only rules of conduct ; the exclusive privilege which was thought necessary for the prosperity of their commerce was turned into an engine of tyranny ; and such instances of barbarity occurred as were calculated to excite universal horror. The company had for some time thrown a veil over their affairs : though they had doubled their capital in 1682, they had not taken in more than half the sum at first subscribed ; they were making extravagant dividends, to support a show of prosperity, but had incurred a debt of £2,000,000 ; and they refused to pay their creditors, though they pretended that their affairs were in the most flourishing condition : besides, these deceptions at home were equalled or exceeded by those of their factors abroad. Though a new

<sup>9</sup> In 1669 the company first received from Bantam two canisters, containing 143 lbs. of tea, which was chiefly given away in presents. In 1680 is the first notice of a ship sent by the company to China, the trade of which had been monopolised by the Portuguese, until the Dutch obtained a share through their settlement at Formosa. In 1682 the English were deprived of their settlement at Bantam by the Dutch, when they erected a fort at Bencoolen at an expense of £240,000, and thus prevented the Dutch from monopolising the pepper-trade.

charter had been obtained in 1694, many flagrant abuses were detected by parliament in 1695; and the company was terrified by a bill of pains and penalties to confess that the king himself had benefited by their speculation, to the amount of £10,000. This checked all farther inquiry.

In 1698 a new company outbid the other by offering an advance of £2,000,000 at eight per cent., and obtained a charter: but the old company obtained a renewal of their own in the ensuing session; when the nation had two companies: but these, tired out with the contests and struggles which their rivalry produced, united their stock under the old charter, and assumed the name which they have ever since borne, the United East India Company. It remains only to mention that the condition of the Spanish and Portuguese colonies underwent very little alteration; except that the gold mines in Brazil were discovered about the end of this period. Of the northern states, Denmark alone took her station among the colonial powers; and by the possession of Tranquebar, sought to gain a share, though small, of the East Indian trade.

Thus the colonial system in both hemispheres became in extent and geographical situation more and more complicated. Already the wars of European states were felt by their colonies; but the time was not far distant when contests in the colonies would exert a reaction on the parent countries.

With regard to the northern states-system, its internal relations during the preceding period were replete with elements of disorder. Since Poland had become an elective monarchy, and a unanimity of votes had been required in her diets, how could a peaceable election be expected, the interference of strangers being so easy? Foreign policy in this case went so far as even to attempt to appoint a successor during the life of the reigning monarch.

Sweden, ruling over provinces which almost surrounded the Baltic, still maintained her superiority; but these possessions demanded her participation in the wars both of eastern and western Europe. In 1680 the regal power became almost absolute; and this in future times gave rise to pernicious consequences.

Prussia, though now a sovereign state, and independent in her foreign policy, as far as was compatible with her duties toward the empire, of which she was a part, remained a province of Brandenburg, because there was the residence of the court: hence she was principally engaged in the contests of the southern system.

The participation of Russia, even in the affairs of the north, was at first very far from decisive. This vast realm required internal organisation, before it could bring its external influence to bear with effect on the surrounding states; and the difficulties which it experienced were aggravated by the family relations of the reigning dynasty: but the conquest of Asoph, and the settlement in the Ukraine, showed what was to be expected: besides, Peter the Great was now beginning to instruct his rude subjects in the arts both of peace and war, preparing them for those institutions and conquests which justly entitled him to the appellation of father of his country. It soon became the policy of the Russian cabinet to seize every occasion of interference in European wars; being careless of the loss of men, which could easily be repaired in such extensive territories; but anxious by those wars to train her warriors, as well as to form her naval and military establishments.

Denmark, though strengthened by the autocracy which had been introduced into her government, suffered much from a dispute existing between the two lines of the reigning dynasty, the royal and the ducal house of Holstein Gottorp: this gradually affected the relations of all the northern states, and contributed materially to produce the great war, in which, during the subsequent period, they were involved.

A continual ferment was kept up in Poland: even the election of the great John Sobieski had but a transient effect for good on that unhappy country, whose internal improvement never entered into the views of a Polish magnate. Toward the end of the period a war broke out between Turkey and Austria; when Poland and Russia entered into a union with the latter, and Sobieski had the glory of saving Vienna, while Russia reaped the principal fruits of the contest.

Second Division of the Second Period, extending from

1700 to 1740.—Three great contests had been already carried on against Louis XIV. for the purpose of maintaining the balance of power: this era opens with a fourth tremendous and protracted war, principally undertaken for the same object; while the northern states were suffering in a conflict, distinct from it, but no less obstinately continued. In the ensuing disposition of affairs, the mercantile and monied interests lost none of their influence: vast public debts, already incurred, were increased by new wars; and the paper-money system was brought into action to supply temporary resources.

The principal subject which engaged the attention of the western cabinets after the treaty of Ryswick, was that of the Spanish succession. Three powerful competitors were ready to assert their claims to the whole monarchy, when the death of Charles II., which was daily expected, should take place; Louis XIV. for the dauphin of France, in right of his mother; Leopold of Austria for one of his sons, with a similar plea; and the elector of Bavaria for himself. The chief interest attached to this important question was the maintenance of the balance of power, now rendered the very basis of European policy: it could not be a matter of indifference, what was to become of Spain, especially of the Spanish Netherlands: nor could a union of the Spanish crown with that of Austria or of France coexist with an equilibrium: the general interest of Europe therefore required that the elector of Bavaria should succeed: but the other two competitors were obstinate; the elector was too weak to contend with either; and the king of England was at this time so fettered by the jealousy of his own subjects, and a great deficiency of public spirit in the nation, that he was in no condition to assist him: thus circumstanced, William listened to any terms that were likely to preserve the peace of Europe, and consented to the partition treaty. To frustrate this scheme, the king of Spain by his last will constituted the elector of Bavaria his successor; but that prince dying before Charles himself, Louis and William again entered into negotiations, and a second treaty of partition was privately signed between France, England, and Holland: but from his endeavors to secure the repose of

southern Europe, the attention of William was called to the north, where two extraordinary personages were rising into notice, Peter I. of Russia, and Charles XII. of Sweden: after this, the demise of the duke of Glocester, the last protestant heir to the English crown, engaged him in preparing the act of settlement,<sup>10</sup> which was brought in with certain limitations or provisions for the security of the rights and liberties of the subject, supposed to have been overlooked at the revolution. At this moment every continental state was thrown into alarm by the death of Charles of Spain, and his will in favor of the house of Bourbon: Louis at first hesitated whether he should accept the will in favor of his grandson, or adhere to the partition treaty: in one case, France would receive a considerable accession of territory, with England and Holland as her allies against the emperor; in the other, she would give a master to her ancient rival, and direct the Spanish councils; but with the prospect of having the emperor, England, and Holland for her enemies. The danger was foreseen, but vanity prevailed; and the duke of Anjou ascended the Spanish throne, under the name of Philip V. The emperor felt the more deeply wounded, as he had lost the succession chiefly through the haughty, unconciliating character of his own ambassador at the court of Madrid; while the cabinets of England and Holland complained bitterly of the French king's breach of faith, in not observing the conditions of the partition treaty: for the present however they refrained from open hostilities; though preparations commenced, and alliances were formed on both sides. France gained over to her interests Savoy and Mantua, with the electors of Bavaria and Cologne; availing herself of the first moment to garrison her fortresses on the boundary of the Spanish Netherlands. Austria found allies in the new king of Prussia, and by degrees in all the states of the empire; while she called on the maritime powers for their co-operation: and this was readily granted, when Louis excited their indignation, by acknowledging the son of James II. heir to the British throne, in violation of the

<sup>10</sup> By which the crown was settled on Sophia, duchess-dowager of Hanover, and her heirs, being protestants.



treaty of Ryswick. The death of William, which soon followed, March 8, 1702, threw a damp for a time over the spirits of the allies ; but this was presently removed by the quiet succession of Anne, who adopted her predecessor's system of policy, chiefly through the influence of Marlborough : that great man, though politically connected with the tory party, hastened to join the whigs, when he saw them inclined to promote his views.

In one respect this new alliance against France appeared likely to fail : the maritime powers inclined to the partition treaty, which sanctioned a division of the Spanish dominions ; while the house of Austria aimed at the possession of all : it however acquired an extraordinary degree of consistency and animation through the policy and talents of Marlborough, Eugene, and Heinsius ; three of the greatest names that any age has known.

In the ensuing conflict, Spain, the chief subject of dispute, played only a secondary part ; the grand scene of war lying in the Netherlands, the states of Germany, and Italy. It commenced in this latter country, July, 1701, with the invasion of Lombardy by Eugene ; in the district of the Upper Rhine, with the conquest of Landau, September 10 ; and next year in the Netherlands, where Marlborough first entered the field : but in 1703 it became general in Germany, by the formal alliance of Bavaria with France, and the invasion of the Tyrol by the elector ; in Italy, by the defection of the duke of Savoy from France to the allies ; and in Spain, after Portugal had joined the alliance, by the arrival of the archduke Charles in that country. The campaign of 1704 was the first decisively favorable to German interests, when the great victory of the allies at Blenheim shook the power of Louis to its centre : the contest in Spain assumed the character of a civil war ; Charles being supported chiefly in Catalonia, and Philip in Castile ; while the naval operations which now commenced, threw Gibraltar, the key of the Mediterranean, into the hands of the English.

Leopold of Austria died May 5, 1705 ; but the contest was kept up with equal spirit under his successor Joseph I. The campaign of 1706 put the allies into possession of the

Netherlands, after a great victory at Ramillies; and of Lombardy, after the relief of Turin by prince Eugene. The conquest of Naples followed in 1707; and the exertions of the French to reconquer the Netherlands in 1708 were frustrated by the victory at Oudenarde, followed by the capture of Lisle. Such defeats reduced Louis to a state of distress which he had never known before: he has the credit however of having endured his misfortunes better than his adversaries bore their success. In the negotiations which took place at the Hague he appeared willing to resign all that was reasonable, but inflexibly resisted propositions which would have reduced his character to a state of degradation. This conduct met with its reward: the pride of the French people was roused; and his subjects, though suffering under the horrors of famine, in addition to all their other miseries, made unexampled efforts to support their king. The war therefore proceeded: a great battle was fought at Malplaquet September 11, 1709, in which the French marshals, Villars and Boufflers, acquired almost as much credit in defeat as Marlborough and Eugene in victory. Mons fell in October; Douay and some other places in 1710. In other quarters the prospects of the French were not so gloomy as in Hanover, the Upper Rhine, and Dauphiny; while all the advantages gained by the archduke Charles in Spain were counteracted by the talents of Vendome and Berwick. Under these circumstances, negotiations for peace were renewed by France at Gertruydenburg; when Louis, besides large concessions, promised even to furnish subsidies against the king of Spain: the allies however would have imposed on him the mortifying task of deposing his own grandson: this he rejected with disdain and sorrow.

The great question however was not to be decided by the sword; since an alteration in the political relations of all parties was produced by the fall of the whig ministry in England, which occasioned Marlborough's removal from the command of the allied armies. The tories had long affected to consider this expensive and protracted war as useless; and when, by the death of Joseph I., the archduke Charles became head of the house of Austria, it would not have been con-

sistent with whig policy to allow the Spanish crown to be united with those of Hungary, Bohemia, and the empire : negotiations therefore for peace naturally ensued ; and as Holland was considered the political centre of affairs, the congress was appointed to meet at Utrecht.

Instead however of a general pacification, the nature of circumstances led to a series of treaties, in which each party put forward its own claims ; but neither respecting these, nor the main question of the war, could they agree among themselves : while Austria selfishly persisted in her original demand, England and the other allies were not averse to leaving the Spanish throne in possession of the house of Anjou, its European provinces being excepted, and provision made against a union of the crowns of France and Spain on one head : jealousy also arose between England and Holland, on account of commercial privileges which each desired to reserve for itself ; and these circumstances were very advantageous to France..

At length, after some preliminary contracts, the peace of Utrecht was concluded. 1. Between England and France ; by an acknowledgement of the protestant succession in the house of Hanover, and the removal of the pretender from the French territory—by a permanent separation of the French and Spanish crowns—by the dismantling of Dunkirk—by the cession to England of Newfoundland, of Acadia according to its ancient boundaries, of Hudson's-bay and its contiguous countries, and the French portion of St. Christopher—by certain commercial privileges granted to England—and by a recognition of the fundamental principle, that, with the exception of contraband articles, free ships make free goods.

2. Between France and the united Netherlands ; by the establishment of a strong barrier on the frontiers against France, and by a restoration to France of the strong place of Lisle, and the other fortresses which she had lost : at the same time, a treaty of commerce, advantageous to the republic, was effected.

3. Between France and Savoy ; by the establishment of boundaries favorable to the latter, to which the kingdom of Sicily was also annexed ; while its sovereign was allowed to

reserve his claim on Spain, in case the house of Anjou should become extinct.

4. Between France and Portugal; which latter country obtained a settlement of boundaries to its territories in South America.

5. Between France and Prussia; France recognising the royal title of Prussia, and relinquishing to that state the upper quarter of Guelderland, &c.

Peace was concluded at Utrecht between Spain and Savoy, by the cession of Sicily to the latter, &c.: also between Spain and England; when the former relinquished to the British crown Gibraltar with Minorca, granting also to England the privilege of the *assiento* treaty for the importation of slaves into the Spanish colonies, which France had before enjoyed.

The emperor was thus left to make a distinct peace with France; and as the war which continued between him and Louis was attended with little success to the imperial arms, negotiations were set on foot at Rastadt, which led to a peace between Austria and France in March, 1714; and again at Baden, in the same year, when the empire was included in it. The principal conditions were, that Austria should take possession of the Spanish Netherlands, after settling a barrier for Holland—that she should retain her possessions in Italy—and that the electors of Bavaria and Cologne, who had been put under the ban of the empire, should be restored. With regard to the empire itself, affairs were brought back to the state in which they existed before the war.

But although the sword was sheathed, the contest was not decided: between the two leading competitors, Spain and Austria, no formal peace subsisted, because neither would resign its pretensions: hence the fluctuating state of the system for the ten following years; while the maintenance of the peace of Utrecht became one of the most difficult problems in European policy.

The consequences of this great conflict and of its pacificatory treaties were various and important. An end was put to that ancient rivalry between France and Spain, by which Europe had suffered so much: but all dread of their

union soon ceased, when the exhausted state of France became visible, and the discovery was made, that the ties of consanguinity are of little avail against the machinations of an ambitious policy. The separation of the Spanish provinces, whereby the Netherlands became annexed to Austria, was an event of great consequence: always the ready and immediate object of French conquest, their protection became the common interest of all, and the chief means of preserving the balance of power.

But the most important result which proceeded from the foregoing contest was the increased influence of Great Britain. Her loan system enabled her to give an unparalleled extension to subsidiary treaties, and thus to exert a proportionate influence on continental politics: the acquisition of the Netherlands by Austria seemed to rivet her connexion with that powerful state: the republic of Holland was devoted to her government; while the aid of Savoy and the single German states was always to be obtained by subsidies. The peace of Utrecht having been concluded under the direction of Great Britain, its maintenance appeared to be her natural policy; and this for a considerable time threw the chief direction of European affairs into her hands.

The war did not assume much of a maritime character; yet in the ensuing peace the mercantile system began to display its influence: grants of very important commercial privileges were made, as conditions of peace, to the maritime powers; and even territorial concessions were arranged to suit the interests of commerce. The foundation of the commercial preponderance of England was laid by the peace of Utrecht, and thus the seeds of two mighty wars were sown; but these consequences became gradually developed, and the republic for a time retained its superiority. A great source of internal quiet, as well as of external power, was thrown open to England, in the reign of Anne, by the union with Scotland;—an event, which put an end to desolating wars between the two countries, detached Scotland from all connexion with France, averted the impending evils of a controverted succession or a separation of the two crowns, and removed all fears for the protestant religion and civil liberty. Scotland and England could now impart to each other their

respective advantages ; and each became a gainer by the exchange. Happy would it have been for Britain, if an equally firm union could have been effected with Ireland : but that unfortunate country, which was only rescued from the barbarous rule of its native chiefs to become the spoil of its conquerors, was destined to experience a long course of misgovernment, agitation, and violence, before such a consummation could take place. As a recital of its wrongs, faults, and sufferings in this place would interrupt too much the order of events, it must be deferred to a more convenient opportunity.

In Spain a new dynasty was seated on the throne ; but Philip V. was not fitted by nature to restore a falling state ; while his accomplished queen, Elizabeth of Parma, attached more to the interests of her family than to those of the realm, exerted a pernicious influence on the governments of Europe. Portugal, bound to England during the war by motives of policy, became still more closely connected with her by the ties of commerce and conditions of the Methuen treaty.

The greatest change however was experienced by France. Louis XIV. survived the war but a short time, leaving a weak heir and a minor, in his great-grandson ; when in opposition to his will, Philip duke of Orleans, a profligate without sense of shame, assumed the regency : between him and the Spanish court a mutual feeling of jealousy and mistrust arose respecting the French succession, in case of the demise of young Louis, whose constitution was remarkably delicate ; and this question was one of great importance in determining the character of foreign connexions.

In England, after the death of Anne, the house of Hanover succeeded that of Stuart : protestantism gave, and preserved to it, the throne : no new maxims of continental policy were entertained ; but the system of William III., modified according to circumstances, prevailed : fortunately there existed for many years a pretender to the throne, who did not permit the better part of the nation, or the government, to lose sight of that system : its natural consequence was the fall, and almost the extinction of that tory ministry, who were more than suspected of conniving at, or encouraging a design of the late queen to set aside the act of succession, in favor of

her brother, the pretender. As the tories were generally inclined to jacobitism, nothing but the zeal of the whigs, and the restoration of their influence, could have supported George I. in the succession.

The Dutch republic, having secured to itself a high rank among European states, considered it good policy to retire for the future, as much as possible, from continental wars; but thence losing her military energies, she declined in the opinion of other powers: her barrier treaty, under the mediation of England, was signed November 15, 1715; and she obtained fortresses, without having soldiers to man them.

The Austrian monarchy was aggrandised by the acquisition of Naples, Sardinia, Milan, and the Low Countries: whether these were to be a gain to her or a loss, depended much on the spirit of her own administration: in conjunction with the empire, they might serve as bulwarks, or present themselves as so many points of attack. The states of the German empire, distracted by the policy of Bavaria, were by this peace reunited, as far as was practicable: but the example had been set; and the times approached when different schisms were to arise.

Two new regal thrones were erected; one for the house of Brandenburg in Prussia, the other for that of Savoy, which soon exchanged Sicily for Sardinia.

The pivot on which European politics now began to turn was the maintenance of the peace of Utrecht; and to this the diplomacy of cabinets was generally directed, since every other great interest depended on it. England was interested in its preservation, because her flourishing commerce was advanced by its conditions, and the protestant succession to her throne confirmed: it was important to France, inasmuch as it involved the renunciation of the French throne by the house of Anjou, to which Philip of Orleans owed the regency: to Austria it secured the possession of the conceded provinces; and the republic could only enjoy her privileges in a time of peace. Such a common interest drew closer the relations between these powers: even the old spirit of rivalry and hostility between England and France was for a time subdued. In 1716 an alliance was formed by England and

Austria, and in 1717 by France and the republic ; both for the preservation of this peace.

Spain however cherished different views, being not reconciled to the loss of her provinces ; while her monarch was under the influence of persons interested in the renewal of the war. Elizabeth of Parma, his second consort, was bent on securing a provision for her sons in her own country, where she had a right of inheritance to the duchies of Parma and Placentia ; and the Spanish minister, the crafty Alberoni, entered boldly into her projects : these plans of conquest, directed against Austria, were acted on with greater alacrity, as that power was now engaged in a Turkish war. Enterprises undertaken against Sicily and Sardinia were immediately successful, both islands being speedily reduced ; and these eventually procured, by the arrangements of the quadruple alliance, concluded in 1718, the reversion of Parma, Placentia, and Tuscany, for Don Carlos, one of the sons of Elizabeth : resistance was made to the terms of this treaty by Alberoni ; while Savoy received, though unwillingly, the Sardinian crown instead of that of Sicily. When the evil intentions of the Spanish minister against England and the regent of France were disclosed, the consequence was a declaration of war by both against Spain ; but the Dutch still acted as mediators : peace however was out of the question, so long as Alberoni remained in power ; and Elizabeth consented to sacrifice him, when a prospect of the French throne was opened to her daughter. The terms of the quadruple alliance were then accepted by Spain.

While England thus took up arms for the maintenance of the peace, she became more and more implicated in continental politics : hence the importance of a British minister who should be free from that restless activity which is too often mistaken for greatness of mind. The pacific policy of Sir Robert Walpole, though frequently considered inglorious to England, preserved the tranquillity of Europe, without any serious interruptions, for almost twenty years.

About this time, considerable interest was excited by some proceedings of Austria, which had great influence on future



politics. The paternal anxiety of Charles VI., who had only one child, and that a daughter, led him in 1713 to devise a plan for her succession, under the name of the pragmatic sanction; which, if possible, was to be acknowledged and guaranteed by all the powers of Europe. It was recognised by the hereditary states in 1720, and became thenceforth the ground of many negotiations and concessions. Much more vehement commotions, however, were raised by his project of chartering an East India company at Ostend in 1722: having become possessed of provinces once eminent for commerce, and not having any other eligible communication with the sea, he could not readily submit to relinquish the natural advantages of their situation; forgetting that the existence of their actual condition was the bond, which, in the altered circumstances of Europe, secured to him the protection of his independence by the maritime powers. This and some other points in dispute brought about the congress of Cambray, under the mediation of France and England; during the negotiations of which a change in a project of marriage caused a greater change in general politics; and by exciting animosity between France and Spain, effected a reconciliation and an alliance between Spain and Austria. The Spanish infanta, the affianced bride of Louis XV., was sent back to Spain; and the young king espoused Maria Lezcinsky, daughter of Stanislaus, ex-king of Poland. The queen-mother, exasperated by this indignity, instantly concluded an alliance with the court of Vienna, April 20, 1725; its conditions being, a ratification of the peace of Utrecht, a mutual acknowledgement of the order of succession, and a promise of mutual succor in case of attack, by a secret article: Spain also recognised the Ostend company. England and France, annoyed at this treaty, which seemed to augur a union of the Austrian and Spanish crowns by marriage, concluded a counter-alliance at Herrnhäusen, which Prussia joined: Denmark also and Sweden became engaged in it; as Russia was in that of Vienna. In October, 1726, Prussia retired, and joined the imperial party; while the opposing alliance was strengthened by the accession of Holland, offended on account of the Ostend company.

Thus the European states stood ready again to engage in arms: the fitting out of British squadrons directed against the Spanish trade, and the attack on Gibraltar by Spain, lighted the train, and an explosion would have taken place; but it was fortunately extinguished by the exertions of cardinal Fleury, the French minister, whose pacific disposition, very similar to that of Walpole, was generally beneficial to Europe. Preliminaries of peace were signed between Austria and the allies at Paris, May 31, 1727; the chief obstacle being removed by the suspension of the Ostend company for seven years. Spain acceded to this reconciliation, June 13th. The death of George I. at this time occasioned no alteration in affairs, because Walpole was not dismissed by his successor; and peace with England was restored by the treaty of the Prado, March 6, 1728. Some points in dispute were referred for adjustment to a congress to be held at Soissons in June: the restless ambition however of Elizabeth, who, by a treaty with England and France at Seville, had carried her point so far as to obtain admission for Spanish troops into Tuscany and Parma, to secure the succession of her son, not only dissolved the congress, but even drove offended Austria to arms: but the guarantee of the pragmatic sanction always had a talismanic influence on Charles. Thence originated a treaty with England and the republic at Vienna, March 16, 1732; the emperor, in return for that guarantee, acquiescing in the occupation of the Italian states, and the abolition of the Ostend company. Spain acceded to it in June, and the empire in July. Thus peace was still maintained; and the ancient moving principle, the rivalry of leading states, seemed to have grown obsolete: but the lust of aggrandisement, that prevailing malady of cabinets, was still alive; and only wanted an opportunity to display itself. This occurred at the death of Frederic Augustus, king of Poland.

Stanislaus Lezcinsky, whom Charles XII. had invested with the sovereignty of Poland, and Peter the Great had dethroned, was now chosen a second time king, through the influence of his son-in-law Louis XV.: but the emperor, assisted by Russia, having obliged the Poles to institute a new election, the elector of Saxony, who had married the

niece of Charles VI., was raised to the throne, and Stanislaus consigned again to a private station. A short war now occasioned great changes in the state of possessions: France entered into alliance with Spain and Sardinia; and the French troops under Berwick and Villars took all the Austrian possessions in Italy. The emperor sued for peace; and preliminaries were signed at Vienna, October 3, 1735; to which Spain and Sardinia afterwards acceded. The conditions were, that Stanislaus, having renounced all claims on Poland, should enjoy during his life the duchy of Lorrain, which was afterwards to be annexed to France—that Austria should resign to Spain, as a *secundo-geniture*, the two Sicilies and Elba, in favor of Don Carlos—that Stephen, duke of Lorrain, should obtain the reversion of Tuscany; into which he came in July, 1737—that the emperor should receive as an indemnification for the two Sicilies, Parma and Placentia; Sardinia obtaining some districts in the Milanese, and France guaranteeing the pragmatic sanction. A definite treaty of peace however was not concluded till November 18, 1738. Very important to France was this cession of Lorrain, and equally disadvantageous was the loss of it to the empire. The arrangements begun at Utrecht might now be said to be completed, after an interval of twenty-five years; and here commenced the maturity of the southern and principal combination of federative states, which continued during eighteen years, until the celebrated alliance was formed between France and Austria in the year 1756.

The internal changes that took place within the different states during the last period of forty years, consisted principally in the development of germs previously formed. The share taken in the public contests by Spain, arose from the ambition of her rulers, not from any reviving energies of the declining nation. In France, an increasing jealousy of British commerce prepared her people for impending conflicts: at present however they found occupation in domestic schisms, occasioned by the bull *Unigenitus*; but which were not confined to Jansenists and jesuits. In 1716, Law established his bank on the paper-system, and the Mississippi company was connected with it. The scheme was reasonable in itself; but was pushed so far by the government, that

it failed, and so deranged the public finances, that they never afterwards recovered a settled state. The Austrian monarchy changed its policy and its provinces, without suffering any internal revolution; but a gradual decline took place in the army, the finances, and the whole organisation of government. The guarantee of the pragmatic sanction however was a compensation to the emperor for every evil. The German empire, attached as it was to Austria, took part in all her contests: but during this period, four of its first princes had acquired foreign crowns;<sup>11</sup> a circumstance, which was not likely to increase its federative stability, since it would scarcely be possible in all cases to separate their regal from their electoral dignities. In the republic, the Orange party continued to exist after the decease of William III.; and the restoration of the hereditary dignity of stadtholder appeared probable, whenever an opportunity should occur: the farther public relations of this house were determined by a closer connexion with Britain in 1734, when the prince of Orange espoused Anne, daughter of George II.

But no nation during this period acquired so high a reputation as England. Her power was now consolidated by her union with Scotland, and was exerted for the general interests of Europe; her path was clearly defined, and faithfully pursued by her new rulers: the pressure however of her debt, increased by continual wars, gave rise to some extravagant projects, contemporaneous with those of France; but as the British constitution permitted no despotic measures, public credit remained unimpaired; and the burdens of the state were relieved by a diminution of interest on the debt, first in 1717; and again in 1727.

General politics now acquired completely the character of cabinet policy: never before had so much diplomacy been practised; and at no time were such high notions entertained of its efficacy. Political economy was principally confined to the mere acquisition of wealth; so that the mercantile system retained its supremacy: the accumulation of paper-money ended in its depreciation; but its action was

<sup>11</sup> Brandenburg, Saxony, Hanover, and Hesse Cassel.

great on internal trade, by increasing the medium of circulation ; and on the condition of society, by raising prices : so that some ideas of its future power in financial operations began to be conceived. Yet the wildest imagination could hardly have figured to itself the gigantic schemes which it has enabled statesmen of the present times to carry on, or the extraordinary scenes to which it has given rise ; when even a congress of sovereigns has not been able to complete its arrangements without a loan contractor.

The art of war continued to improve under the many able generals which this era produced : it necessarily continued to advance in proportion as the system of standing armies was perfected, towards which a second step was taken by Prussia, after the example of France.

Foreign colonies, during this period, were not much extended ; nor did they experience any great change of masters, with the exception of some cessions made by France to England : hence the greater was their internal increase ; and colonial produce met with a sale in Europe that exceeded all expectations : a still greater interest therefore became attached to them ; and by more than one state they were regarded as the foundation of political superiority. Mutual jealousy however between European powers increased in proportion to the importance that was attached to colonial dependencies ; and at the end of the period a war was breaking out for the first time on account of colonial interests, notwithstanding all the efforts made by Walpole to avoid it.

Portugal at this time acquired an increased importance by its valuable gold mines in Brazil, and its discovery of diamond mines in the same country. Denmark improved its position by the establishment of its evangelical missions in the East Indies, and the acquisition of some possessions in the West. Sweden chartered an East India company, with a view to the trade of China. The storms which disturbed the political atmosphere of old Spain did not reach her colonies ; but the smuggling trade was promoted by an injudicious imposition of duties : neither did any material change affect the colonial affairs of the Dutch : in the east, where no one attempted to disturb them on the islands, they

were still the first commercial nation ; but their superiority showed symptoms of an approaching decline, in the effects of age, of a monopolising system, and of the character of their officers and governors. France, placed by Colbert in the number of colonial states, kept her station successfully : there was as yet so much space unoccupied in the east, that collisions were easily avoided ; and, if they did occur, her amicable relations with England, since the death of Louis XIV., rendered them of less moment ; her West Indian possessions were very prosperous, through the cultivation of sugar, and also of coffee introduced from Surinam, where the Dutch had imported it from Java in 1718. The principal causes however which rendered her colonial prosperity superior to that of England, were the more industrious habits of her planters, and the greater commercial privileges granted to her islands in the slave-traffic with Spanish America. In North America the limits of French territory were contracted by the cession of Nova Scotia and Newfoundland : but France still possessed Canada and Louisiana ; and her attempts to connect these by a chain of fortified places brought on a fierce and important war. In the East Indies, Pondicherry still remained her principal station ; but the occupation of the isles of France and Bourbon was an important step, and highly advantageous to her naval and military operations : her chartered company had some few gleams of prosperity ; but being subject to the variable and despotic plans of ministers, it rested on no stable foundation.

But among colonial states England now began to take the most elevated station. The privileges of the assiento treaty conceded at the peace of Utrecht were important in themselves ; but the permission of attending the great fair at Porto Bello, though not directly very advantageous, opened the way to a smuggling trade which brought almost all the commerce of Spanish America into the hands of the English. The prosperity of Great Britain in the West Indies was obstructed by the smuggling trade carried on by her American colonies with the French islands ; but this very circumstance occasioned parliamentary measures to be taken, which relieved her commerce from many injudicious restraints, and

tended greatly to advance the prosperity of her western islands. Her North American provinces were now rising to vast importance, while their prosperity thrived by the importation of slaves, and the culture of rice, first introduced into Carolina from Madagascar in 1702. New emigrations, increased by religious persecution in the south of Germany, gave political existence to the state of Georgia, which was granted to a private association by letters patent from George II. in 1729. It prospered but slowly, because the trade in peltry was preferred to agriculture, until 1752, when the proprietors resigned their privileges to government. Like the other colonies, it was allowed to choose its own magistrates, submitting the enactments of its legislature to the approval of the king, and conforming to the commercial restrictions imposed on it by the British parliament. Nova Scotia, when ceded to England at the peace of Utrecht, was little better than a desert; so also was Newfoundland: but the participation in its cod-fishery, which this possession secured to England, was of great importance both to her commerce and her navy: owing however to the rights which were reserved to the French, it became a source of jealousy and contest.

The East Indian trade of Britain underwent considerable alterations, though her actual possessions were limited to Bombay, Madras, Fort William in Bengal, and Bencoolen in Sumatra. It has been already observed, that the violent and continual disputes between the old and new East Indian companies, norished by the spirit of political parties, were closed by a coalition in 1702: but a complete union, under one directory, did not take place till 1708; one year after the death of Aurungzebe had fixed the epoch of decay in the Mogul empire.

Though many proofs of misconduct were manifest in the early transactions of the company, yet there was exhibited a spirit of enterprise and perseverance, unsubdued by any difficulties or dangers, which arose from the native powers, or from the intrigues of competitors: to this spirit, created and cherished by exclusive privileges, they owed their ultimate success; and by it they were stimulated to efforts both in peace and war, which have been most honorable to the

British name, and most serviceable to the interests of the empire.

During the early part of this period, Jaffier Khan, nabob of Bengal, jealous of the growing prosperity of the settlement at Calcutta, contrived, in defiance of the emperor's grants, to distress the English by every species of vexation and extortion. The company directed the presidencies of Bombay, Madras, and Calcutta, to send a joint embassy, with a petition for redress, to the great mogul, accompanied with a suitable present. While they were at Delhi, news came from Surat, that the English factory was withdrawn from that place, on account of the impositions laid on their trade; and that a powerful British fleet was expected in the Indian seas: these circumstances determined the court to grant all their requests; and mandates to that purpose were addressed to the nabobs of Bengal and Guzerat, and the subahdar of the Deccan, sealed with the emperor's seal. Numerous privileges were now accorded to the company; some of the most considerable of which were these that follow: their trade at Surat was exempted from duties, and from the visitations or extortions of officers, on the payment of a fixed sum; the rupees coined at Bombay and Madras were to be received in payment of the mogul's revenue; a *dustuck*, or passport, from the president of Calcutta was to exempt the goods specified in it from the searches of revenue officers; and the company was authorised to purchase thirty-seven towns on both sides of the Hoogley river on terms similar to those on which Calcutta had been purchased. This extensive grant, made in 1717, was considered the company's commercial charter as long as they stood in need of protection from native princes. The orders addressed to the nabob of Guzerat and the subahdar of the Deccan were duly respected by those potentates; but Jaffier Khan, seeing that the possession of the towns would enable the company to command the navigation of the river, frustrated the emperor's grant, by menacing the proprietors with his utmost vengeance if they accepted any proposals for the sale of them.

In 1716 the establishment of the Ostend company threatened to interfere with the prosperity of that in London:



but when it was discovered that much of its capital, and many even of its ships and goods, were furnished by British subjects, means were taken, both by proclamation and by act of parliament, to check this invasion of privilege. In 1730 great efforts were made by a large association of merchants in London, Bristol, Liverpool, and other places, to induce parliament to supersede the existing company, by granting an exclusive charter to the new projectors : but the company prevented this project by paying into the exchequer £200,000, and reducing the interest on their old debt of £3,200,000 from five to four per cent. At the death of Aurungzebe, in 1707, the great eastern sovereignty of the moguls began to decline. After a long and vigorous reign, during which he had crushed the independence both of the Mahometan and native dynasties, which still maintained themselves in the great peninsula, he left his throne to the contentions of his children, and his empire to the ambitious enterprises of his chieftains and of strangers. The work of ruin, begun by the family of Aurungzebe, was completed, thirty-two years after his decease, by the invasion of Kouli Khan, who, having first usurped the throne of his sovereign in Persia, carried his arms into India, under the appellation of Nadir Shah, and inflicted by his ravages such terrible wounds on the Mogul empire, that from his time it can scarcely be considered as existing ; being rendered wholly incapable of resisting the progress of the British power, or even of maintaining the authority of its interior government : the various subahdars and nabobs then attained independent dominion over the provinces, which they ruled generally with the most tyrannical caprice ; though they still nominally acknowledged the supremacy of the great mogul.

In the northern states-system, during the period above described, relations, wholly new, were formed by new and energetic rulers ; but to all their changes and contests Russia and Sweden gave a color and direction. Peter the Great and Charles XII. appeared on the scene as antagonists, with equal energy and inflexibility of purpose ; but with this great distinction, that the one marred all his designs by passion, the other effected them by prudence. Peter reformed every branch of government, civil, military, and domestic, in the

most extensive region of Europe : Charles inherited a small and well-ordered state, whose power lay in its provinces round the Baltic, not to be defended by 3,000,000 of men, and therefore destined to become the prey of his mighty antagonist. Poland was under the government of Augustus II., elector of Saxony, disliked by the natives on account of his retaining Saxon troops in the country, which was still disturbed by anarchy and religious differences, and totally averse to all such reforms as were introduced into Russia. This latter power had been raised in 1701 to the rank of a kingdom, and recognised as such, first by the emperor, and gradually by the other European states : henceforth her constant policy lay in efforts to place herself on an equality with the other leading powers : her ambitious principle of conquest was not yet developed. Denmark, though overtaken by the storm, suffered least in the constitution and character of its government : the fall of Sweden and the elevation of Russia were beneficial to its interests, since the latter country was more remote from its boundaries.

Such were the internal relations of the northern states, when a contest, which lasted twenty years, and which gave a new form to the whole system, began with the opening of the eighteenth century. The chief causes of this terrible conflict lay in the determination of Peter I. to inclose the coasts of the Baltic within his dominions ; in the attempt of Augustus II. to render Livonia subject to Poland ; and in the quarrel of Denmark with Frederic IV. of Holstein Gottorp.

A secret league was formed in 1699 between the kings of Denmark and Poland against Sweden ; and this was soon joined by Peter : in the following year all disclosed their designs ; Denmark immediately against Holstein Gottorp, and the other two against Livonia. Charles XII., unjustly attacked, soon extorted a peace from Denmark, and then hastened to Livonia : its liberation enabled him to select which of his foes he would first grapple with. Hatred and passion decided his choice : he left the Russian, whose great policy was to gain time for consolidating and organising his strength, in order that he might dethrone Augustus, who had deeply offended him, but who had already sued for

peace; a fatal measure both for himself and for Poland, whose downfall it accelerated by the political and religious dissensions which it introduced.

In the mean time Peter advanced his dominion to the Baltic; recovered Ingria and Karelia; and laid the foundation of his new capital on the Neva, May 27, 1703: a stronghold was gained in Livonia, and Narva was conquered, August 20, 1704. After combating his foe with various success, Charles determined to attack him in the very heart of his dominions: but an impracticable country thwarted the projects of this royal madman, as in after-times it destroyed the more stupendous projects of an imperial freebooter. Being obstructed in his march toward the ancient capital of the czars, where alone, like the haughty Napoleon, he declared that he would treat for peace,<sup>12</sup> he was induced by a false ally to attempt a route through the Ukraine, with an army diminished by fatigue, famine, and conflicts. In August 1708 he crossed the Dnieper; his general Lewenhaupt, whom he expected to meet him with succors, was defeated at Liesna in the same month; and Pultawa was invested in May 1709. Peter hastened to its relief, and the great battle which ensued decided the fate of the north: Sweden fell from her too great and sudden elevation; while Russia assumed that superiority which she has ever since maintained, and which has enabled her to enter with such remarkable effect into the contests of the southern states.

The immediate consequence of his defeat at Pultawa was the dissolution of the political relations forcibly established by Charles XII. Denmark no longer considered herself bound by the conditions of the peace of Travendal: Saxony, having deposed its king, received back Augustus II.; and Peter retained Livonia, which he had in the mean time conquered. Charles sought to restore his desperate fortunes by aid of the Turks, whom, after great efforts, he engaged in a

<sup>12</sup> The czar, though now in his own territories, was not without apprehension with regard to the issue of the contest: he therefore sent serious proposals of peace to Charles. 'I will treat at Moscow,' said the Swedish monarch. 'My brother Charles,' replied Peter, when informed of this haughty answer, 'always affects to play Alexander; but he will not, I hope, find in me a Darius.'—Russel's Europe, vol. v. p. 177.

war with the czar: but at the very moment when Peter was shut up with his whole army in Moldavia, and, being without hope of extricating himself, was on the point of surrender, he was saved by the talent of a woman and the corruptibility of a grand vizir. The peace of the Pruth finished, by the destruction of Charles's projects, what the defeat of Pultawa had begun. It is unnecessary to follow this monarch in his wild career of marches, battles, sieges, and negotiations, to his death in the trenches before Frederickshall, where he fell in 1718; having exhausted his country and disciplined his enemies.

Sweden then lay at the mercy of her foes; but after a series of treaties dearly purchased with Hanover, Prussia, Denmark, and Poland, under the mediation of Great Britain, she at length concluded a peace with her most dangerous and powerful adversary at Nystadt, September 10, 1721, by the cession of Livonia, Esthonia, Ingria, Karelia, part of Wiburg, and many islands; being allowed to retain Finland; while Peter bound himself not to interfere in her internal affairs. The czar now adopted the imperial title: southern Europe already felt his influence; but as for the north, his navigation of the Baltic with fleets of his own building gave him for ever the superiority over Sweden. The constitution of that country was now invaded by the aristocracy; while Poland presented the melancholy aspect of a nation devastated by foreign war and intestine commotions, as well as by famine, pestilence, and religious discord. Denmark underwent very little change; but the new and important kingdom of Prussia was found to have advanced far internally toward perfection. The fall of Sweden having freed her from a troublesome neighbor, Frederic William I. laid the basis of her power on the principle of economy: by a prudent management of the revenue, he raised and disciplined those magnificent bodies of troops, which his successor employed with such extraordinary effect.

During the reigns of Catharine I. and Peter II., domestic policy chiefly occupied the Russian government; but when Anne, niece of Peter the Great, ascended the throne in 1730, an attempt made to restrict the imperial power occasioned the overthrow of the native nobility; and a cabinet formed

principally of foreigners, initiated in the mysteries of general policy, sought for splendor in foreign relations. This empress procured for her favorite Biron the duchy of Courland, which country continued ever after under the influence of Russia; and, what was still more important, at the death of the king of Poland, she fixed Augustus III. on that throne, in defiance of France, who again set up the ex-king Stanislaus Lezinsky: having then determined to attack the Turks, and avenge the disgrace brought on the Russian arms by the peace of the Pruth, she found a ready ally in Austria, who was anxious to share in the expected booty. But the hopes of these allies were considerably disappointed: though Asoph was conquered, the Crimea entered, and a fixed establishment formed at the mouths of the Dnieper, yet the campaign of 1738 was rendered unsuccessful by plague and famine in the Ukraine; and though Choczim and Moldavia were reduced in 1739, the losses sustained by Austria brought that power to the ignominious peace of Belgrade, and opened the way to accommodation with Russia: this power retained Asoph, and gave up her other conquests; but her superiority was decidedly shown, and the interior organisation of her army was effected.

Third Division of the Second Period, from 1740 to 1786. —As one division in the states-system is commonly called the age of Louis XIV., so this might with equal propriety derive its appellation from Frederic the Great. European civilisation now reached a very high point, and nations consequently became more assimilated to each other. The circulation of ideas increased with the diffusion of languages, and differences of religious faith began more and more to lose importance among the people, as they were considered of less consequence by their rulers: political economy made great advances; so also did military and naval tactics; while commerce rose to an extent and importance never known before. Nor was this great advance confined to practical affairs; the spirit of the age was devoted to theoretical questions; the ardor of investigation increased with its increasing intelligence; and scarcely any thing was thought beyond the reach of human reason. A natural consequence of all this, was an accession of authority to

eminent writers, who began to assume a high rank in society, to guide public opinion, and to influence the tone and practice both of foreign and domestic policy.

The northern and the western states of Europe, in this period, became much more intimately connected through the intervening link of the Prussian monarchy, which had now assumed its rank among the leading powers: still the north retained its proper interests; and it was rather that Russia itself became involved in both systems, than that a union of the two took place.

The death of the emperor Charles VI., which occurred October 20, 1740, occasioned terrible convulsions among the European states, by awakening the ambition and cupidity of their sovereigns. The male line of the house of Hapsburg being now extinct, Maria Theresa, eldest daughter of Charles, and wife of Francis, grand duke of Tuscany, laid claim to the Austrian hereditary dominions, by the right, not only of blood, but of that pragmatic sanction which had been so often guaranteed.<sup>13</sup> In the same year, Frederic II., commonly, and not unjustly called 'the great,' if undaunted courage, military talent, and political knowledge merit the title, ascended the throne of Prussia, having one fixed object in view, of which he never lost sight;—the aggrandisement of his country, whose physical power was not equal to the rank it held among European states: accordingly, he took this opportunity of reviving an antiquated claim to the fertile province of Silesia, contiguous to his own territories; and marched at the head of 30,000 well-disciplined troops to establish it by force of arms: at the same time, Charles Albert, elector of Bavaria, laid claim to Bohemia, on the strength of a forged clause in the will of Frederic I.; Augustus, elector of Saxony and king of Poland, pretended to the whole Austrian succession in right of his wife, the eldest daughter of Joseph I.; the king of Spain exhibited similar pretensions in favor of his son; and Sardinia revived an ancient claim to the duchy of Milan. But of all proceedings, that of Louis XV. was the most extraordinary,

<sup>13</sup> Prince Eugene is said to have caustically remarked, 'that 100,000 men would have guaranteed it far better than 100,000 treaties.'

who urged his claims also to the disputed succession,<sup>14</sup> not so much with a view of acquiring it for himself, as to have a pretext for assisting other claimants in dismembering the dominions of the old rival of France. This policy imposed on him the necessity of foreign alliances; from which however he could acquire no great accession of strength, since there were no points of agreement in their respective views. Which of them in fact could seriously have wished for the dissolution of the Austrian monarchy and of the European system? yet a treaty, or secret alliance, was formed in May, 1741, between France, Bavaria, and Spain, to which Saxony acceded in the following September. 'Thus Europe witnessed the singular spectacle of three powers, each of which claimed the whole monarchy, uniting with France, which itself had no farther pretence, than a wish to vindicate the rights of all. Under these circumstances, Frederic II. considered it judicious to join the confederacy against Austria; and Prussia, for the first time, became allied with France: but it was soon seen how different were the views of this king from those of the allies: they were to serve him as means for accomplishing his schemes; and though he joined them, it was with the tacit proviso, that he should withdraw himself as soon as his own convenience would permit.'<sup>15</sup>

Against Maria Theresa nearly half the European states were now in arms, eager to rend in pieces her dominions, in order to satisfy their own unjustifiable and ambitious desires. The noble and enthusiastic reception which that princess met with from her Hungarian subjects is too well known to need any remark, except that it enabled her to make head against her adversaries, though the imperial crown was now taken from her house, and transferred to Charles of Bavaria. Where was she to look for foreign allies, when England was engaged in a maritime war with Spain, and unfortunate Sweden was involved with Russia in a contest, by which she lost the important province of Finland? Providence re-

<sup>14</sup> As descended in a right line from the eldest male branch of the house of Austria.

<sup>15</sup> Heeren, vol. ii. p. 10.

warded the magnanimity of Maria Theresa by exciting the British islanders to shake off the sloth contracted by a long peace of twenty years, and to draw the sword in the cause of female heroism. That cause was not only a righteous one, but perfectly consistent with the general policy of Great Britain, connected as it was with the very existence of her oldest ally, with whom her sons had frequently shed her blood, in opposing the ambitious projects, and dangerous usurpations, of the house of Bourbon.

Walpole retired from the approaching storm, and gave place to the impetuous and eloquent Carteret, who immediately adopted the most active and energetic measures. The king of Prussia soon captured Breslau, and made a rapid progress in the province; for he was joyfully received by the natives, two-thirds of whom were protestants. Before the end of the year, however, the confederacy of the allies was broken by the retirement of Frederic, who made a separate treaty with Austria, by which he acquired possession of Silesia. Austria soon recovered Bohemia; Bavaria was conquered, and the new emperor Charles VII. driven into exile. The victory at Dettingen, gained by the British and German troops in 1743, compelled the French to recross the Rhine, and assisted to procure the alliance of the king of Sardinia in Italy, and that of Saxony in Germany, for Maria Theresa.

France, unbroken in spirit by the severe losses she sustained in consequence of Frederic's policy, and possessing generals of high military talent, with great internal resources, determined no longer to appear in the character of an auxiliary, but to declare war directly against Austria and England. The artful Frederic now proposed to join again the alliance: he was wanted, and therefore was received: his pretext was an anxious desire to preserve the integrity of the German empire; and to succor the exile Charles VII., in whose election to the imperial throne he had concurred: a stronger motive was the fear of losing Silesia, if Austria, leagued with Saxony, should be victorious. Soon after this alliance, and in the midst of the contests that followed it, Charles VII. died; and his son Maximilian Joseph recovered his hereditary dominions by renouncing the imperial crown, which was conferred on Francis, the husband of



Maria Theresa, notwithstanding the opposition of the elector of Brandenburg. He took advantage however of the death of Charles VII. to open negotiations for peace ; and again separating himself from his confederates, effected a reconciliation with Austria, retaining possession of Silesia under the guarantee of George II.

In Italy and the Low Countries war was vigorously carried on by France and her remaining allies : a diversion too was made at this period by the rebellion in Scotland : the great battle of Fontenoy, gained by marshal Saxe, restored the French affairs in the Netherlands ; while the progress of the young pretender recalled the duke of Cumberland, with the best of the British troops, to England ; and that chief, when he returned, after the victory of Culloden, was unable to stand before the genius of his antagonist. In Italy the contest lay with Spain, whose queen, Elizabeth, was anxious to conquer Milan for her youngest son, Don Philip, by the aid of Naples : but this latter power was neutralised by the presence of an English fleet, which threatened its capital ; the influence of the Bourbons being opposed in this quarter by an alliance of Sardinia with England and Austria.

But France soon found herself deserted by Spain, through the death of Philip V. : her navy was almost annihilated by the British fleets ; her colonies were either captured or menaced ; and while she aimed at the recovery of her superiority by conquests in the Netherlands, which gave occasion to the election of a stadtholder, she became dismayed at the approach of a formidable antagonist in Russia, whom Austria had lately induced to join her alliance. Influenced by these circumstances, Louis XV. made advances towards an accommodation, which led to the celebrated congress at Aix la Chapelle ; where France, after having judiciously employed her ancient policy in separating the allies, concluded a peace, of which the following were the most important conditions :—1. Mutual restitution of conquests made by France and England : to France, Cape Breton ; to England, Madras ; to the republic, the frontier fortresses ; nothing being concluded respecting the boundaries of Canada and Nova Scotia : 2. resignation of Parma, Placentia, and Guastalla in favor of Don Philip : 3. the portions of the Milanese

resigned in 1743 given up to Sardinia: 4. the assiento treaty of 1713 confirmed to England for the four years still remaining: 5. Dunkirk to remain fortified on the land side: 6. Silesia guaranteed to Frederic against all claimants; the pragmatic sanction to Austria; and the British succession to the Hanoverian family.

This peace and the war which preceded it have been too much censured by English politicians; as if the one had been undertaken, and the other concluded, for the sake of German interests only, and to favor the predilections of the house of Hanover: the fact is, that the war was necessary to prevent a dismemberment of one of the principal states in the system, and a dissolution of the balance of power: with regard to the peace, it was as favorable to the confederates as they had a right to expect, after their defeats in the Netherlands, with the probability of Prussia joining the opposite party: besides, it was of no little moment to put a stop to a contest which was accompanied with a dreadful waste of human life, and destruction of human comforts. No party can be said to have gained any tangible advantages from it, except the wily Frederic, who acquired a very considerable increase of territory, and with it a proportionate influence in the European confederation. Britain indeed had been so flourishing in manufactures and commerce during the pacific administration of Sir Robert Walpole, that she was enabled not only to subsidise the allies, direct the war, and arrange the peace, but to restore and augment her decaying navy, and to acquire the dominion of the sea. This circumstance, to what did it not afterwards lead? That however which had the greatest immediate effect on the system, was the increased influence of Prussia. Such a power, by its geographical situation, could not long subsist in its present state: it necessarily sought a consolidation of its territories; whence arose a change in the previous relations of other states, a jealousy of Prussian aggrandisement, and a desire of revenge on account of Prussian conquests.

The few years intervening between the treaty of Aix la Chapelle and the next war, concealed, under the appearance of public prosperity and general happiness, a strong spirit of jealousy and mistrust. Austria turned her attention imme-

diately to the formation of alliances ; and her close connexion with Saxony and Russia, added to the hatred entertained of Frederic by the empress and by count Bruhl the Saxon minister, gave success to her negotiations in that quarter. In the midst of these schemes, the vast power of France naturally occurred to Austria as ready to be thrown into the opposite balance ; her alliance therefore was an event greatly to be wished for, though little to be expected : the union however of these two great antagonists was effected by prince Kaunitz, long the very soul of Austrian diplomacy, through his interest at the French court, whose weak and enervated monarch was wholly governed by mistresses. The project held out to Louis XV. was, that Austria and France should rule Europe in common, after the abolition of the Prussian monarchy : the result therefore of Frederic's overthrow would have been the oppression of all the weaker states, the predominancy of Austria in Germany, and the destruction of the confederative system. An alliance offensive and defensive between Austria and France, with a compact of neutrality on the part of Russia, was concluded May 1, 1756, by which Austria virtually renounced her ancient connexion with Britain ; since the treaty was made when a war was on the point of breaking out between England and France on account of the North American colonies. It soon indeed became evident that France was forming a plan to seize the colonies of her rival in both hemispheres, encouraged by two able and ambitious men, La Galissonière and Dupleix, the respective governors of Canada and Pondicherry : she therefore made extraordinary efforts to increase her marine, as well as to engage Spain also in her schemes ; but these intrigues were counteracted by the address of Mr. Keene, the British resident at Madrid, supported by the upright and judicious conduct of the Spanish minister, Don Ricardo Wall, and the extraordinary influence which the Italian singer Farinelli possessed over the queen.

Though Madras, which had been conquered by the French during the last war, was restored to England, and Louisburg to France, agreeably to the treaty of Aix la Chapelle, yet hostilities could hardly be said to have ceased between the subjects of the two powers. Plans had been laid down by

each, during the latter part of the last war, for conquest over the settlements of the other ; but they proved abortive. All such projects seem to have been relinquished by England at the peace ; but the case was otherwise with her rival ; whose ambitious and intriguing chief Dupleix, having gallantly defended Pondicherry in 1748, conceived an idea of supplying the want of commerce to France by large territorial possessions in the east : in order to forward such a scheme, he not only promoted natives of India to the rank of subahdars, who, in the troubles which afflicted the empire, generally assumed a licentious independence ; but he aimed at raising himself also to a similar station ; and the number of French troops introduced into India during the late war seemed to favor his design.

On the death of the nizam of the Deccan, the highest officer under the mogul, in 1748, Dupleix and his associates, with much address, and after the assassination of Nazir Jung, procured the dignity for Mirzafa Jung. The usurper, having been in the following year defeated and slain by the nabobs of Cadapah and Condanore, was succeeded by Salabut Jung : before this event, however, Dupleix had labored to procure the nabobship of the Carnatic for a creature of his own, named Chunda Saheb ; and though the court of Delhi conferred the office on Anver-addin Shah, this latter prince was, at the instigation of Dupleix, attacked and slain by his rival Chunda, who obtained a grant of the disputed government from the nizam, Mirzafa Jung.

The new nabob, Chunda Saheb, strenuously supported French interests, and Dupleix had the address to get himself appointed nabob of the Carnatic, even during the lifetime of his friend. In the mean time, Mohammed Ali, son of the late nabob, having taken refuge at Trichinopoly, implored the assistance of the English, in a danger common to both from French usurpation : he was accordingly aided by a body of troops under the command of major Lawrence, a brave and skilful officer ; and he afterwards entered into a close alliance with the company, to whom he yielded several important points which had long been in dispute. On this ground he received additional reinforcements under captain Cope ; and the contest was carried on with varied success

till the campaign of 1751 ; when the celebrated Clive, a self-taught warrior, left the civil service of the company, and began a splendid military career. On September 1, he took the fort of Arcot by assault : but after a few days, and before he could secure his conquest, he was besieged by a large body of troops under Chunda Saheb, and the French : his defence of this place was of the highest order of warlike achievements, and he forced his assailants to abandon the siege when it had continued fifty days. Reinforced by captain Kirkpatrick, he pursued and routed the enemy on the plains of Arni ; and then joining major Lawrence, he continued to act under that officer with such vigor and talent, that he effectually humbled the allies, and took from the French many of their late acquisitions. Mohammed Ali remained undisputed nabob of Arcot ; and Dupleix being recalled in 1754, a cessation of arms took place ; when a conditional treaty was negotiated between his successor M. Godeheu and the English, by which both parties were bound to abstain from oriental government, and all interference in the quarrels of native princes.

Before however this treaty could be sanctioned at home, a new war broke out between the two nations in a different quarter of the globe, respecting the boundaries of Nova Scotia, and the occupation of some neutral islands of the Antilles ; but more immediately owing to the erection of French forts along the Ohio from Louisiana to Canada, by which the western colonies were inclosed, as it were, with a net. Hostilities commenced ; and as the great strength of England now lay in her navy, she determined to strike a blow with this weapon : accordingly in 1755 she captured several merchantmen and two ships of the line ; but war was not openly proclaimed till May 15, 1756.

The combinations against Prussia had already advanced so far, that a war on the part of that power against Austria and her allies became inevitable : besides, as Austria had given up all connexion with England, and allied herself with France, and as George II. was trembling for the safety of Hanover, a way was opened for a coalition between England and Prussia ; though this did not take place without the accession of Russia to the opposite cause. The two wars soon

became amalgamated into one; though at the conclusion they were again separated, and gave occasion for two distinct treaties.

If in the former contest Frederic was the aggressor, in this he appeared under the more defensible character of an attacked and injured potentate: the tremendous and apparently overwhelming coalition against him, influenced by the mean passions of its chiefs, continued indissoluble to the death of the empress Elizabeth of Russia: there was also something peculiar in the connexion of England and Prussia, closely allied, yet scarcely ever acting in common; while nothing but the prospect of a complete revolution could ever have united the houses of Hanover and Brandenburg. This war served to display the splendid talents of the great earl of Chatham, by which the character of the nation itself was elevated in the eyes of the world. The palm of glory was divided between the able minister of England and the intrepid monarch of Prussia.

The decisive character of Frederic caused him to strike the first blow against the confederates, after demanding a categorical answer respecting her intentions from Austria, and being refused: having invaded Saxony without delay, and captured Dresden, he found in the archives of that capital evidence of the designs of his enemies, which he published to the world; and soon afterwards he gained a great victory over the Austrians at Lowoschutz: by the terms of their agreement, Saxony, Austria, Russia, and France were instantly and simultaneously to take up arms, on the breaking out of hostilities: besides, the empire was induced by Austria, and Sweden by France, to join the coalition, under pretence of guaranteeing the peace of Westphalia. It happened fortunately for Frederic, that, when more than half the nations of Europe were leagued together for his destruction, France determined to commence hostilities against the British in Hanover: this forced them, together with Hesse and Brunswick, into immediate action; and gave occasion to the illustrious Ferdinand, the pupil and preserver of Frederic, to display, in the conduct of the allied armies, abilities of the highest order: had that great commander ever suffered such a defeat as would have let the French troops into the prin-

cial scenes of war, the fortunes of Frederic must have been irretrievably ruined. The chief events of this memorable contest, to the death of George II., were as follow :—In 1757 Frederic invaded Bohemia, and gained a great victory over the Austrians at Prague; but was obliged to abandon the siege of that place, after the drawn battle of Kolin. The Russian army, amounting to 62,000 foot and 19,000 horse, beside Tartars and Calmucs, advanced and were attacked by the Prussian general Lehwald, who was defeated with great slaughter, August 30. Hanover was overrun and laid under contribution by the French; and the duke of Cumberland was obliged to conclude the convention of Closter-Seven, when the French and imperialists advanced in great force under the prince of Soubise: the fall of Frederic seemed inevitable; but he retrieved his affairs by the important victory of Rosbach. In May 1758 he made a fruitless attempt on Olmutz, but gained a great victory over the Russians at Zorndorf, August 25; by means of which, and having also driven back the Swedes, he covered Brandenburg: in the mean time, prince Ferdinand had pushed the French beyond the Rhine, defeated count Clermont, and formed a junction with the British troops. In October the Austrian general Daun gained the battle of Hochkirchen, in which marshal Keith was slain; but Silesia was still preserved; and the king, having obliged the Austrians to fall back into Bohemia, returned to the protection of Saxony: Daun raised the siege of Dresden, into which place Frederic entered in triumph.

In 1759 the Russians again advanced with Austrian reinforcements under the skilful general Laudohn; and Frederic, after a gallant resistance, suffered a severe defeat on the twelfth of August at Cunersdorf, though he effected some masterly movements afterwards: the victory however at Minden, gained only twelve days before, saved him from annihilation: from that time also a continued superiority was maintained by prince Ferdinand, and the greater part of Hanover was preserved. In November the Prussians sustained a heavy loss at Maxen; but the spirit of the king supported him under all reverses. In 1760 the Prussian general Fouquet was defeated by Laudohn, and a fruitless siege of Dresden undertaken by the king; yet Silesia was

not lost, and the junction of the Russian and Austrian forces in that province was skilfully prevented. Frederic, surrounded by three hostile armies in his camp at Lignitz, defeated Laudohn August 15; but the Russians and Austrians entered Brandenburg, and pillaged Berlin. Frederic hastened into Saxony, which he was enabled to recover, and to maintain by one of his most glorious and important victories at Torgau. Before the close of this year he lost his best ally in George II. ; and the bonds of his connexion with England, though not dissolved, were materially loosened.

During this time the war was vigorously kept up by sea, where the British, under their admirals Hawke and Boscawen, soon gained a decided superiority; and this opened a ready way to colonial conquests. In the early part of the contest, Minorca had been shamefully lost; the disgrace of which event must be divided between the ministry who sent insufficient relief, and the admiral who failed to make the best use of what was sent: very unfairly however punishment fell only on the latter. In North America, the prospects of the war seemed at first unfavorable: its provinces could not without great difficulty defend themselves against the ravages of the French and Indians; and the British troops were led to slaughter by generals fit only to conduct a review: but Pitt soon infused energy into our commanders; the skilful Amherst and the intrepid Wolfe renewed the most splendid days of England's glory; the whole of Canada was added to the British empire; the French forts on the Ohio, one of the principal causes of the war, were all destroyed; and the American colonists were left free to extend their settlements as far westward as their treaties with the Indians or their conquests might permit.

About this period an occurrence took place, which is connected with a question of considerable interest, regarding the time when the American colonists began to entertain the notion of throwing off their dependence on the mother country. In 1760 an order of council was issued from Great Britain, directing the officers of the customs at Boston to carry into effect the acts of the trade, and apply to the supreme court of judicature in Massachusetts for writs of assistance. Accordingly application was made, in November,



to the court then sitting at Salem : chief justice Sewal, however, expressed great doubt of the legality of such a writ, as well as of the power of the court to grant it ; nor did any of the other judges say a word to contradict him : but as the application proceeded from the crown, a hearing could not be refused ; which was accordingly fixed for the next term of court in February 1761. In December chief justice Sewal died, and his place was supplied by the lieutenant-governor Hutchinson. Otis, as advocate general, was called on by the officers of the customs to argue their cause ; but he, believing all such writs to be illegal, refused to plead, and with a spirit characteristic of the man, resigned his lucrative office. He then yielded to the opposite call of the merchants, and undertook their defence ; but with singular disinterestedness refused all remuneration. In an argument of four or five hours, Otis laid down with great clearness the principles of civil liberty, dwelling with particular force on the point, that taxation without representation is totally inconsistent with those principles. Of this celebrated speech nothing was published at the time except a few garbled extracts ; but president Adams took notes at its delivery ; and he has declared, that ‘ Mr. Otis’s oration breathed into the nation the breath of life ; that American independence was then and there born ; that the seeds of patriots and heroes, by whom the *non sine Diis animosus infans* was to be defended, were at that time sown ; for every man of an immense audience appeared to go away, as he himself did, ready to take arms against writs of assistance.<sup>16</sup>

Returning to the east, we find that the fortune of Great Britain was at first unfavorable. An application made to the English by Salabat Jung, who wished to get rid of his French allies, could not be received, on account of their own affairs in Bengal, where the settlement itself was in danger of total destruction from the attack of the subahdar Surajah Dowla. This weak, vicious, and tyrannical potentate was grandson of the celebrated Aliverdi Khan, who had a favorite wife, a woman of great talents and virtue. When the old subahdar was on his death-bed, knowing well the disposition of his

<sup>16</sup> Life of James Otis of Massachusetts, by William Tudor. Boston, 1823.

youthful successor, he earnestly recommended him on all important affairs to consult the good old queen, whose discernment and foresight would be a guard to his inexperience : in obedience to this advice, when the prince entertained thoughts of attacking Calcutta, he applied to his female oracle, who thus addressed him :—‘ Beware what you do : the English are a wise, intelligent, peaceable, and industrious people : they are like bees ; if properly managed and protected, they will bring you honey ; but beware of disturbing the hive : you may destroy some of them ; but in the end, believe me, they will sting you to death.’<sup>17</sup> Irritated however against the British on account of their growing power in the Carnatic and Bengal, he determined to attack them ; urging as an ostensible pretext their abuse of the privilege of passports to the purposes of mercantile fraud, and their protecting a native of high rank, who had fled from the tyranny of the subahdar. On the eighteenth of June, 1756, he besieged Calcutta with 50,000 men ; and as the place possessed scarcely any means of defence, he gained possession of it, after repeated assaults, by capitulation. Enraged at finding only 50,000 rupees in the treasury, and pretending that valuable property was buried underground, as a punishment for the concealment of it, he ordered Mr. Holwell, with 145 other persons, to be thrust into a dungeon of the garrison, called the black hole, where the indescribable heat of a sultry night killed all but twenty-three : having then received the congratulations of his courtiers on this glorious achievement, he left a garrison of 3000 men in Calcutta, and returned to his capital, exulting in the idea that he had exterminated the English.

Admiral Watson however and colonel Clive soon returned to relieve their countrymen : by their strenuous co-operation Calcutta was retaken and fortified ; Clive also reduced the large town of Hoogly, where the subahdar had established his magazines ; and having defeated him in a general engagement, forced him to sue for peace : it was granted, on the restoration of their goods, factories, and privileges to the English, and an extension of the presidency over thirty-eight

<sup>17</sup> History of India and Bengal, by Colonel Capper.

neighboring villages. To the preservation of this peace the subahdar swore on the Koran ; but only a few days had passed, before he entered into correspondence with Bussy, the French general, whom he invited to Bengal. Clive, in the mean time, having attacked the French settlements in that province, and reduced their principal fortress at Chandernagore, turned his arms again against the perfidious subahdar ; when having discovered that Mir Jaffier, commander in chief of Dowla's forces, was disaffected toward that prince, he entered into a difficult and dangerous negotiation with him ; and in consequence of his services, placed him, after the great victory of Plassy, on his master's musnud or throne. A treaty was now concluded with Mir Jaffier, by which he not only confirmed all former treaties with the English, but placed the French possessions in his country under their power, enlarged the territory of the company, and gave to it and its allies £2,750,000 as an indemnification. In the next campaign, when the scene of war was transferred to the Coromandel coast, the British arms were less successful ; for M. de Lally, being gallantly seconded by the count d'Estaing, reduced Cuddalore and Fort St. David, and conceived hopes of subduing all the British possessions in the Carnatic. In pursuance of this object he invested Madras ; but the firm conduct of governor Pigot, seconded by the courage and talent of colonels Lawrence and Draper, enabled it to hold out till succors arrived : soon afterwards colonel Coote took the command of the British forces, and by several signal victories succeeded in restoring their superiority in this quarter. In the mean time, the Dutch, who had entered into a combination with the new subahdar and the French, sent a detachment of forces from Batavia to destroy the British factories and trade in Bengal : having however suffered a severe defeat by sea and land, they submitted to such conditions as it pleased the government of Calcutta to impose on them ; while Mir Jaffier was deposed by Clive, in favor of his son-in-law Mir Cossim.

Encouraged by success, colonel Coote now determined to attack Pondicherry, which, being too strong for an assault, was closely invested by sea and land, and reduced to great

distress. The blockade being afterwards changed into a regular siege, the inhabitants were anxious to capitulate; but Lally, whose furious passions were supposed even to have disordered his brain, turned a deaf ear to their supplications, and resolved to defend the place to the last extremity. Thus stood affairs in India at the close of 1760; the detail of which will be resumed in the body of the work: meanwhile, let us take a rapid glance at those of Ireland, from the time of England's first interference with them, in order that we may be better prepared to estimate the events of our own times, relating to the sister kingdom.

The page of Irish history is in truth a dark one: it exhibits so much native violence and treachery, with so much foreign oppression and neglect, so many impotent attempts to conquer, and so many ill-combined efforts to resist, that the mind is divided between pity for its sufferings, and indignation at its folly and crimes. Long before the English set foot in Ireland as enemies, the Danish invasions had aggravated all the evils of an ill-regulated government, and prepared it to yield a partial triumph to the first weak efforts of its neighbors, distracted as these themselves were by other wars and internal dissensions. It was a great misfortune that the Anglo-Norman invasion under Henry II. was not powerful enough to effect a change, like that which took place in England at the conquest; when the Saxons were quickly dispossessed of their lands, without those tedious and protracted struggles which have convulsed Ireland during successive ages: unfortunately too, when the question of property could be no longer connected with national distinctions, it became involved in the still more harassing difference of religious faith: still however it contrived in all cases to retain its chief character, which was that of *confiscation*. While the civil power was incapable of resisting the enterprises of the English, the ecclesiastical system of Ireland was brought into such a connexion with the papacy,<sup>18</sup> as gave influence to those bulls of the Roman pontiffs Adrian IV. and Alexander III., which affected to

<sup>18</sup> The power of the Roman see was established in a council assembled in 1111, and confirmed in another convened in 1152.

bestow on Henry II. the sovereignty of the country ; nor, until Henry VIII. denied the pope's supremacy, was any other foundation sought for the authority of the English monarch over Ireland. It is a curious circumstance, that the very attachment to the Roman see, which constituted the original ground of connexion with England, should afterwards prove the active principle of the repeated efforts made by the Irish to detach themselves from this country. Henry II. had early conceived a design of annexing Ireland to his dominions, and procured the papal sanction, as necessary for extending the influence of true religion : but the occupation which he soon found in subduing the insurrection of his brother, in securing his own territories, and in contending with the inflexible spirit of Becket, diverted him from the prosecution of this design, until the disorders of the Irish government presented an opportunity not to be declined. His embarrassments however prevented him from conducting an expedition in person ; but he authorised his subjects to engage in the enterprise ; and a very small force was enabled to effect so much, through the dissensions of the natives, that the jealousy of the king was roused ; and he proceeded in person to Ireland, about two years and a half after the first expedition of his people. In six months however he was recalled to England ; and Ireland was unavoidably abandoned to a military aristocracy, which Henry was obliged to entrust with the prosecution of his plans. Thus the original conquest of Ireland was very limited and imperfect. Henry himself did not visit more than a third of the country ; nor did he construct a fort, or establish a garrison there : but the real conquest was the work of successive adventurers, and was tainted with the wretched policy which must ever belong to predatory enterprises, guided only by private interest. From the first settlement in Leinster under Strongbow, to the reign of Elizabeth, the people of Ireland, with the exception of the English colonists and a few favored natives within the pale, continued under their own laws and institutions, except when they interfered with English persons or property ; in which case they were subjected to the most harsh and iniquitous proceedings. They were not unfrequently excited to rebellion, in order that English adven-

turers might seize their possessions; while opinions were sedulously propagated and readily believed, that they were an incurably vicious race, worthy only of destruction or spoliation: the great body of the natives were reputed not only as aliens, but enemies; insomuch that to kill a wild Irishman in time of peace was adjudged to be no felony. Nor was this freedom from English laws considered by the Irish themselves a privilege: on the contrary, they were so sensible of the advantages which those laws bestowed, that they were eager to be brought under their salutary dominion: indeed they petitioned Edward I. for this boon, and offered 8000 marks in return for so great a favor. Nor was the king himself averse to their proposal; but when he felt it necessary to consult the prelates and nobles by whom Ireland was governed, on this question, they set it aside on the principle that perpetual war was advantageous to the English, who might thus exterminate the Irish and gain possession of their property. In progress of time the hostility of the natives was reinforced by the accession of the English settlers themselves, who gradually declined from the laws and usages of their original country into those of the people, whose subjugation was in vain attempted. But though great degeneracy prevailed among the inhabitants of English blood, the principles of a parliamentary constitution had happily been introduced and preserved; and though the origin of the Irish parliament may be involved in some obscurity, the first assembly which deserves the name appears to have been convened in the year 1295, when the representatives of boroughs were first summoned to the English parliament. A claim of legislative independence on the English government has been at different times maintained; but it was established only a very short time before the Irish national assembly merged in the legislature of the British empire. The strongest check given to this spirit of independence was in the year 1495, by the law of Poynings, which gave to the privy councils of the two countries a negative, before debate, on all proceedings of the Irish parliament. It declares, that no parliament shall be holden in this land, until the acts be certified into England; it was amended in the third and fourth years of Philip and Mary, when the governor and

council were empowered to certify during the session such other causes or considerations as they might think expedient. At that time such was the condition of Ireland, that this law, which came to be considered a badge of national disgrace, was cherished as a protection for the commons against oppression by the licentious nobles. The royal supremacy, acknowledged by the English in 1534, was recognised two years afterwards by the parliament of Ireland; though it was strenuously opposed by the clergy and people, who were encouraged by the Roman see to resist all edicts adverse to that church and its head. When their efforts were at length frustrated by the power of the government, a law was passed in 1541, that the title of king, instead of lord, of Ireland, should be annexed to that of the English monarch.

Henry VIII. presented the first outline of the reformation to Ireland, as he had done to England, without any regard to fitness, preparation, or previous instruction; his practice being rather to command assent than to secure opinion: but the result was different; the people generally expressed an abhorrence of the innovation; and their opposition to the English liturgy, introduced in 1550, was so strong, that it was deemed expedient to enforce its use by a proclamation, rather than attempt to procure for it the sanction of parliament: hence, the early death of Edward VI. and the accession of Mary easily blotted out the small remains of protestantism which lingered in the country.

In the reign of Elizabeth schemes of oppressive violence assumed a high degree of activity. At the very commencement of her government the aspect of this imperious sovereign was harsh and severe towards her Irish subjects, with whom even her father had condescended to temporise; yet did she make the bold attempt to force on them the new doctrines, while all her measures savored of hostility against the old proprietors. New and profligate adventurers flowed into the country; corrupt governors rendered the royal authority odious to the people; the most atrocious murders and extensive forfeitures of land shook the whole frame of society; quarter was rarely given in battle, and prisoners were murdered in cold blood: yet the reformation made no progress;

for those who were compelled to war against the queen's power would not feel disposed to favor her religion. The papal court naturally took advantage of this state of things ; and, in conjunction with the bigoted king of Spain, excited the great rebellion under Hugh O'Neale ; which, though successful in the beginning, and augmented by the injudicious conduct of Sir William Fitzwilliam and the earl of Essex, was subdued by the energy of lord Mountjoy. But though the suppression of the insurgents and the humiliation of O'Neale prepared the country for improvement, the struggle gave rise to a Roman catholic party in Ireland strongly opposed to the government ; and this feeling, cherished as it was by foreign influence, materially opposed the progress of the reformed doctrines, and, with them, the melioration of the people. In 1593, the university of Dublin was founded to promote the education of the protestant clergy ; and in the last year of Elizabeth's reign the New Testament was printed in the Irish language.

The state of Ireland at the accession of James I. offered to him an occasion of doing much good ; and that great master-spirit of the age, lord Bacon, earnestly exhorted his sovereign to adopt the policy of conciliation and improvement towards ' a land endowed with so many dowries of nature : ' but the pedantic monarch, vain of his scholastic and theological acquirements, instead of beginning by healing the wounds of this distracted country, and securing the peace which had been so dearly bought, started the question of religious conformity ; and his Irish government, which favored the lofty spirit of prerogative, met the arguments and remonstrances of the people with fines and imprisonment : troops were soon marched to quell the movements of rebellion ; lands were declared forfeited to a prodigious extent ; and James, urged by a spirit of colonisation as well as avarice, brought the estates of his Irish subjects under the most unwarrantable legal procedures. His plans however suffered but little obstruction, owing to the previous exhaustion of the country : by his northern settlement of six escheated counties he gave origin to a powerful protestant interest in Ulster, which long served as an effectual opposition to the Roman catholic population in the other provinces ; but his son and immediate successor



reaped a sad harvest sown by despotic power. Charles I., though a more amiable man than his father, possessed the same high notions of the royal prerogative, with still more unsteadiness of principle: his reign in Ireland was a mere continuation of inquisitions into the titles of estates; while jurors, who refused to find for the crown, *against evidence*, were subjected to the punishment of fine and imprisonment. The discontent excited by James's colonisation of Ulster, which deprived so many proprietors of their ancient estates, and subjected them to the fraudulent oppression of inferior agents, was greatly augmented by the insincerity of the king, in evading his promise of the graces, or bill of rights, (for which the Romanists had agreed to pay £120,000) when he had expectations of acquiring the money without them. Lord Strafford not only prevented this grant, but boldly avowed it; and one motive for the evasion was founded on a base design of this arrogant governor to subvert the titles of all the estates in Connaught, for the purpose of accomplishing the plan of a great western colonisation, which king James had been induced to relinquish. As allusion has been made to some of the arbitrary and rapacious proceedings of lord Strafford, it would be unjust toward the memory of that nobleman if we did not confess that in many of his acts he had the interests of Ireland in view. His attempts to reform the established church, and improve the constitution of Dublin university, are deserving of praise: but the wisest of his measures was the great encouragement he gave to the linen manufacture, in which he spent large sums from his private fortune. It is melancholy however to reflect on the counteracting evils produced by his subversion of the woollen manufacture, which was then beginning to flourish in Ireland; but these must chiefly be ascribed to the fears of English manufacturers, and to that policy which thought the pre-eminence of one country was only to be maintained by the depression of others.

The discontent arising from Charles's insincerity, and the terror of Strafford's proceedings, added to the rising menaces of the puritans against the Romanists, excited in the latter strong desires to struggle for the recovery of their lost possessions; and the rumor of commotions in England led them

to hope for a successful result. Though the arbitrary Strafford had paid the penalty of his offences, the infatuation of Charles induced him to appoint two treacherous foes to the same important trust, as lords chief justices: these were Sir William Parsons and Sir John Borlase, creatures of the parliament, who secretly fomented the plans of the insurgents, with a view to the king's embarrassment, and the enriching of themselves by forfeitures: <sup>19</sup> accordingly, they contrived to set aside the intended favor of his majesty, by intercepting some graces which were again transmitted in the summer of 1641. During the adjournment of parliament, the flames of civil war broke out in this afflicted country, and the rebellion of O'Neale is still fresh in the minds of men, from the horrible massacres committed by the insurgents, and the dreadful retaliation of the English and Scotch wherever an opportunity presented itself. In this great insurrection there were four parties, each actuated by different motives: the ancient Irish, anxious to recover their lost estates; the Anglo-Irish, driven into the contest by the lords chief justices, that they might in turn become objects of plunder; the puritans, or parliamentary party; and the king's party, as it was called, which consisted chiefly of Roman catholics, directed and controlled by their own hierarchy, which was anxious for the absolute and unrestrained authority of the pope. In the fierce conflict that ensued, the cruelties of lord Inchiquin, the fate of the learned archbishop Usher, and that of the celebrated earl of Cork, form melancholy episodes; while every hope of accommodation, which at one time appeared probable, was dissipated by the unworthy jealousies and insatiable avarice of lord Ormond, to which he sacrificed the interests of all. In March, 1644, propositions drawn up with great wisdom were submitted to the king at Oxford, from the Irish confederates, who promised, when he granted these, to devote their lives and fortunes to his service; but Charles, with his usual indecision, neither accepting nor rejecting their proposals, submitted them to lord Ormond; and his intrigues delayed the negotiation, until the concessions of a king nearly deposed could be of little avail to either party.

<sup>19</sup> See O'Driscoll's History of Ireland, vol. i. chap. 13.

The treaty however which was formed, completely separated the king's party from that of the parliament; which latter carried on the contest against the confederates with varied success: at last, a great effort was made to overcome resistance by the invasion of Cromwell, with an army of furious and fanatical levellers, whom it was found necessary to remove from England. That stern republican chief, driving all before him, took several of the strongest towns, and murdered the garrisons in cold blood; when, having by these means, as well as by the infliction of every species of misery on the nation, broken down the spirit of the confederacy, he deputed Ludlow and Ireton to conduct the war, which soon languished from the dispersion of the confederates, the emigration of the natives, and the dreadful slaughter committed by the parliamentary forces. The soldiers, left, as it were, in full possession of the country, then appropriated to themselves the large estates of nobles and gentry, and thus laid the foundation of the Cromwellian interest in Ireland; while their chief acquired, by means of his Irish campaign, that importance which was necessary for his usurpation in England. The fanatics at first proscribed the national religion, hunted down the priests with blood hounds, and reduced the serfs that remained on the estates to a condition bordering on slavery: but in progress of time the excitement of religious mysticism gave way to continued prosperity, to the genial influence of climate, and to the cheerful disposition of the people; so that these fanatics themselves were absorbed in the two great divisions of the nation; the poorer class in the catholic, and the richer in the protestant communion.

Among the first to declare in favor of the restoration were those very levellers, whose zeal against monarchy had been so violent: some time previously they had united under Ormond as their head; and he had connected their interests with the crown. Charles was glad to receive them into power as an excuse for his ingratitude toward his Irish adherents: but it must be confessed that the king's position was a critical one: the Cromwellians were determined not to resign their lands without a contest; the army in Ireland was with them; and they had powerful friends in England. A feeble attempt indeed was made, more as a pretence than a

desire, of adjusting the claims of parties; but the acts of settlement and explanation were soon passed, by which a great part of the land in Ireland was confirmed to its new owners, and a protestant proprietary very generally substituted in place of the Roman catholics. But notwithstanding the hostility of the Cromwellians, and the sentence of beggary passed on the catholic landowners, the old acts of Elizabeth and James respecting conformity of worship were scarcely ever put in force: the catholic clergy held their synods unmolested; and catholics were admitted into both houses of parliament. In fact, the reign of Charles II. with respect to its Irish policy, may be distinguished by two periods: the first was employed in establishing the protestant ascendancy; seven years of the latter were occupied in encouraging the hopes of the Roman catholics, whom the acts of settlement and explanation had depressed; while the remainder was filled up by a second vice royalty of the duke of Ormond, who now showed much wisdom and moderation, and thereby preserved good order in this country, when England was disturbed by the terror of the popish plot. The services indeed of this nobleman became indispensable for the management of affairs in his native country, with which no man had so intimate an acquaintance; as no one also had so much interest with all parties: he had not only recovered his hereditary estates, forfeited during the rebellion, but had acquired immense wealth from confiscated lands of the Anglo-Irish, whom he had inveigled by promises of their restitution at the restoration. To atone in some measure for this breach of faith, and to reconcile the nation to the splendor of his fortunes, he exerted himself in promoting its agricultural and commercial interests: he made strenuous efforts to establish manufactures, and employed his authority with the British government to obtain its concurrence in his plans: but though his schemes were directed with great skill and judgment, they were encountered by the deep-rooted prejudices of the English people; especially of the political economists, with the duke of Buckingham at their head. This opposition was exerted with success against the importation of Irish lean cattle into England; commercial jealousy proceeded to place Ireland, as it were, in a state of blockade,

and to prevent as much as possible her rising prosperity: even the spoliators and intruding settlers entered into these views, and assisted to keep their adopted country poor and dependent: the Cromwellians set the example, and by a systematic depression and sacrifice of Irish interests, endeavored to court the ruling powers in England. When Buckingham, with the assistance of English and Scotch economists, had by the coercion of their trade reduced the Irish to the lowest state of desperation, the king himself, by one of the few wise acts of his reign, extended to them relief; allowing them a free trade with all foreign countries that were at peace with England: Ormond also still prosecuted his designs for the good of Ireland, inviting foreigners from the Low Countries, skilled in the manufacture of woollen and linen goods; but his excellent plans were interrupted by the infamous contrivance of the popish plot. The king himself, a catholic at heart, must have known its falsehood; but he suffered it to take its course, without interposing his prerogative of mercy in favor of its English or Irish victims: it was said indeed that he dared not; but no long time afterwards, thinking himself strong enough to take decisive measures in favor of a religion which offered the best foundation for absolute power, he determined to change the executive government of Ireland, and began by dismissing the duke of Ormond. Death however put a stop to his designs, and probably with them to terrible commotions; for the interests of the Cromwellians were all intimately connected with the reformation. The re-establishment of the Roman church must have reinstated the old catholic proprietors in their estates: hence that vehement zeal for the protestant establishment which prevailed at this period, and long afterwards.

On the accession of James II., agitation was greater in Ireland than in England, because the property which depended on the king's political and religious opinions was much larger and more recently acquired: it included not only church lands, but more than half the private property of the realm; and this was now chiefly held by the party which brought his father's head to the block. His conduct was at first calculated to calm the fears of his protestant subjects; but after his successful persecutions in Scotland,

and the extinction of Monmouth's rebellion, he gave a loose rein to his inclinations ; and the most violent methods were used for transferring to Roman catholics the ascendancy which had been enjoyed by protestants : but while he supposed that his authority was as firmly fixed as that of his brother Charles had been, and equally able to resist the assaults of exasperated patriotism ; and while he could see nothing but his enemies vanquished, and the nation prostrate at his feet, he suddenly found himself without a throne or a country. The Cromwellians, who foresaw that it would be necessary to fight the battle over again for their estates, eagerly joined the whigs before the king's abdication : indeed, during the administration of the popish lord lieutenant earl Tyrconnel, numbers of them abandoned their homes, and flocked into the towns ; 1500 families embarked for England, with lord Clarendon, the late lieutenant ; and many fled into Holland, where they had established a communication with the prince of Orange.

At the landing of William, the catholics were thrown into a violent ferment, while the spirits of the protestants revived : both parties took up arms ; but the efforts of the latter were soon reduced to the brave resistance of the Inniskilliners, and the celebrated defence of Derry, which formed a memorable episode in the glorious war of the revolution. For the benefit of the approaching change, so important to the well-being of mankind, Ireland was doomed to pay a terrible price : she afforded an arena for the combatants in that great strife, which almost swept away the last remnant of her ancient families, though it saved the empire from the despotism of the Stuarts and the thralldom of the Roman church.

When James returned from the asylum which he had sought in France, his acts of attainder were numerous and unrelenting ; including in their operation more than 2000 protestant proprietors : he also passed acts for confiscating the property of William's adherents ; but was resolute against the repeal of Poynings' law, the glory of which was reserved for the eloquence of a Grattan, and the liberality of a protestant prince and parliament. William neglected affairs in Ireland, until the French landed so many stores

and men in the country, that its conquest appeared not improbable: he then sent an expedition under the command of Schomberg, who was created a duke on the occasion: but his own presence there was soon required; and the battle of the Boyne drove the poor-spirited James, tired of the very attempt to play the game of war, to take refuge again at the court of France. The Irish gained much by his absence: their army was equal to that of William; the country was suited to a defensive warfare; and the population was on their side: they had every fair hope of victory; but the levity and bad policy of the French king frustrated their expectations, and preserved to his great rival a power, which was destined to shake his own to its very foundation.

William's army was principally composed of mercenaries; a rabble of all nations collected together by the hope of plunder, and surpassing in their crimes all that had been yet known in the conflicts of christian nations: a 'commission of forfeited lands,' &c. having been issued, its members, who eagerly began to seize whatever they could turn to their own profit, made bitter complaints against these soldiers, as being always before them in the career of spoliation. It is needless to follow this army of the faith in all its scenes of pillage and bloodshed. While William was in his camp before Limerick, he issued a proclamation, enjoining the payment of tithes to the protestant church by Roman catholics and persons of every other persuasion; but this was not carried into full effect before the conclusion of the contest. Being soon afterwards compelled to retreat, and heartily tired of his Irish campaign, he left the conduct of administration to three lords chief justices, and that of the war to the Dutch general Ginckel, though the celebrated Marlborough found several occasions of displaying those talents which were afterwards the admiration of Europe. The war soon became, like all other wars against the Irish, one of confiscation: both William and Ginckel were anxious to grant them terms, before the murderous conflicts of 1691 commenced; for they well knew that every acre of land wrested from the Irish would cost Britain a hundred times its value; but the Irish council would not forego the hope of forfeitures; nor would the church surrender any part of its claims to universal

tithe and dominion. 'I did very much hope,' said the secretary of the council in a letter to Ginckel, 'that on this progress over the Shannon, some favorable declaration might have been emitted to break the Irish army, and save the cost of a field-battle; but I see our civil officers regard more adding £50 a year to the English proprietary in this kingdom, than saving to England the expense of £50,000.'<sup>20</sup> On the seventh of July, about a week after the taking of Athlone, a proclamation was issued, on which the subsequent articles of Galway and Limerick were founded, promising, among other things, 'that all those enjoying rank or dignity in the service of the late king James, shall be continued in the same rank or employment, or advanced to higher posts:' but the efforts of the court party, afraid of losing their share in confiscations, concurred with those of the French attached to the cause of James, and effected the prolongation of the war; during the heat of which, it is curious to remark, that one of the French protestants, who were forced out of their country by the revocation of the edict of Nantz, came to Dublin, and there, by means of a company, firmly established that far-famed linen manufacture, which had been fixed in Ireland by lord Strafford, and revived by many subsequent projectors. At length, after several murderous conflicts, this dreadful war came to a close: Limerick surrendered; and the celebrated articles were drawn up, by which peace was secured to two nations which never ought to be at war with each other.

These articles were divided into two sets; one civil, which had reference to the general interests of the catholics; the other military, relating to the army, towns, fortresses, &c., then in the hands of the Irish troops: the former stipulated that the catholics should enjoy such privileges in the exercise of their religion as they enjoyed in the reign of Charles II.; and that all who submitted to obedience, should enjoy the same privileges and immunities which they did in that reign, on taking the oath of allegiance, and no other: also, that all Irish catholics in the army, or within the protection of the Irish quarters, should have quiet enjoy-

<sup>20</sup> O'Driscol's History of Ireland, vol. ii. p. 229.



ment of their estates ; and be restored, they or their heirs, to the possession of such as they were possessed of, or entitled to, in the aforesaid reign. Besides, the liberty of exercising all pursuits and professions was guaranteed to them as fully as in that reign ; and, finally, a general amnesty was granted.

While the great question of emancipation was depending on the fiat of parliament, this treaty, especially that part of it which relates to the civil and religious privileges conceded to the Roman catholics, was the subject of much discussion and dispute. By the promoters of that measure it was asserted that the concession admitted of no equivocation or reserve ; that the only question was, what was the state of the catholics under Charles II. ? and this was one of easy solution, being within the memory of persons living, and also accurately set forth in an authentic publication<sup>1</sup> printed in the reign of James II. Besides, all the proclamations before the Limerick treaty expressly referred to those existing rights and privileges ; and bishop Burnet's authority distinctly marks the general opinion, entertained at the time by all parties, as acknowledging and confirming them.<sup>2</sup> On the other hand, the advocates for protestant ascendancy affirmed, that no claim of concession could be less valid than that which rested on the alleged ground of national faith : it was contended that the separation of the articles into two sets implied an understanding by both parties, that the military articles might then be finally concluded ; but that the civil portion of them, as involving considerations of government, could not be valid, unless ratified by civil authority. A confirmation of these, it was confessed, was promised to be obtained from the king ; and they were accordingly by him confirmed : but it must have been understood that even the king's authority was not alone sufficient in constitutional questions ; that the first article therefore, which alone was general, contained an express reference to the ratification of parliament ; and parliament accordingly, in its act of confirmation, omitted the

<sup>1</sup> Answer to the Coventry Letter, by a person of honor. London, 1688.

<sup>2</sup> Burnet's History, book v.

first article altogether, while it restricted the rest in some particulars.

Happily this irritating question has been transferred from the senate to the schools; though we must allow, that it was one admirably calculated to exercise the talents, and open the prospects, of aspiring candidates for honors and emoluments both in church and state. It is not necessary to tear open wounds that are beginning to cicatrise; but it scarcely can be denied, that if the determination of William's parliament was equitable and just, no engine was ever constituted so convenient for diplomatic agency as the British constitution.

To the disgrace of Ginckel, at the ratification of the treaty, he was found conniving at the omission of a clause, which extended its benefits to the proprietors of land in Cork, Limerick, Kerry, Sligo, and Mayo; by which a vast extent of land would have been thrown into the hands of those, who were anxiously waiting for confiscations; among whom was the general himself: but fortunately a large French fleet, sent by Louis XIV., like all his other succors, too late for ensuring military success, just then arrived in the Shannon: this, together with the honorable interference of William, prevented so infamous an attempt at fraud and spoliation: the number of James's exiled adherents, and of others not included in the articles, ought to have satisfied the harpies, though the quantity of land now forfeited was inconsiderable when compared with former confiscations: it amounted however to 1,060,000 acres; but in April, 1692, the privy council, which met as a court of claims, restored 233,106 acres to catholic proprietors; and about 75,000 more were given back by William to persons whom he pardoned.

In the year following the treaty of Limerick, a statute was enacted in England, excluding Roman Catholics from the Irish parliament; and in the second year of Anne this restriction was formally acknowledged by that parliament itself: the elective franchise however was not wholly taken from the catholics of Ireland till 1727. In the reign of Anne also the penal laws were enacted; a measure, considered by the Irish protestants at that time as one of self-

defence rather than of unwarrantable oppression : for being disappointed in their desire of entering, like Scotland, into an incorporated union with England, and being abandoned to their own exertions, they proceeded to take away all political strength from the numerous, and therefore still powerful party, by which they were menaced.

But if we would know the real spirit in which Ireland was governed, from the time of king William to near the end of the last century, and how she was sacrificed to a system of policy injurious to both kingdoms, but ruinous to one ;—we must not look so much to her penal laws, which were seldom enforced ; as to her fiscal and commercial regulations, instituted at the call of English manufacturing and commercial classes. The first fatal shock which her prosperity received was from the statutes of the tenth and eleventh of William III., prohibiting all exportation of Irish woollen goods, except into England and Wales ; before which time, this flourishing manufacture gave employment to thousands, ruined or impoverished by protestant confiscations ; drew a profitable return into Ireland from all parts of Europe ; and repaired the waste of centuries by raising up an industrious and quiet population. Then began that rapacious system of landed proprietors, which reduced the miserable people, whom the jealousy of rival commerce had driven back on the soil, to a state of misery unequalled among the most barbarous nations ; while, at the time of the Scottish union, Ireland was the most grievous burden on the English nation, drawing from the general defence 30,000 men to keep it in a poor and resourceless subjection. The condition of its wretched populace is thus delineated by one of its most generous advocates : — ‘ There are thousands,’ says dean Swift, ‘ who think themselves blessed, if they can obtain a hut worse than the squire’s dog-kennel, and an acre of ground for a potato plantation, on the condition of being as very slaves as any in America. What can be more deplorable, than to see wretches starving in the midst of plenty ? ’<sup>3</sup> Ireland did not want patriots at the time to state and remonstrate against these grievances. Molyneux,

<sup>3</sup> Miserable State of Ireland, vol. vii. Scott’s edition.

the friend of Locke, published in 1698, 'The Case of Ireland;' in which he demonstrated with great force and spirit that the right of such oppressive legislation was justified by no plea of conquest, purchase, or precedent: but the temper of the English parliament was not then such as to brook remonstrances. Dean Swift also put forth his powers to counteract these evils, with considerable effect in some cases, and with no slight danger to himself in others, during the party violence of Anne's reign: and again, in the time of George I., he solicited and obtained an interview with Sir Robert Walpole for the very purpose of laying before him the grievances of Ireland, which had, as he observed, reduced that country to the most despicable state; the nation being controlled by laws to which her legislature gave no consent, her manufactures interdicted to favor those of England, her trade cramped and ruined by prohibitions, her natives excluded from all places of honor and emolument, while the delegates of government lay under no check but what might arise from their own sense of justice. Walpole however was prepossessed against any statement of Irish affairs that might come from Swift, being strongly influenced by the dean's enemy, the primate Boulter, to whose authority the concerns of Ireland were at that time chiefly committed. The principle of administration adopted by this prelate was, to form and support an English interest in the government of Ireland; a plan, which he nearly perfected, but which necessarily could be only temporary. Even in his own time the public mind had begun to exhibit an independent spirit; for five years had not elapsed from his arrival in the country, when a bill was rejected by the house of commons, specifically because it had originated in the privy council. This system gradually declined into that of the undertakers, as it was called. During the long absences of the lord-lieutenants, it had become a custom to confide the government to the principal persons of the church and law, together with the speaker of the house of commons: the continued possession of this deputed power established such great interests in the country, that the chief governors found it convenient to surrender almost the entire management of affairs to the Irish leaders, who in return

undertook to ensure the unobstructed transaction of public business.

The first who established a great personal interest in the government was Mr. Boyle, afterwards earl of Shannon; and this was materially increased by his appointment to the office of speaker: his influence however was soon checked by the rivalry of the powerful family of Ponsonby; and its peculiar distinction was destroyed by a peerage and a pension, conferred on him in 1756. The ill consequences of this system of delegated power were sensibly experienced by the British ministry; especially as the advantages of political traffic to the undertakers were such as tempted new adventurers, and created disturbance by competition. The inconveniences of such competition were strongly exhibited in 1751, when primate Stone, who was connected with the duke of Dorset, labored to establish an interest opposed to that of Mr. Boyle; in consequence of which, that gentleman employed the whole weight of his influence against a measure of government, and threw it out of parliament: government then determined to act with vigor, and dismiss all Mr. Boyle's adherents from office, but soon judged it more expedient to conciliate him; on which occasion a peerage and a pension were offered as baits, and accepted. The primate then made overtures of accommodation to his rival, and formed a triumvirate with the new earl of Shannon and Mr. Ponsonby, who was now seated in the chair of the house of commons: this occurred about four years before the reign of George III. Ireland however went on augmenting her internal misery, and adding to the burdens of the state, until the voice of her eloquent and patriotic sons in parliament prevailed against the interested views of English factors and Irish recreants; and she found a monarch, who, being born a Briton, and feeling for the distress of his subjects in whatever quarter it might exist, lent a willing ear to proposals for their relief. It now only remains to conclude this introductory chapter with a rapid sketch of the domestic politics of the British sovereigns who filled the throne from the era of the revolution: this will enable us to enter more fully into the views, and appreciate more justly the motives,

which actuated that monarch, whose reign is about to be described.

On the abdication of James II., a new system was introduced into the government of Great Britain: the grand struggle between privilege and prerogative then terminated; the divine right of kings was overthrown; and ministers of state were no longer set up by the caprice of a monarch, merely to forward his wishes, and to execute his projects: on the contrary, they were obliged to attend to the opinions of parliament, and through it to those of the majority, nay, sometimes even a minority, of the people. To secure the principles of civil and religious liberty, the bill of rights and the act of toleration were passed; by which means the whigs supported themselves during the reign of William, not only against the jacobites, who secretly adhered to the dethroned monarch and his immediate heirs, but against the tories also; who, enslaved as they were by political prejudices, could not reconcile themselves to the idea of breaking altogether the direct line of succession. To the great leaders of the whig party we owe that freedom both in civil and religious affairs which is the glory of the British constitution: they rendered that constitution one of law, not of persons; they laid it down as a rule, that allegiance and protection are relative duties; they defined the meaning of loyalty, (which had been so strangely perverted) to consist in a ready obedience paid to the prince in all his commands, according to the laws: finally, they considered that submission was due to government as an ordinance of man, for the Lord's sake; but still that government itself was an ordinance of man, acknowledged as such by scripture itself, and therefore rightly subject to constitutional change. Thus the British constitution became, under the hands of these men, a system at once of internal and external freedom: but when they were gone, the whig interest began to totter: still the predilection of Anne for the tories was overruled by the influence of the duchess of Marlborough; until, in 1710, the artful suggestions of another favorite totally alienated the mind of the queen from the whigs; and this for a time brought the tories into administration, who were willing to assist her

majesty in overthrowing the act of settlement, and restoring the old line in the person of her brother the pretender. Her death however saved the nation from this misfortune and disgrace.

As the accession of the Hanoverian dynasty approached, the two great parties in the state became competitors for the favor of the future sovereign : the overtures of the whigs, who could offer more immediate and effective service, and whose support was felt to be more congenial to the new settlement of the crown, prevailed over those of their opponents. In the reigns of William and Anne, the government had fluctuated between whigs and tories ; though William was inclined to the former, and Anne to the latter : but at the accession of George I., this fluctuation ceased : the whigs came into administration, and held undivided sway during the whole of his reign, and seventeen years of his successor's. The inclinations of both these princes naturally turned toward that party, by whose influence the settlement in favor of the Hanoverian family had been made ; while the majority of the people were kept steady in the same interest by an alarm felt on account of the pretender, whose efforts to recover his throne were encouraged and assisted by France. Besides, the administration of the great whig minister, Sir Robert Walpole, under whose pacific inclinations and financial wisdom the nation gradually recovered the losses it had sustained in long and frequent wars, materially contributed to keep his party in power ; and this power they retained, until a faction of discontented whigs and pretended patriots, encouraged by prince Frederic, father of George III., obstructed all the measures of the minister, hurried him into an impolitic war, and effected his downfall : the opposing party was then called into office, but was unable to hold it long against the parliamentary interest of the great whig families. The useful administration of Mr. Pelham, which admitted several moderate tories into its ranks, commenced in 1744, and continued nearly ten years, until his death : the duke of Newcastle, who had been secretary of state under his brother, then took the reins into his own hands, and held them absolutely, until they were wrested from him, in 1757, by William Pitt, afterwards earl of Chatham,

the greatest war-minister this kingdom has ever produced ; who, finding his country disgraced and dispirited, raised it by his talents and energy to a height of glory which it never before reached.

Sir Robert Walpole had been particularly odious to the heir apparent, on account of his opposition to all the measures taken by that prince to increase the miserable income allowed him by his father George II., whose character was sullied by extreme parsimony : hence the efforts of the party of Leicester-house, as it was called, to procure his dismissal : this however they were unable to effect, until they had driven him into a war ; so great and so general was the interest which that celebrated minister had acquired in parliament by every art of influence and corruption, and which he united to the power of the crown. When the Pelhams came into administration, the system of parliamentary influence was riveted by what was called the borough interest, and the confederacy of its partisans ; which gave so much power to the duke of Newcastle, that he was enabled to dictate any terms he pleased to his royal master, and to keep him in a state of bondage, as far as regarded ministerial arrangements. The vexations to which prince Frederic had been subjected by the influence of Walpole, and the state of political vassalage to which George II. had been reduced by the ministers who drove his favorite lord Carteret from the helm, naturally had an effect on the youthful mind of prince George ; and this was heightened by the manner of his education, as well as by the continual exhortations of his mother, a princess of the house of Saxe-Gotha, who was deeply imbued with all those arbitrary notions of government which distinguish the petty sovereigns of Germany. Her aim seems to have been directed to the acquisition of influence over her son's mind, and of power through that influence : hence it became her policy to remove from about his person every one who did not enter into her views, and second the lesson which she was perpetually repeating to him, in the memorable words—' George, be king.' The treatment therefore which lord Waldegrave received at Leicester-house induced that confidential friend of George II. to retire from his office of governor, and thus make room for



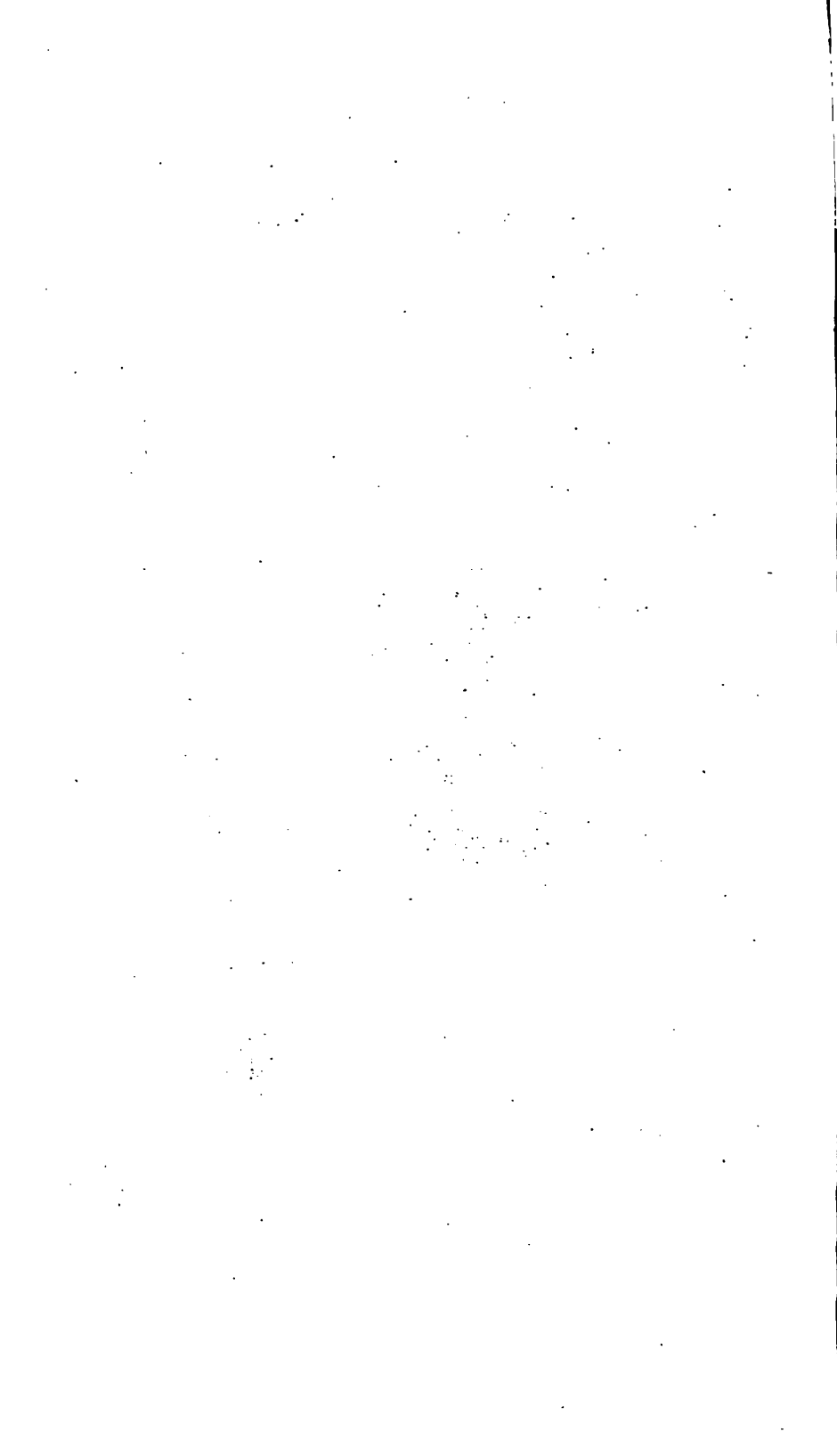
the princess dowager's favorite, lord Bute, who was every way inclined to second her views in the education of her son. It has been said, that at this time, a secret cabinet, which might control the ministers of the crown, was formed under the influence of the princess, who had imbibed the first ideas of such a combination from her late husband. The supposed existence of this unconstitutional confederacy frequently called forth indignant invectives from lord Chatham and other parliamentary orators; but its reality was stoutly denied by many who were taunted as being objects of its mysterious influence, as well as by lord Bute himself, who was thought to be one of its most active members. The probable solution of this political problem is, that during the lifetime of the princess, her maternal authority was strongly exercised over the councils and conduct of the king; their back-stairs messenger, or private agent, being Mr. Jenkinson, private secretary to lord Bute, and afterwards created earl of Liverpool. At all events, George III. was fully prepared, both by precept and by natural disposition, not only to demand the free, unfettered choice of his public servants, but to exercise personally a stronger power than was always thought consistent with ministerial responsibility. This was a leading feature in his character, and one which influenced his domestic and political conduct throughout his reign.

On his accession to the throne, his object was to put an end to the war, and with it to the domination of those who would have counteracted his designs; to release himself, for a time at least, from German politics and continental alliances, which had always excited a clamor amongst the people of England; and then, having broken that chain with which the great whig confederacy had fettered his predecessor, to throw open the administration to men of all parties, especially those whose principles led them to support the royal prerogative. This scheme was easier to project than to execute: the Pelham party, though it had lost a considerable portion of its popularity, was still very powerful, having possessed for many years, without interruption, the distribution of all preferment under the crown; while the duke of Newcastle, in his arrangements with lord Chatham, had

contrived to retain in his own hands that fertile source of influence and power: this party therefore, with the duke at its head, would naturally resist all attempts made to dispossess them of their places; and when their parliamentary interest was backed by the splendid talents of Pitt, and the great knowledge of business, foreign and domestic, which was possessed by many other members of the cabinet, it must be confessed that they were a formidable phalanx. Besides, the instrument employed by the new sovereign to effect his purpose was unfortunately chosen; the earl of Bute being unequal to the task: he was accordingly dismissed; and a succession of ministerial arrangements ensued, which appeared like a system of experiments, to show how far the method of secret advisers with ostensible ministers could extend the regal prerogative, in defiance of the remonstrances of the people: hence the government became vacillating and weak, passing through the hands of all parties, until it centred in a disgraceful coalition of the most violent antagonists: then it was, that a strong hand was found to take the reins, and to rescue his country from the strife of factions, the confusion of political errors, and the reproach of foreign nations. Whatever may have been the motives of the second William Pitt when he consented to engage in the French war, or whatever his merits in the conduct of it, most persons, who have read history with a candid and attentive mind, will confess that his was a brilliant entrance into public life; and that the measures both of his internal and external policy, during the first nine years of his administration, bore signal marks of liberality and wisdom. Whatever too may be thought of the king's desire of personal power, or of that inflexibility of temper which sometimes degenerated into obstinacy; in one point of view his accession to the throne was of inestimable advantage to the country. It cannot be denied that vice and profligacy had at that time advanced to a great height; and immorality, divested of refinement, had been encouraged by the example of his immediate predecessors: besides, in the early part of the century the great truths of revelation had been attacked with fiercer and more powerful weapons than had been hitherto used in such unhallowed warfare. Toland, Collins, and others of that

school, had brought the doctrines of christian faith to the bar of human reason, and by a perverted judgment spread the principles of scepticism and infidelity among the more educated classes : and when we find it remarked by lord Orford, that there were no religious combustibles in the temper of that age, we are led by this observation to form melancholy conclusions regarding the vitality of its principles : but the sober yet earnest piety of George III., and his exact fulfilment of the moral duties, afforded an example to his subjects, which could not fail to produce an effect on the national character : the court, instead of being, as is too often the case, repulsive to virtue, became, under the auspices of the king and his virtuous consort, a centre of attraction to those good principles, which preserved our upper ranks from the contagion of foreign profligacy, rendering them a support to royalty and a blessing to the people. George III. boasted that he was born a Briton ; and his country had every reason to boast that it had a christian prince on the throne.

---



# THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### GEORGE III.—1760.

State of the country at the accession of George III.—Its prosperity due to Mr. Pitt—Aim of the new sovereign, in a change of system which he meditated—His coadjutor, the earl of Bute, unfitted for the purpose—Political problem of the interior cabinet—Characters of the principal members of the cabinet at the death of George II.—Interview of the new king with Mr. Pitt, and with the privy council—His speech to the council—Proclamation of his majesty—Duke of York and lord Bute sworn members of the privy council—Parliament prorogued—Speculations of the public on the new reign—Address to the king—Bishop of London's letter—Meeting of parliament and king's speech—Parliamentary addresses in return—King's reply, and second address from the house of commons—Supplies voted—Civil list, and new disposition of the revenues of the crown—The king's designs known to Mr. Pitt, and opposed to his policy—Great objects of the continental war—Reasons, and preparatory measures for the removal of Mr. Pitt from administration—Correspondence of lord Bute and Doddington—Subsidy voted to the king of Prussia—His victory at Torgau and its consequences—King's attendance at theatres, house of lords, and chapel royal—His excellent sentiments on Dr. Wilson's sermon—Political adulation rewarded—Tribe of political writers.

Few monarchs ever left to their successors a throne more glorious than that of George II.: all the sources of national wealth and prosperity were daily becoming developed; the people cheerfully con-

State of  
the coun-  
try.

CHAP. I. curred in supporting a just and necessary war; sea  
 1760. and land equally bore-witness to the triumph of their  
 arms; and their conquests in both hemispheres  
 were so extensive, that the sun might have been  
 said to rise and set within the British dominions.  
 These grand results were justly ascribed to the  
 efforts of one man, who raised his country from a  
 state of torpid imbecillity, and disgraceful ac-  
 quiescence in foreign aggressions, to the highest  
 rank among nations: swaying the senate by the  
 power of his eloquence, conciliating the people by  
 his integrity and contempt of sordid considerations,  
 overcoming the prejudices of his sovereign by the  
 enlarged views which he took of his country's  
 interests, and directing the whole community by  
 that energy of mind which is intended by nature for  
 command, William Pitt appeared, as it were, the  
 soul, not of the cabinet only, but of the intire  
 nation: yet this enlightened statesman and incom-  
 parable war minister stood as an obstacle to the bold  
 designs which George III. entertained on his ac-  
 cession to the throne.

Aim of  
 George  
 III.

These designs were to bring about a peace; and  
 then, by overthrowing the predominant power of the  
 whig aristocracy, to establish and enlarge the regal  
 prerogative. His two immediate predecessors, being  
 foreigners, and exposed to the attempts of a pre-  
 tender stimulated and kept in action by the French  
 court, lay under the necessity of delegating a large  
 portion of authority to a confederacy of distinguished  
 families, which could most effectually preserve their  
 throne against foreign and domestic foes, while it  
 consented to indulge their inclination for continental  
 alliances, in favor of their native dominions: but  
 since all fears of jacobitism had long subsided, and  
 the ascendancy of an administration pledged to free  
 principles was no longer necessary for the security  
 of the new dynasty, it seemed as if the time was at  
 length arrived for emancipating the crown from  
 bondage, for abolishing the proscription of parties,  
 and for calling talent into action from any quarter in

which it existed. George III. therefore, into whose mind notions of independent power had been diligently instilled by his mother and her favorite adviser the earl of Bute, determined, at the proper moment, to attempt a change of the existing system : but it must be confessed that his coadjutor in this undertaking was not particularly well selected. Lord Bute, though a polite scholar and a great lover of literature, was deficient in political ability and moral courage, as well as in that knowledge of our fundamental laws and institutions, which is necessary to all who would introduce alterations into the complex system of the British constitution : neither was the sovereign himself sufficiently aware of the difficulties and dangers that might result from an attempt to overturn a compact and powerful confederacy, and to destroy with it that balance of contending parties, which gives freedom to thought and to discussion : hence the stormy and troublesome times which ensued during a rapid succession of perplexed and wavering administrations ; while the alarming increase of the prerogative, aided by the venal spirit of parliaments, gave to violent demagogues an unwonted authority over the public mind. Whether the remark of Junius be true, ‘ that the spirit of the favorite had some apparent influence on every administration, and that every act of ministers preserved an appearance of duration as long as they submitted to that influence,’ it is difficult to ascertain ; though the fact was generally credited at the time ; and the high spirit of lord Chatham, fretting under the imaginary yoke, vented itself in frequent bursts of tragic indignation : few, however, at present are found, who believe in that interior cabinet behind the throne, over which a mysterious power was supposed to preside, counteracting the plans of nominal ministers, and paralysing the efforts of struggling patriotism : the character of George III. was not formed to cherish favoritism, or to endure domination of any kind ; even the earl of Bute himself, when discovered to be deficient in courage and

CHAP. I.  
1760.

Character  
of lord  
Bute.

CHAP. I. decision, was dismissed from office ; nor is there any reason to believe that he ever regained his influence over the king : the whole mystery may be resolved into the principles of natural affection, and those ties of filial obedience, which George III., even when he became a sovereign, was not anxious to dissolve : a political intercourse was constantly kept up between him and his mother, their intermediate agent being Mr. Jenkinson,<sup>1</sup> the private secretary of lord Bute.

1760.

Before we enter on the annals of this eventful reign, it may be useful to sketch briefly the principal characters composing that cabinet which was now possessed of political power.

Duke of  
Newcastle.

Of the duke of Newcastle, its ostensible leader, every portrait, pretending to resemble him, must approach to caricature :<sup>2</sup> more jealous of political

<sup>1</sup> Afterwards earl of Liverpool.

<sup>2</sup> The following description of it is from the pen of lord Waldegrave :—'The duke of Newcastle is in his thirty-fifth year of ministerial longevity ; has been much abused, much flattered, and still more ridiculed. From the year 1724 to 1742 he was secretary of state, acting under Sir Robert Walpole : he continued in the same station during lord Granville's short administration ; but Granville, who had the parts and knowledge, yet had not at all times the discretion of an able minister, treated him with too much contempt ; especially as he wanted his assistance in the house of commons, where he had little interest of his own.'

'After Granville's defeat, the duke of Newcastle and Mr. Pelham became joint ministers : here he seems to have reached the highest degree of power where he can reasonably hope to maintain himself. Ambition, fear, and jealousy are his prevailing passions : in the midst of prosperity and apparent happiness, the slightest disappointment, or any imaginary evil, will in a moment make him miserable : his mind can never be composed ; his spirits are always agitated : yet this constant ferment, which would wear out and destroy any other man, is perfectly agreeable to his constitution : he is at the very perfection of health when his fever is at the greatest height.

'His character is full of inconsistencies ; the man would be thought very singular, who differed as much from the rest of the world as he differs from himself. If we consider how many years he has continued in the highest employments ; that he has acted a very considerable part among the most considerable persons of his own time ; that, when his friends have been routed, he has still maintained his ground ; that he has incurred his majesty's displeasure on various occasions, but has always carried his point, and has soon been restored both to favor and confidence ; it cannot be denied that he possesses some qualities of an able minister : yet view him in a different light, and our veneration will be somewhat abated. Talk with him concerning public or private business of a nice or delicate nature, he will be found confused, irresolute, continually rambling from the subject, contradicting himself almost every instant. Hear him speak in parliament, his manner is ungraceful, his language barbarous, his reasoning inconclusive : at the same time, he labors through all the confusion of a debate without the least distrust of his own abilities ; fights boldly in the dark ; never gives up the cause ; nor is he ever at a loss either for words or argument. His professions and promises are not to



rivals, than the vainest woman of contemporary beauties, he had long struggled against the efforts made by Pitt and Fox to participate in the administration of public affairs: his aim was to be not prime, but sole minister; and he endeavored to make those two illustrious statesmen, as he had made others, irresponsible delegates, to manage the house of commons under his dictation.<sup>3</sup> Such ridiculous attempts ended of course in his own discomfiture; he was obliged to admit a rival into a share of his beloved power, and to confer the whole management of foreign affairs on Mr. Pitt as secretary of state.

CHAP. I.

1760.

This veteran statesman, who by his vast parliamentary interest was enabled to control even majesty itself, was embarrassed in manner, verbose in conversation, eager to engage in business, but so little fitted to execute what he undertook, that the earl of Wilmington's sarcastic but jocose remark appeared perfectly applicable; 'that he lost half an hour every morning, and ran after it all the rest of the day, without being able to overtake it:' yet his princely fortune and liberal expenditure, the disposal of all the crown patronage, which Mr. Pitt allowed him to retain, his experience in matters of

be depended on, though at the time they are made he often means to perform them; but is unwilling to displease any man by a plain negative, and frequently does not recollect that he is under the same engagements to at least ten competitors. If he cannot be esteemed a steady friend, he has never shown himself a bitter enemy; and his forgiveness of injuries proceeds as much from good nature as it does from policy. Pride is not to be numbered among his faults; on the contrary, he deviates into the opposite extreme; and courts popularity with such extravagant eagerness, that he frequently descends to an undistinguishable and illiberal familiarity. Neither can he be accused of avarice or of rapaciousness; for though he will give bribes, he is above accepting them; and instead of having enriched himself at the expense of his master or of the public, he has greatly impaired a very considerable estate by electioneering, and keeping up a good parliamentary interest; which is commonly, though perhaps improperly, called the service of the crown. His extraordinary care of his health is a jest even among his flatterers: as to his jealousy, it could not be carried to a higher pitch if every political friend was a favorite mistress. He is in his sixty-fourth or sixty-fifth year, yet thirsts for power in a future reign with the greatest solicitude; and hereafter, should he live to see a prince of Wales of a year old, he will still look forward, not without expectation that in due course of time he may be his minister also.

<sup>3</sup> When he could not succeed in this insane project, he sent his creature Sir Thomas Robinson to act the part; on which occasion Mr. Pitt is reported to have said, 'he may as well send his jack-boot to govern us.'

CHAP. I. state policy, and a certain degree of skill in managing parliamentary debates, together with his uniform  
 1760. zeal for the house of Hanover, rendered him a powerful coadjutor: but, again, his fretful and capricious temper, his prodigality of professions and forgetfulness of promises, his alternate servility and arrogance, and his total want of manly spirit, detracted so much from the merit he possessed, that, to use the words of another contemporary, ‘ though he spent half a million of money, and made the fortunes of 500 men, he was not allowed to have one real friend.’<sup>4</sup>

Mr. Legge. His chancellor of the exchequer was Mr. Legge, a younger son of lord Dartmouth, sent forth, like many other younger sons of family, to better his fortunes in the public service. He had formerly served in the navy, but quitted it to become the confidential secretary of Sir Robert Walpole. Though strongly attached to Mr. Pitt, he early paid his court to lord Bute, and obtained a lucrative post under government, which he unwillingly gave up for the chancellorship of the exchequer. ‘ The meanness of his appearance,’ says Horace Walpole, ‘ and the quaintness of his dialect, made him as improper for it as unwilling.’<sup>5</sup> But though he was not eloquent, he was accustomed to digest his thoughts well, and to deliver them with precision and perspicuity; particularly when the subject had a reference to the public revenue, with the details of which he was remarkably well acquainted.

Lord Temple. A principal supporter of Mr. Pitt in the cabinet was his brother-in-law, lord Temple, who held the privy seal. Though possessed of fair abilities, he exhibited so much self-importance as to diminish the respect to which his station entitled him; and he made himself an object of extreme dislike to the old king, by his unpleasant manners and address.<sup>6</sup> In

<sup>4</sup> Dr. King's Anecdotes, p. 109.

<sup>5</sup> Memoirs of George II., vol. i. p. 336.

<sup>6</sup> Lord Waldegrave gives the following account of George II.'s remarks on Mr. Pitt and lord Temple:—‘ He then expressed his dislike to Pitt and lord Temple in very strong terms; the substance of which was, that the secretary

1759, presuming on his alliance with Mr. Pitt, and knowing the necessity which the nation had for that great man's services, he boldly demanded the order of the garter; and being refused, gave up his office, with the expectation of drawing Mr. Pitt after him; but being disappointed in this, and finding that his conduct met with general reprehension, he was easily induced to resume his post, and was soon gratified with the decoration he so much coveted.

CHAP. I.

1760.

Mr. Fox, afterwards lord Holland, was paymaster of the forces: he had ever been a stanch friend and supporter of Sir Robert Walpole, and was strongly attached to the duke of Cumberland: he once contended with Mr. Pitt himself for superiority, and by a series of political manœuvres obtained a short-lived triumph; for he was appointed secretary of state under the duke of Newcastle in November, 1755; but after holding the office one year, he was obliged to retire, having failed in a coalition, which he proposed to his haughty rival, by whom it was disdainfully rejected. He seems to have solicited his present employment with a submission bordering on servility, 'professing that he would not offend in thought, word, or deed:' but his reckless profusion rendered the acquisition of office so desirable to him on account of its perquisites, that he could never lay claim to the honorable title of a patriot. 'Both Newcastle and Pitt,' says Horace Walpole, 'acted wisely in permitting him to enjoy this place; for he was tied up from giving them any trouble; and while serving for interest under Pitt, how much did he exalt the latter!' He was nevertheless a man of penetrating genius, and of great activity in business: his speeches, though deficient in that charm of eloquence which distinguished those of Pitt, were

made him long speeches, which possibly might be fine, but were greatly beyond his comprehension; and that his letters were affected, formal, and pedantic: that as to Temple, he was so disagreeable a fellow, that there was no bearing him; that when he attempted to argue, he was pert, and sometimes insolent; that when he meant to be civil, he was exceedingly troublesome; and that in the business of his office he was totally ignorant.'

<sup>7</sup> Horace Walpole's Memoirs of George II., vol. ii. p. 225.

CHAP. I. full of information, method, and good sense ; while  
 1760. his efforts were generally directed to carry the question, not to exalt his own reputation.

Mr. G.  
 Grenville. Another member of administration, occupying an inferior department, but destined soon afterwards to fill the highest place, was Mr. George Grenville, treasurer of the navy, whose character has been thus drawn by the powerful and discriminating hand of Burke :—‘ With a masculine understanding, and a stout, resolute heart, he had an application undissipated and unwearied : he took public business, not as a duty which he was to fulfil, but as a pleasure he was to enjoy ; and he seemed to have no delight out of the house, except in such things as some way related to the business that was to be done within it. If he was ambitious, I will say this for him, his ambition was of a noble and generous strain : it was to raise himself, not by the low, pimping politics of a court ; but to win his way to power through the laborious gradations of public service ; and to secure to himself a well-earned rank in parliament, by a thorough knowledge of its constitution, and a perfect practice in all its business.’

Earl Granville.

The presidency of the council was committed to the celebrated earl Granville, who had been called to the helm of state when it was resigned by Sir Robert Walpole ; but was himself removed by the Pelham interest in 1745. He was a man of brilliant talents and commanding eloquence, equalled by few, and surpassed by none of his noble contemporaries : as a war minister and diplomatist, he was an able precursor of the earl of Chatham, who in the latter part of his career bore willing testimony to his great merits and splendid attainments. He had now taken office with views different from those which he entertained in the ardor and impetuosity of youth ; and he rather endeavored to direct and moderate the designs of his colleagues, than to propose and forward any of his own.

Lord keeper  
 Henley.

The great seal was at this time held by lord keeper

Henley,<sup>8</sup> a man well read in the common law, of an acute understanding and energetic mind, who subsequently played a conspicuous part in the political drama, when elevated to the rank of lord chancellor and earl of Northington. He had obtained his high dignity by the force of unforeseen political combinations, and had taken advantage of the embarrassment of ministers in disposing of the great seal, by demanding the reversion of a tellership in the exchequer for his son, with a pension of £1500 a year till it should fall; 'seeing,' as Horace Walpole remarks, 'that it was the mode of the times to be paid by one favor for receiving another.'

CHAP. I.  
1760.

Lord Anson, who, to the surprise of all men, had been recalled by the present ministry to the head of the admiralty, still kept that station. Being content to follow implicitly the directions of his leader Mr. Pitt, who knew the extent of his abilities, he had recovered the popularity which he lost by his ministerial incapacity, when left to his own guidance.

Lord Holderness held the seals of home secretary; respecting whom, the sarcasm of Horace Walpole, directed against him when attending George II. in Germany, is not far from the truth; 'that he was unlikely to soar from the abject condition of a dangling secretary to the dignity of a remonstrating patriot.'<sup>9</sup> He was in fact a decided time-server; thoroughly selfish, and guilty of great ingratitude toward his royal master; nor does he appear to have been respected or esteemed by his colleagues and the public.

Lord An-  
son.  
  
  
  
  
  
  
  
  
  
Lord Hol-  
derness.

The attorney general was Charles Pratt, afterwards earl Camden, one of the most independent of judges, and most honorable of statesmen. In neither capacity does it appear that he allowed himself to be swayed by mere party feelings, or to compromise his conscience for the sake even of appearing

Sir Charles  
Pratt.

<sup>8</sup> Not being a peer, he could not defend his own decrees in chancery, when brought before the house of lords. Mr. Nicholls thinks that some of his decisions were injudiciously reversed.—*Recollections*, vol. ii. p. 122.

<sup>9</sup> *Memoirs of George II.*, vol. i. p. 395.

CHAP. I. consistent. His eloquence was of the colloquial kind; but though his language was plain, his speech  
 1760. was fluent, his arrangement clear, and his manner very persuasive. He was admirably versed in the fundamental laws of England, which he regarded with great respect, and supported with equal ability.

Lord Bar- The secretary at war was lord Barrington, chiefly  
 rington. known to fame through the virulent abuse with which he was assailed by the unprincipled author of Junius's Letters; but since shown, by his own authentic correspondence,<sup>10</sup> to have been very incorrupt and impartial in his official capacity; a great supporter of unprotected merit, and a fearless opposer of that profligate abuse of patronage, by which public men of his day were so shamefully distinguished. He manifested perhaps too great an anxiety to retain office and its emoluments; by which he was suspected of being influenced, when he declared that he adhered to measures rather than to men. 'In the inventory of the discarded minister's effects,' says Junius, 'lord Barrington is always set down as a fixture.'

Duke of The duke of Devonshire, as a powerful and dis-  
 Devon- tinguished member of the whig aristocracy, skilled  
 shire. in the knowlege of persons and parties, contributed to give dignity and consistency to the cabinet, while he held the office of lord high chamberlain. He was greatly esteemed by his contemporaries; and his conduct in difficult or delicate negotiations was intitled to praise and admiration.

Lord Gow- Lord Gower, another influential nobleman, but in-  
 er. clining more to the tory party, supported ministers in return for his office of master of the horse: this the duke of Dorset had been induced to resign, for a pension of £3000 per annum added to his salary as warden of the cinque ports.

Duke of The chief governor in Ireland was the duke of  
 Bedford. Bedford, of an illustrious whig family, but con-

<sup>10</sup> Published by his brother, the late bishop of Durham.

nected by marriage with the tories: he appears to have been tolerably honest in his intentions, assiduous in business, and respectable by his parliamentary talents; but violent and impetuous in temper; besides, easily governed by artful persons, who knew his weaknesses, and turned them to their own account. Being very powerful with his party, he figured conspicuously in the changes of administration during the early part of this reign.<sup>11</sup>

CHAP. I.  
1760.

With regard to the great man who was the life and soul of this administration, and in praise of whom almost every source of eulogy has been exhausted, he entered his political career in opposition to Sir Robert Walpole, and soon distinguished himself by his intellectual faculties and extraordinary powers of elocution: so great indeed was Mr. Pitt's success at his first onset, that the minister could not listen to, or even look on him, without alarm; and Sir Robert was frequently heard to express the strongest apprehensions of 'that terrible cornet of horse,' in allusion to his military profession: he is said to have unwisely gone so far, as to stop the young officer's promotion in the army; but for this loss, Sarah, duchess of Marlborough, who entertained an inveterate hatred of Sir Robert Walpole, made him full compensation, by a legacy of £10,000,

<sup>11</sup> Horace Walpole thus describes the commencement of his vice-regal government:—'The duke of Bedford set out for that kingdom on the twentieth of September, determined, as he thought, to observe a strict neutrality between the factions, and rigid uprightness in the conduct of his administration. He began with exacting strict attendance on their posts from persons in employment, and with refusing leave of absence to officers and chaplains of regiments; and considering too how his new dominions had been loaded of late years, to smoothe the difficulties of the English government, his grace commenced his reign with strong declamations against Irish pensions. He had two difficulties to encounter before these fair views could be carried into execution; his own court was far from being so disinterested as their master, and his new subjects were as little desirous of a reign of virtue: nor had the duke himself the art of reconciling them to it by his manner, which was shy, untractable, ungracious, and ungenerous. The duchess pleased universally: she had all her life been practising the part of a queen; dignity and dissimulation were natural to her: the Irish were charmed with a woman who seemed to depart from her state from mere affability: but the person who influenced them both was the secretary Rigby: he had ingratiated himself with the duchess, and had acquired an absolute ascendancy over her husband, who, with all his impetuosity, was governed by his favorite in a style that approached to domineering.'—*Memoirs of George II.*, vol. ii. p. 253.

CHAP. I. avowedly on the ground of his public services. He continued in opposition till the organisation of the Pelham ministry; and in 1746 was appointed vice-treasurer of Ireland, and paymaster of the forces; but the king's antipathy to him, on account of his acrimony in censuring continental alliances and German subsidies, prevented his introduction into a more responsible office, until the irresistible superiority of his talents 'took the cabinet, as it were, by storm;' and on the formation of a new administration in 1756 he obtained the place of secretary of state, which Mr. Fox was obliged to resign: yet the growing discontent of the nation against the ministry, the intrigues of public men, the opposition of the duke of Cumberland, and the antipathy of the king to Mr. Pitt, who was then connected with the party of Leicester-house, soon drove him from power; but after the formation of a new ministry had been attempted, and no leader could be found, the foreign secretary was recalled by the general voice of the people; and on the twenty-ninth of June, 1757, he resumed his place as actual head of that cabinet, the component members of which have been just described. The genius of this illustrious statesman then shone forth with unclouded splendor. The king soon discovered that he was not that factious demagogue, represented to him, in whose hands the continental interests of Great Britain would be ruined, and its monarchical constitution endangered; but that his accession to office was calculated to restore cordiality between the monarch and the heir apparent, to reconcile conflicting parties, and to invigorate the national councils by that energetic wisdom and good fortune, which ever distinguished this accomplished patriot.

The cabinet was still composed, for the most part, of the duke of Newcastle's adherents and those of Mr. Fox; yet the irresistible genius of its leader preserved union and consistency among its members. His own ministerial influence too was considerably strengthened by that partiality with which



the tories now began to regard him; a partiality, CHAP. I.  
founded principally on their detestation of Fox, but  
which he dexterously augmented by distributing  
1760.  
commissions in the militia among their party; thus  
contriving to restore them to public confidence with-  
out suddenly transferring them to ministerial power:  
but by these means he was unconsciously forward-  
ing those very plans of George III. and lord Bute,  
which eventually removed him from the administra-  
tion.

The ambition of this great statesman was, to raise  
his country above all other powers, and to elevate  
himself by her exaltation. Like a man of decided  
genius, he placed implicit confidence in his own  
talents, and therefore became frequently impatient  
of contradiction: he possessed from nature every  
external requisite for commanding respect; — his  
manly figure and his eagle eye fixed the attention of  
all the moment he arose; and there was a kind of  
fascination in his look that few were able to with-  
stand: his eloquence was of the ornamental kind,  
armed with the bitterest powers of sarcasm and in-  
vective; but as he did not excel in close reasoning,  
he generally chose to commence the debate;<sup>12</sup> and  
his custom was, to rush at once on his subject,  
which he would illustrate in spontaneous and glow-  
ing language, set off by bold and original concep-  
tions: his words indeed appeared to speak convic-  
tion, as flowing from the source of truth and genius.<sup>13</sup>  
Such, according to the best authorities that exist,

<sup>12</sup> This is the observation of Horace Walpole.

<sup>13</sup> As Fox and Murray, afterwards lord Holland and the earl of Mansfield,  
were his rival orators, the reader will not be displeased by the following parallel  
from the lively pen of Horace Walpole:—

‘Pitt, illustrious as he was in the house of commons, would have shone still  
more in an assembly of inferior capacity: his talents for dazzling were exposed  
to whoever did not fear his sword and abuse, or could detect the weakness of  
his arguments: Fox was ready for both: Murray, who, at the beginning of the  
session, was awed by Pitt, finding himself supported by Fox, surmounted his  
fears, and convinced the house, and Pitt too, of his superior abilities: he grew  
most uneasy to the latter. Pitt could only attack; Murray only defend: Fox,  
the boldest and ablest champion, was still more formed to worry; but the keen-  
ness of his sabre was blunted by the difficulty with which he drew it from the  
scabbard; I mean, the hesitation and ungracefulness of his delivery took off  
from the force of his arguments. Murray, the brightest genius of the three, had

CHAP. I. were the principal traits in the characters of those statesmen, whom George III. found in possession of ministerial power on his accession to the throne.

1760.

George III.  
meets the  
privy council.

On the morning after his grandfather's decease, which occurred on the twenty-fifth of October, the king, accompanied by lord Bute, proceeded from Kew to St. James's palace, where he found the foreign secretary, who presented him with a paper, on which were written a few sentences, that might serve, as it was hinted, for the basis of an address to the privy council. The young sovereign courteously thanked Mr. Pitt; but added, that he had already considered the subject, and adjusted the materials of his intended speech. Here was certain indication of the confidence reposed by the new monarch in lord Bute: but the jealous attention paid by that nobleman, during the last four or five years, to the heir apparent, and the ascendancy which he thereby gained over his mind, was well known to Mr. Pitt and to others. The council met at Carlton-house; and the king, though at first agitated and embarrassed by the novelty of his situation, soon acquired sufficient confidence to address them with a grace and dignity, quite unexpected from one whose manners were timid and retiring, and whose education had been in many points defective.<sup>14</sup> As soon as the members had

too much and too little of the lawyer: he refined too much, and could wrangle too little for a popular assembly: Pitt's figure was commanding; Murray's engaging from a decent openness; Fox's dark and troubled: yet the latter was the only agreeable man: Pitt could not unbend; Murray in private was inelegant; Fox was cheerful, social, communicative. In conversation none of them had wit: Murray never had; Fox had in his speeches, from clearness of head and asperity of argument; Pitt's wit was genuine, not tortured into the service, like the quaintness of my lord Chesterfield.'—*Memoirs of George II.*, vol. i. p. 490.

<sup>14</sup> Even the cynical Horace Walpole says of the king at this time, 'that he had all the appearance of being amiable, with great grace to temper much dignity, and good nature, which broke out on all occasions.' Lord Bute, who, on occasion of the prince's first establishment, had the appointment of groom of the stole, was an excellent scholar, and from his instruction the king obtained, though at a later period of life than is usual, many acquirements befitting the character of a gentleman. His mother's great care had been to keep him clear of the vices of the age; and therefore she never promoted his acquaintance with the young nobility; but when George II., with whom his grandson was no favorite, declared that he was 'fit only to read the bible to his mother,' he unintentionally paid him a high compliment, considering the general turn of princes,

taken the customary oaths of fidelity to their new sovereign, he expressed his deep sense of the loss sustained by the nation, and of his own insufficiency to support, as he wished, the load which fell on him at so critical and unexpected a juncture: 'but,' said he, 'animated by the tenderest affection for my native country, and depending on the advice, experience, and abilities of your lordships, as well as on the support of every honest man, I enter with cheerfulness into this arduous situation, and shall make it the business of my life to promote in every thing the glory and happiness of these kingdoms, to preserve and strengthen the constitution in church and state; and, as I mount the throne in the midst of an expensive, but just and necessary war, I shall endeavor to prosecute it in the manner most likely to produce an honorable and lasting peace, in concert with my allies.' This declaration was ordered to be made public, at the request of all the members present: they also witnessed two instruments of an oath relating to the security of the church of Scotland, which was taken and subscribed by the king on this occasion, as the law required.

CHAP. I.

1760.

His majesty was next proclaimed with all due solemnities; and on the ensuing day, the twenty-seventh of October, having held a council, at which the duke of York and lord Bute were sworn in as members, he prorogued parliament to the thirteenth of November, and afterwards to the eighteenth.

During this interval, public attention was engaged by the equipment of a large squadron of men-of-war and transports at Portsmouth, as well as by speculations on the future reign, from which the happiest results were generally anticipated. The tories looked with pleasure on the prospect of that proscription being removed which had so long excluded them from office; more indeed on account of

Popularity  
of the king.

and especially of heirs apparent. In the matter of his education, dissensions in the family led to frequent resignations by governors and preceptors, which could not be favorable to the progress of a youth in his studies; nor do the selections of teachers appear on the whole to have been made with judgment.

CHAP. I. their aversion to the corrupt and spiritless administration of Walpole and the Pelhams, than their partiality for the house of Stuart, which most of them had discarded : to that party which was desirous of peace, the pacific disposition of the sovereign, and the confidence he reposed in lord Bute, gave fresh spirit and hopes ; while few were found, who did not hail with satisfaction the accession of a prince born and bred among the people, acquainted with their language, manners, laws, and institutions ; and whose predilections must almost of necessity be in favor of his native country. Loyal and dutiful addresses, expressing these sentiments, were accordingly presented to the young monarch by the city of London, the two universities, and the body of people called quakers, whose pacific inclinations accorded well with his majesty's opinions at this time. To these, and numerous others which followed in quick succession, the king returned brief but suitable replies, declaring his determination to respect their rights and conciliate their esteem. The venerable bishop of London,<sup>15</sup> now tottering on the brink of eternity, addressed a letter, as a parting benediction, to his sovereign, from which the following is an interesting extract :—‘ You, sir, are the person whom the people ardently desire ; which affection of theirs is happily returned by your majesty's declared concern for their prosperity : and let nothing disturb this mutual consent ; let there be but one contest, whether the king loves the people best, or the people him : and may it be a long, a very long contest : may it never be decided, but let it remain doubtful ; and may the paternal affection on the one side, and the filial obedience on the other, be had in perpetual remembrance.’

Meeting of  
parliament.

On the day when parliament assembled after its prorogation, the king opened the session with a speech, announcing not only the state of public and domestic affairs, but also the general principles by

<sup>15</sup> Dr. Sherlock.

which he intended to regulate his government. One of its clauses was well calculated to confirm the satisfaction felt by the people at a circumstance always to be desired in a regal succession, but which was now become rather a novelty with regard to the British crown:—‘Born and educated in this country,’ said his majesty, ‘I glory in the name of Briton; and the peculiar happiness of my life will ever consist in promoting the welfare of a people, whose loyalty and warm affection to me I consider as the greatest and most permanent security of my throne; and I doubt not, but their steadiness in those principles will equal the firmness of my invariable resolution to adhere to and strengthen this excellent constitution in church and state, and to maintain toleration inviolable. The civil and religious rights of my loving subjects are equally dear to me with the valuable prerogatives of my crown; and as the surest foundation of the whole, and the best means to draw down the divine favor on my reign, it is my fixed purpose to countenance and encourage the practice of true religion and virtue.’ After mentioning the successes of Great Britain and its allies, its military and naval forces, and the state of its commerce, he proceeded as follows:—

‘In this state I have found things at my accession to the throne of my ancestors; happy in viewing the prosperous part of it; happier still should I have been, had I found my kingdoms, whose true interest I have intirely at heart, in full peace: but since the ambition, injurious encroachments, and dangerous designs of my enemies rendered the war both just and necessary, and the generous overture made last winter towards a congress for a pacification has not yet produced any suitable return, I am determined, with your cheerful and powerful assistance, to prosecute this war with vigor, in order to attain to that desirable object, a safe and honorable peace. For this purpose, it is absolutely incumbent on us to be early prepared; and I rely on your zeal and hearty concurrence to support the king of Prussia and the

CHAP. I.

1760.

CHAP. I. rest of my allies, and to make ample provision for carrying on the war, as the only means of bringing our enemies to equitable terms of accommodation.' Then, addressing the house of commons on the subject of supplies, he concluded his speech in the following terms:—'The eyes of all Europe are on you; from your resolutions the protestant interest hopes for protection, as well as all our friends for the preservation of their independency; and our enemies fear the final disappointment of their ambitious and destructive views: let these hopes and fears be confirmed and augmented, by the vigor, unanimity, and despatch of our proceedings. In this expectation I am the more encouraged, by a pleasing circumstance, which I consider one of the most auspicious omens of my reign. That happy extinction of divisions, and that union and good harmony which continue to prevail amongst my subjects, afford me the most agreeable prospects: the natural disposition and wish of my heart are to cement and promote them; and I promise myself that nothing will arise on your part to interrupt or disturb a situation so essential to the true and lasting felicity of this great people.'

Loyal addresses.

In answer to this speech, addresses were unanimously voted by both houses, breathing the warmest spirit of duty and affection, while they signified a hearty concurrence in all his majesty's sentiments and wishes. 'Animated by that duty,' said the lords, 'which we owe to your majesty, and by our zeal for the honor and interest of these kingdoms, we give your majesty the strongest assurances that we will cheerfully support you in prosecuting the war; assist the king of Prussia, and the rest of your allies; and heartily concur in all such measures as shall be necessary for the defence of your majesty and your dominions, and for the national and important ends which you have so fully laid before us.' The expressions of the lower house were still more explicit and energetic:—'we assure your majesty,' said they, 'that your faithful commons, thoroughly

sensible of this important crisis, and desirous, with the divine assistance, to render your majesty's reign successful and glorious in war, happy and honorable in peace, (the natural return of a grateful people to a gracious and affectionate sovereign) will concur in such measures as shall be requisite for the vigorous and successful prosecution of the war; and that we will cheerfully and speedily grant such supplies as shall be found necessary for that purpose, and for the support of the king of Prussia, and the rest of your majesty's allies; and that we will make such an adequate provision for your majesty's civil government, as may be sufficient to maintain the honor and dignity of your crown with all proper and becoming lustre.

CHAP. I.

1760.

To each of these loyal declarations his majesty returned a gracious answer: that to the house of commons was even deemed worthy of a second address of thanks; the supplies for the ensuing year, amounting to £19,616,119, were cheerfully voted; and the civil list was fixed at £800,000, the king consenting to such a disposition of the hereditary revenues of the crown as might best promote the public advantage. Whether indeed the exchange of an hereditary revenue, for one which makes the monarch a pensioner dependent on his parliament, be advantageous to himself or to the country, may fairly be questioned: certainly, at this time, it manifested a want of foresight in George III., or rather in his advisers; being quite at variance with their designs of changing the system of administration, and extending the prerogative. Such designs, although discreetly veiled in his majesty's communications to parliament, had not escaped the notice of crafty and discerning politicians; much less could Mr. Pitt have been ignorant of them, since every favorable allusion to the king of Prussia, and every spirited expression regarding the prosecution of the war, were alterations in the king's speech made by Mr. Pitt's authoritative suggestion, and at variance with his majesty's

His majesty's answer.

CHAP. I. declared sentiments. The minister indeed felt that  
 1760. his own reputation, as well as the glory of his country, was at stake: he himself had concerted and enlarged the original plan of the war with Frederic the Great, under the sanction of George II. and of the British parliament; and he anticipated the happiest results, if this nation should continue to aid its great continental ally: but, on the other hand, if England should withdraw her pledged assistance, and leave Prussia to be dismembered by France and Austria, he foresaw that a total disruption of all ties in the great federative system of Europe must necessarily ensue.

Change of  
continental  
policy.

The defence of Hanover might have been the leading motive in George II.'s mind, when he engaged in a continental alliance, as it was made the point of attack by a set of common-place statesmen and discontented politicians, when they declaimed against this apparent partiality of the monarch for his native dominions, and against our paying so large a sum of money to the king of Prussia for fighting his own battles: but the penetrating and sagacious mind of Mr. Pitt saw the evils which must inevitably result to Great Britain, if the unnatural combination of France and Austria should be successful; and that such evils could only be prevented by great sacrifices on the part of this country. Hitherto victory had inclined to the side of justice; but it was with the utmost difficulty that the heroic Frederic, with such slight assistance, could make head against his mighty antagonists, aided, as they were, by the tremendous power of the semi-barbarous Russians: none of those providential interpositions had yet occurred, which might have rendered a relaxation of our exertions at this time less objectionable.

It can scarcely be doubted that George III. had been led to consider his grandfather's policy as eminently injurious to British interests: he himself had never been in Hanover; and therefore could not have acquired that partiality which proceeds



from early habits; nor could he have been instructed by those about him in the ulterior objects of the contest, into which they themselves were unable to penetrate: he must therefore have considered himself as promoting the good of his native country, when he disclaimed all German alliances, and sought to bring about a separate peace: it is also probable that he viewed Mr. Pitt in the unfavorable light of a renegade, seceding from the principles of Leicester-house, and joining the Pelham confederacy in the prosecution of a continental war. That great minister, however, still adhered to his adopted system of foreign policy, even at the risk of losing the king's favor, and his place in the administration.

At present, his removal would not have been convenient for lord Bute; but intrigues were already set on foot to effect it at a proper season, and to displace every other member of the cabinet, whose prejudices or opinions might interfere with the changes meditated. Only a few days after the meeting of parliament, his lordship declared to Mr. Doddington, that lord Holderness, like a servile court sycophant, 'was ready, at his desire, to quarrel with his fellow ministers, go to the king, and throw up in seeming anger; and then he, lord Bute, might come in, without appearing to displace any body.' 'I own,' says Doddington,<sup>16</sup> 'the expedient did not please me;' and his lordship, acquiescing in this opinion, refused to creep into the ministerial inclosure through such a gap: but, that the two friends still took counsel together on this important affair, appears by a letter from Mr. Doddington to lord Bute, dated December 22, 1760, in which he advises 'that nothing be done that can be justly imputed to precipitation; nothing delayed that can be imputed to fear.' 'Remember,' says he, 'my noble and generous friend, that to recover

Correspondence of lord Bute and Doddington.

<sup>16</sup> Diary, p. 370.

CHAP. I. monarchy from the inveterate usurpation of oligarchy, is a point too arduous and important to be  
 1760. achieved without much difficulty, and some degree of danger; though none but what attentive moderation and unalterable firmness will certainly surmount.' Very early in January, lord Bute told his confidant, 'that Mr. Pitt meditated a retreat;' and on the sixteenth of the same month a letter from Doddington<sup>17</sup> imparts to his noble correspondent the following information:— 'If the intelligence they bring me be true, Mr. Pitt goes down fast in the city, and faster at this end of the town: they add, you rise daily. This may not be true; but if he sinks, you will observe that his system sinks with him, and that there is nothing to replace it but recalling the troops and leaving Hanover in deposit.'<sup>18</sup> On the sixth of February, lord Bute declared, 'it was very easy to make the duke of Newcastle resign; but who was to take his place? he therefore did not think it advisable to begin there.' Doddington replied; 'that he saw no objection; but if he, lord Bute, thought there was, he might put it into hands that would resign it to him, when he thought proper to take it.'<sup>19</sup> No farther evidence is wanted to show that the plan of overturning the Pitt administration, and changing its system of policy, was in agitation at this time: whether that plan was good or bad, is quite a different question: at present however all ill humors were concealed under a fair surface: the old system seemed to please every party; and among the large supplies voted by the house of commons, none were more warmly recommended, none more freely granted, than the continental subsidies; especially

<sup>17</sup> Diary, p. 377.

<sup>18</sup> A passage in the Diary, of the same date with this letter, says,— 'lord Bute came and said, that he was now sure that Pitt had no thoughts of abandoning the continent, and that he was madder than ever.' Another passage (p. 383.) says, very justly, 'lord Bute's notions about the war are very singular, and I believe not thoroughly digested.'

<sup>19</sup> Diary, p. 387.

that of £670,000 to the king of Prussia.<sup>20</sup> His great victory at Torgau, which subjected all Saxony, except Dresden, to his power, had been opportunely made known in England just before the meeting of parliament: this advantage was a full compensation to him for the great losses he had sustained during the campaign: Laudohn abruptly raised the siege of Cosel, and evacuated Silesia; the Russians abandoned that of Colburg for a time, and retreated into Poland; while the Swedes were driven back with great loss out of Western Pomerania.

CHAP. I.

1760.  
Victory at  
Torgau.

On the second of December some alarm was excited on account of the king, who had fallen from his horse, which reared as he was mounting him in Hyde-park; but his majesty, having been bled, recovered sufficiently to attend Covent-garden theatre in the evening, to see the tragedy of Hamlet: on the ninth and twenty-third he went to the house of lords, and gave his first royal assent to several acts which were prepared for that purpose; and on the evening of the latter day he made his appearance at Drury-lane to see King John.

Domestic  
events.

Christmas day was kept as a high festival at court; and after a sermon by the archbishop of York, his majesty received the sacrament from the bishop of Durham, presenting a byzant, or wedge of gold, for the benefit of the poor. On the subject of preaching before royalty, the sentiments expressed by the king, very soon after his accession, are too admirable to be passed over in silence: they were drawn from him by the fulsome strain of adulation in which Dr. Thomas Wilson, with singular bad taste and feeling, thought proper to address a monarch, who in the presence of his Creator seems never to have considered himself above the lowest of his subjects. Instead of thanks, the reverend orator received a letter containing a serious reprimand.

<sup>20</sup> The annual treaty, or convention, between the courts of London and Berlin, was renewed on the twelfth of December.

CHAP. I. mand, together with an assurance, that the king  
1760. 'went to church to hear God praised, and not himself.' The sequel of this affair exhibits a melancholy instance of the weakness of human nature: Dr. Wilson, instead of profiting by the seasonable reproof, and endeavoring to regain the king's good opinion, with the approbation of his own conscience; turned flaming patriot; took every opportunity of annoying his sovereign; and at last became a supporter of the demagogue Wilkes.

It is to be regretted that George III. did not extend his hatred of adulation to political sycophants: the grant of a pension to such a character as Dr. Shebbeare, who had stood in the pillory for scurrilous libels against his grandfather's government, was an act which added no lustre to his reign. The proceedings of parliament above related, though generally popular, did not escape severe censure from the tribe of political writers, who now began to emerge from their lurking places. Presently the whole pack, snuffing the gale, found out where the game was, which they were expected to pursue; and opening their mouths, set off in full cry after the noblest quarry within the confines of the realm.

## CHAPTER II.

### GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1761.

Grant of £300,000 to the Americans—Act relating to insolvent debtors—Lord chancellor appointed—Judges made independent of the crown—Unpopular duty laid on beer—Riots at Hexham—Speaker of the house of commons retires—Parliament prorogued and dissolved—Preparatory measures for an alteration of system—Earl of Bute appointed secretary of state, and other changes—Mr. Pitt continues in office—Military operations: capture of Belleisle and Dominica—Chastisement inflicted on the Cherokees—Siege and capture of Pondicherry—The great mogul's invasion of Bahar, in conjunction with Mr. Law—Defeated and taken prisoners—Treatment of Mr. Law—M. Lally's treatment in France—Operations of the war in Germany—Frederic's distress—His defence of Silesia—Capture of Schweidnitz by Laudohn and surrender of Colburg to the Russians, derange his plans—Operations in Westphalia and Hesse—Battle of Kirchdenkern—Subsequent operations, without any important result on either side—Inclination of France and the other allies to peace—Maria Theresa alone repugnant to it, but consents to a general congress at Augsburg—Proposals of a separate treaty between France and England—Negotiations respecting it—Interference of Spain—Policy of France and her allies obstructed by the talent and spirit of Mr. Pitt—Discussion still kept up—Mr. Pitt receives intimation of the family compact—Instructions given to the English ambassador at Madrid—Negotiations on the subject with the court of Spain—Spanish explanations unsatisfactory to Mr. Pitt—He proposes to seize their galleons and declare war—His advice being rejected by the English cabinet, he and lord Temple resign—His interview with the king—Receives the reward of his services—Changes in the ministry—Opposite opinions on Mr. Pitt's conduct—His popularity increases—Address of the city of London to the ex-minister—The king determines to marry—Method taken to procure an eligible consort—Princess Sophia Charlotte of Mecklenburg Strelitz chosen—The king's declaration of it to the council—Preparations, &c. to bring the queen over to England—Lands at Harwich—Received at

## CHAP. II.

1761.

St. James's—Marriage ceremony—Appearance of their majesties in public—Coronation—Civic feast at Guildhall, &c.—Meeting of the new parliament—Speaker chosen—The king's speech—Addresses—Settlement on the queen—Repeal of the compelling clause in the insolvent act—Supplies, &c. for 1762—Debates on them and the German war—New ministry determine to carry on the war with spirit—Lord Halifax meets the Irish parliament—His speech, and addresses in return—Negotiations with Spain respecting her secret treaty with France—Explanation demanded, and refused—Mutual departure of the ambassadors—Memorial of the conde de Fuentes—Answered by lord Egremont—His majesty purchases Buckingham-house, and presents it to the queen—Death of eminent men.

THE first public act which distinguished the new year was a parliamentary grant of £300,000 on the twentieth of January, which enabled his majesty to make some compensation to the North American colonies for the expenses incurred by them during the war: nor was this more than was due to their merits in the vigor and despatch with which they had raised troops, and co-operated with the British armies. An act was also passed to relieve insolvent debtors, with whom the prisons in various parts of the kingdom were crowded: by it every such debtor might be compelled to deliver on oath a just schedule of his estate; after which delivery, and the surrender of all his effects, he could demand his release and discharge: but this humane provision of the legislature was so much abused by the arts of fraud and collusion, that it was soon afterwards repealed.

Judges  
made independent  
of  
the crown.

On the sixteenth of January lord keeper Henley delivered up the great seal to his majesty, and received it back, with the title of lord chancellor: he had been kept in office against the will of the late monarch, but enjoyed the full confidence and favor of his present master. Toward the close of the session, March 3, his majesty increased his popularity by the recommendation of a liberal and patriotic measure from the throne. In the reign of king William III. it had been enacted,<sup>1</sup> that the commissions

<sup>1</sup> Statutes at Large, 13 William III. c. 2.

of the judges should be made out, not as formerly, during pleasure, but during the faithful discharge of their duties; so that it might be lawful to remove them on the address of both houses to the king: still at the demise of the crown their offices were vacated; and George II. actually refused to renew the commission of a judge who had offended him. His majesty, therefore, with a laudable zeal for the impartial administration of justice, recommended that farther provision should be made for continuing them in office, at the commencement of a new reign, without the necessity of a new commission. Parliament not only passed an act to this purpose, but expressed a lively sense of the wisdom and liberality of the measure.

CHAP. II.

1761:

Very soon after his majesty's accession, the earl of Bute, though he held no responsible office, attracted to himself a considerable share of public attention; and as it became manifest that he was destined to occupy an important place in the administration, his conduct was proportionally subjected to jealous scrutiny. To raise the large supplies necessary for the current year, the principal expedient had been, to fund a loan of £12,000,000, and provide for the interest by an additional duty of three shillings on every barrel of strong beer. This unpopular tax, being imputed to lord Bute, excited a violent clamor among the lower classes, and was the occasion of some insults offered to that nobleman: serious riots also had broken out a short time previously at Hexham in Northumberland, on account of the ballot for the militia, which was considered an intolerable grievance by the lower orders. Being assembled in great numbers, and a part of them provided with arms, shots were fired on a battalion of the Yorkshire militia, drawn up in the market-place for the protection of the magistrates, by which an ensign and two privates were killed. This outrage so exasperated the military, that they retaliated by several volleys on the multitude, killing more than forty, and wounding a much larger number. Some of the

CHAP. II. rioters were tried by a special commission, and one was executed for the sake of example.

1761,

As the natural dissolution of parliament was now at hand, Mr. Arthur Onslow, who had been speaker thirty-five successive years, declared his intention of retiring on account of age and infirmities; when a vote of thanks to him for his impartial conduct, courteous demeanor, and unshaken fidelity was unanimously carried, together with an address to the king, beseeching him to confer some signal testimony of favor on the right honorable gentleman. His majesty expressed in very gracious terms the high sense he entertained of the speaker's character and services; and a pension of £3000 per annum was conferred on him, with a reversion to his son, who was afterwards ennobled by the title of baron Onslow. On the nineteenth of March parliament was prorogued, after a speech from the throne, expressing his majesty's complete approbation of its acts; but its dissolution did not occur till the month following.

Dissolution  
of parlia-  
ment.

Changes in  
the cabinet.

Some time before this event, a certain party in the state began to think that circumstances would authorise them to commence that gradual change of ministers and of policy, which they had long contemplated. Lord Rockingham informed Mr. Nicholls, that about the end of February he received a message from the duke of Newcastle, requesting an interview; and that on his entering the room, his grace ran up to him, and said, 'We have received a message from the king of great importance: he wishes that the earl of Holderness should resign the place of secretary for the northern department, receiving in lieu of it the wardenship of the cinque ports; and that the earl of Bute should be appointed secretary in the place of the earl of Holderness.' When this subject was discussed, the earl of Hardwicke strongly recommended a compliance with the king's desire, without any opposition; adding, 'that this was the first instance in which he had interfered in the nomination of ministers; and that resistance to his wishes might excite an ill-will, which they would afterwards



regret.' The marquis said, that he himself rather CHAP. II. objected; and urged them to consider, whether, 'if 1761. they admitted, in February 1761, that the earl of Bute was fit to be a secretary of state, they could say, in the following year, that he was not fit to be prime minister?' But the earl of Hardwicke's opinion prevailed, and lord Bute was appointed secretary of state:<sup>2</sup> for this purpose the earl of Holderness resigned office, and received his bribe in a large pension, added to a reversionary grant of the warden-ship of the cinque ports.<sup>3</sup> Lord Halifax was advanced from the board of trade to be lord-lieutenant of Ireland, and was replaced by lord Barrington: the duke of Richmond, displeased by a military promotion injurious to his brother, resigned his post as lord of the bed-chamber; but Mr. Legge was unceremoniously dismissed:<sup>4</sup> he was succeeded by Sir Francis Dashwood, a zealous tory. Some few other changes of minor importance took place, such as the introduction of several tories into offices connected with the court: there was also a considerable addition made to the peerage. These alterations could not be very agreeable to Mr. Pitt; but as he was still suffered to direct the affairs of the war, he was

<sup>2</sup> Nicholls's *Recollections and Reflections*, vol. i. p. 7.

<sup>3</sup> Even Mr. Adolphus acknowledges, that 'the retreat of lord Holderness appears to have been a preconcerted manoeuvre, arranged with more art and duplicity than becomes an exalted character, to make room for lord Bute.' *Hist. of George III.*, vol. i. p. 23. The reader will not be displeased to see an account of these ministerial arrangements given by a principal performer. 'Our administration is at last settled; I think well settled in the main; and my opinion is that it will last. Our friend Holderness is finely in harbor: he has £4000 a year for life, with the reversion of the cinque ports, after the duke of Dorset, which he likes better than having the name of pensioner. I never could myself understand the difference between a pension and a sinecure place. The same strange fortune which made me secretary at war five years and a half ago, has made me chancellor of the exchequer: it may perhaps at last make me pope: I think I am equally fit to be at the head of the church, as of the exchequer. My reason tells me, it would have been more proper to have given me an employment of less consequence when I was removed from the war office; but no man knows what is good for him. My invariable rule therefore is, to ask nothing, to refuse nothing, to let others place me, and to do my best wherever I am placed.' Letter from lord Barrington to A. Mitchell, Esq., in *Ellis's Original Letters*, second series, vol. iv. p. 432.

<sup>4</sup> Mr. Belsham assigns a reason for this dismissal not very honorable to the character of the king; but supports the charge by no evidence. There is however an account of the life of Mr. Legge in the *Gentleman's Magazine* for December, 1764, which throws some light on the subject.

CHAP. II. not so discontented as to relinquish office : disdaining  
 1761. however to court a party, he stood almost alone, with  
 little support, except what resulted from his successful  
 career and his unrivalled eloquence.

Capture of  
 Belleisle.

The military operations of this year are now to be described. A secret expedition, which had been for some time in a state of preparation, having sailed from Spithead on the twenty-ninth of March, under commodore Keppel and general Hodgson, arrived off Belleisle, on the coast of Britany, in ten days. An attempt to land, on the eighth of April, was defeated with a loss of nearly 500 men : it was however renewed on the twenty-fifth, and succeeded, chiefly through the exertions of brigadier-general Lambert, who gained possession of some heights overhanging the sea, and gallantly repulsed the enemy sent to dislodge him : this enabled the British troops to disembark, and commence the siege of Le Palais, the chief town of the island. The vigorous and gallant defence made by the French commander, St. Croix, protracted the fall of the citadel, a strong fortress constructed by Vauban, till the seventh of June ; when it surrendered by capitulation, and a sterile rock was found to be the fruit of our conquest, at the expense of 2000 lives. It was however a place of importance to France, commanding a large extent of coast, and affording a very convenient receptacle to privateers : accordingly, it was insisted on as a valuable article of exchange in the subsequent negotiations for peace.

Dominica  
 taken.

The more important island of Dominica in the West Indies was reduced with much less difficulty by a small armament under lord Rollo and Sir James Douglas. Soon afterwards a severe but well-merited chastisement was inflicted by the British troops on the ferocious tribe of Cherokee Indians, who had been instigated by the French to attack our American colonies. Sir James Douglas and colonel Grant, at the head of 2600 men, ravaged their country, and compelled them to sue for peace.

In the East Indies, Pondicherry was the only place of consequence which remained in possession of the French at the end of last campaign; and that was invested by a land and naval force under colonel Coote and admiral Stevens: the besieged made a gallant defence, expecting the arrival of naval succors; but being attacked by famine, they were reduced to the necessity of feeding on the flesh of camels, elephants, and even of dogs. On the first of January, a violent storm dispersed the British fleet, and inspired them with hopes of relief: the admiral, however, exerted such diligence, that in four days he appeared again before the place with eleven ships of the line, having lost two in the tempest: the case of the besieged now became desperate; yet no offer of surrender was made, until a breach in the wall being effected, and only one day's provision of any sort remaining, a signal was made from the town for a suspension of arms; but as M. Lally the governor refused to acknowledge any kind of capitulation, and sent forth a paper full of the most violent invectives against the English, as breakers of all their treaties respecting India, the city was taken by storm, and given up to plunder, on the fifteenth of January. The dependency of Thiagar, with the strong fortress of Gingee, soon afterwards surrendered; and Mahie, on the Malabar coast, fortified with above 200 pieces of cannon, had been reduced by a body of troops, which landed there in January, under major Hector Munro. The council of Madras lost no time in levelling to the ground the town and fortifications of Pondicherry; and the French power in India was gone. An attempt was made to revive it in the province of Bengal, but without a chance of success.<sup>5</sup>

CHAP. II.  
1761.  
Siege and  
capture of  
Pondicherry.

<sup>5</sup> The count d'Estaing was the only French adventurer in the east who effected any conquests to counterbalance the great advantages gained by the English: he had for some time been roving about the Indian seas with two frigates, and had lately attacked and reduced Bencoolen, Tappanopoli, and Fort Marlborough, in the island of Sumatra; but these exploits were a disgrace rather than an honor to him, he being at this time a prisoner on parole.

CHAP. II. About the middle of the preceding year, an adventurer named Law, nephew of the celebrated projector, being at the head of 200 French fugitives, persuaded the mogul, Shah Zaddah, who had lately seated himself on his father's tottering throne, to invade this province: he had already rendered such important services to the new emperor against some native princes who opposed his elevation, that nothing was thought able to resist his arms. He now made incursions into the province of Bahar, which suffered in consequence so severely, that major Carnac was sent by the council in January to Patna, to take the command of the British troops there, amounting to 508, and assist the rajah Ramnarain in curbing the power of the invader. Accordingly, this officer advanced with his Asiatic allies, in number about 20,000, against the mogul, who was stationed at Gyah Maunpore, with a large but feeble force of 80,000 natives. In three days major Carnac reached his place of encampment, forced him to an engagement, and completely routed his army, taking captive both the emperor and his rash adviser, Law. The latter was treated by his captors in a manner which greatly exalted them in the estimation of the orientals.<sup>6</sup> Very different was

1761.  
Expedition  
of great  
mogul and  
Mr. Law.

<sup>6</sup> It is interesting and delightful, says Mr. Mill on this subject, to hear the account of the native historian. 'When the emperor left the field of battle, the handful of troops that followed Mr. Law, discouraged by this flight, and tired of the wandering life which they had hitherto led in his service, turned about likewise, and followed the emperor. Mr. Law, finding himself abandoned and alone, resolved not to turn his back; he bestrode one of his guns, and remained firm in that posture, waiting for the moment of his death. This being reported to major Carnac, he detached himself from his men, with captain Knox and some other officers, and he advanced to the man on the gun, without taking with him either a guard or any Talingas (sepoys) at all. Being arrived near, this troop alighted from their horses, and pulling their caps from their heads, they swept the air with them, as if to make him a salam; and this salute being returned by Mr. Law in the same manner, some parley in their language ensued. The major, after paying high encomiums to Mr. Law for his perseverance, conduct, and bravery, added these words:—'you have done every thing which could be expected from a brave man; and your name shall be undoubtedly transmitted to posterity by the pen of history: now loosen your sword from your loins, come amongst us, and abandon all thoughts of contending with the English.' The other answered, 'that if they would accept of his surrendering himself just as he was, he had no objection; but as to surrendering himself with the disgrace of being without his sword, it was a shame he would never submit to, and that they might take his life if they were not

the fate which attended the unfortunate M. Lally in CHAP. II.  
his own country, though, with all his faults and  
errors, he had been the most active partisan that  
ever attached himself to the French cause in India.  
The account of his sufferings is so graphically de-  
scribed by Mr. Mill, and is withal so useful towards  
a right understanding of the French government,  
which, with its head, was pre-eminent in baseness,  
that it ought not to be omitted, even if the recital  
were less interesting.

‘By the feeble measures of a weak and defective Fate of M.  
Lally.  
government, a series of disasters, during some pre-  
ceding years, had fallen on France; and a strong  
sentiment of disapprobation prevailed in the nation  
against the hands by which the machine of govern-  
ment was conducted: when the total loss of the  
boasted acquisitions of the nation in India was re-  
ported, the public discontent was fanned into a

satisfied with that condition.\* The English commanders, admiring his firmness, consented to his surrendering himself in the manner he wished, after which the major with his officers shook hands with him, in their European manner, and every sentiment of enmity was instantly dismissed on both sides: at the same time the major sent for his own palanquin, made him sit in it; and he was sent to camp: Mr. Law, unwilling to see or to be seen, shut up the curtains of the palanquin, for fear of being recognised by any of his friends at camp; but yet some of his acquaintances, hearing of his being arrived, went to him. The major, who had excused him from appearing in public, informed them that they could not see him for some days, as he was too much vexed to receive any company. Ahmed Khan Koteishee, who was an impertinent talker, having come to look at him, thought to pay his court to the English by joking on the man's defeat,—a behavior that has nothing strange, if we consider the times in which we live, and the company he was accustomed to frequent; and it was in that notion of his, doubtless, that with much pertness of voice and air, he asked him this question:—‘and biby (lady) Law, where is she?’ The major and the officers present, shocked at the impropriety of the question, reprimanded him with a severe look and very severe expressions: ‘This man,’ they said, ‘has fought bravely, and deserves the attention of all brave men: the impertinences which you have been offering him may be customary among your friends and your nation, but cannot be suffered in ours, which has for it a standing rule, never to offer an injury to a vanquished foe.’ Ahmed Khan, checked by this reprimand, held his tongue, and did not answer a word: he tarried about one hour more in his visit, and then went away much abashed; and although he was a commander of importance, and one to whom much honor had been always paid, no one did speak to him any more, or made a show of standing up at his departure. This reprimand did much honor to the English; and, it must be acknowledged, to the honor of those strangers, that as their conduct in war and in battle is worthy of admiration, so, on the other hand, nothing is more modest and more becoming than their behavior to an enemy, whether in the heat of action, or in the pride of success and victory: these people seem to act intirely according to the rules observed by our ancient commanders, and our men of genius.’

CHAP. II. flame; and the ministry were far from easy with  
1761. regard to the shock which it might communicate to  
the structure of their power: any thing was to be  
done which might have the effect to avert the danger. Fortunately for them, a multitude of persons arrived from India, boiling with resentment against Lally, and pouring out the most bitter accusations: fortunately for them, too, the public, swayed as usual by first appearances, and attaching the blame to the man who had the more immediate guidance of the affairs on which ruin had come, appeared abundantly disposed to overlook the ministry in their condemnation of Lally. The popular indignation was carefully cultivated; and by one of those acts of imposture and villany, of which the history of ministers in all the countries of Europe affords no lack of instances, it was resolved to raise a screen between the ministry and popular hatred by the cruel and disgraceful destruction of Lally. On his arrival in France, he was thrown into the Bastile; from the Bastile, as a place too honorable for him, he was removed to a common prison. An accusation, consisting of vague or frivolous imputations, was preferred against him: nothing whatsoever was proved, except that his conduct did not come up to the very perfection of prudence and wisdom, and that it did display the greatest ardor in the service, the greatest disinterestedness, fidelity, and perseverance, with no common share of military talent and of mental resources. The grand tribunal of the nation, the parliament of Paris, found no difficulty in seconding the wishes of the ministry, and the artificial cry of the day, by condemning him to an ignominious death. Lally, confident in his innocence, had never once anticipated the possibility of any other sentence than that of an honorable acquittal: when it was read to him in his dungeon, he was thrown into an agony of surprise and indignation; and taking up a pair of compasses, with which he had been sketching a chart of the Coromandel coast, he endeavored to strike them to his heart; but his arm was held by a

person that was near him. With indecent precipitation he was executed that very day: he was dragged through the streets of Paris in a dirty dung-cart; and, lest he should address the people, a gag was stuffed into his mouth, so large as to project beyond his lips. Voltaire, who had already signalled his pen by some memorable interpositions in favor of justice and the oppressed, against French judges and their law, exerted himself to expose in a clear light the real circumstances of this horrid transaction, which Mr. Orme scruples not to call 'a murder committed with the sword of justice.' It was the son of this very man, who under the name of Lally Tollendal, was a member of the constituent assembly, and by his eloquence and ardor in the cause of liberty contributed to crumble into dust a monarchy, under which acts of this atrocious description were so liable to happen. Thus had the French East India company, within a few years, destroyed three, the only eminent men who had ever been placed at the head of their affairs in India, Labourdonnais, Dupleix, and Lally. It did not long survive this last display of its imbecillity and injustice.<sup>7</sup>

CHAP. II.  
1761.

Few warlike operations had taken place, during the winter, between the king of Prussia and his allied antagonists; but in the present year he had to sustain a very unequal contest against the overwhelming armies of two mighty empires, while he himself was almost exhausted even by his victories. Notwithstanding therefore the glorious achievements of the preceding campaign, he was obliged to think of safety rather than of conquest, and to risk nothing in desperate efforts, where a single failure might effect his ruin. His brother prince Henry remained within his intrenchments at Leipsic, to counteract the designs of the vigilant Daun on Saxony; but Silesia being threatened by the combined forces of Austria and Russia, Frederic undertook its defence

Capture of  
Schweid-  
nitz by the  
Austrians.

<sup>7</sup> Mill's History of India, vol. iii. p. 234.

CHAP. II. in person ; and his military skill was principally  
1761. displayed in the strongly fortified encampment at  
Buntzelwitz, by which he defied the attacks and interrupted the progress of his enemies. In September he destroyed the Russian magazines ; and, had not his provisions failed, he would have prevented any serious loss on this side ; for a blow which general Platten had struck successfully against the Russian magazines before Colburg, had the effect of drawing off their forces from Silesia : but on the twenty-ninth of the same month, being obliged to leave his impregnable post, and withdraw towards Neiss, Laudohn, who was retiring towards the mountains, full of chagrin and disappointment at the unfavorable prospects of the campaign, suddenly turned, and attacked the important place of Schweidnitz, from which the king drew most of his supplies. This fortress, which, from the extent of its works, required a garrison of 7000 men, had only 3000 within its walls, the rest having been imprudently withdrawn by Frederic when the Russians retreated ; but it contained 500 Austrian prisoners, among whom was major Rocca, an Italian partisan, who, having been imprudently indulged with too much liberty, remarked the weak points of the fortifications and the negligence of the garrison ; intelligence of which he found means of conveying to Laudohn. In consequence of this, the Austrian general led his troops by night to the attack, advanced unperceived to the palisades, and after a short contest, and the explosion of a powder magazine, which killed about 300 on each side, gained the outworks. In one place only did the Austrians meet with a determined resistance, when the regiment of Laudohn was twice repulsed ; but count Wallis, who led them to the assault, exclaimed, ‘ Comrades, we must scale the fortress, or here I will perish : such was my promise to our commander : our regiment bears his name ; and we must conquer or die.’ Animated by this address, the soldiers again leaped into the ditch and scaled the



ramparts. The other attacks had quicker success : CHAP. II.  
in the confusion of the night, the Austrian prisoners  
liberated themselves from confinement, and took  
possession of the bridges ; so that by day-break all  
the works were in possession of the assailants, with  
3300 Prussians as prisoners. In this attack a Rus-  
sian detachment of the besieging army gave a dread-  
ful proof of the determined bravery, or rather fe-  
rocity, of that nation. In their advance to the  
assault they unexpectedly found themselves at the  
brink of a deep fosse, filled with water ; but this  
obstacle could not long arrest their progress ; the  
foremost ranks were precipitated into the ditch and  
suffocated ; when their comrades formed a bridge of  
their dead bodies, over which they rushed into the  
city, carrying death and desolation with them, and  
uttering the cry, ' we give no quarter.'

1761.

The loss of Schweidnitz, added to the previous  
surrender of Colburg, the key of his northern pro-  
vinces, deranged all the plans of Frederic, and al-  
most reduced him to despair. Without a single  
battle, the affairs of Austria became more pros-  
perous than they had been during any preceding  
period of the war. One of her armies still kept  
its position in Saxony ; and by the capture of  
Schweidnitz another could now take up its winter  
quarters in Silesia. The Russians also, with the  
possession of Colburg, had acquired a port on the  
Baltic, where they might securely form extensive  
magazines, while Prussian Pomerania and Bran-  
denburg lay open to their incursions.

Frederic's  
distress.

On the side of Westphalia alone affairs wore a  
less favorable aspect for the enemies of Frederic ;  
but as the French held possession of a great part of  
that country, with the whole of Hesse, prince Fer-  
dinand was obliged to act with subtilty, as well as  
with spirit. Contrasting the strong constitutions  
and well exercised bodies of the troops under his  
command, with the less hardy character of his op-  
ponents, he determined on a winter campaign : early  
therefore in February he attacked them with such im-

Operations  
in West-  
phalia and  
Hesse.

CHAP. II. petuosity, that they dispersed in confusion, and were  
 1761. only saved by the defiles and other difficulties of the country, which favored their retreat. The marquis of Granby gallantly seconded his efforts, by storming many of their forts and magazines; and though the prince failed in the grand object of his plans, the reduction of Cassel, he made a masterly retreat into Hanover, leaving his enemies greatly distressed by the loss of their supplies, and unable to take advantage of their success. Both armies then entered into winter quarters; nor did they recommence operations before the end of June; when marshal Broglio, being strongly reinforced, and having effected a junction with the prince of Soubise, marched against the army of the allies, advantageously posted on the Dymel. Having surprised a body of troops placed in front, under general Sporcken, and taken 800 prisoners with nineteen pieces of cannon, he passed the river and captured several places: but the allies so far recovered their spirits as to retaliate boldly, and make incursions even to the very gates of Cassel. These irritating skirmishes determined the French marshal to bring on a general action.

Battle of  
Kirchden-  
kern.

The moment prince Ferdinand was apprised of this intention, he called in his detachments, and made an admirable disposition of his army; covering its centre and right wing in front by the small but deep river Saltzbach, and posting the left wing on an isthmus between the Lippe and the Æst, its extremity being supported by the village of Kirchdenkern. This important post was entrusted to the marquis of Granby, who had under him the flower of the army, with greatest part of the artillery: here he was suddenly exposed to an impetuous attack by the French under Soubise, which he gallantly resisted for several hours, until general Wutgenau came to his assistance, with reinforcements, according to the original plan of operations: then the French, after an obstinate struggle, which lasted till night, withdrew for shelter into the woods in their rear. Next day all the arrangements of

the allied army were completed, and the French CHAP. II.  
also prepared for a general and better-sustained at-  
tack : marshal Broglio himself led on their right wing  
against the marquis of Granby's position ; and the 1761.  
engagement began at three o'clock in the morning.  
A severe fire was kept up on both sides for the  
space of five hours, without producing any effect ;  
when, about nine o'clock, prince Ferdinand, learn-  
ing that the enemy was about to erect batteries on  
an eminence in front of Granby's position, ordered  
a body of troops to defeat their purpose : this ser-  
vice was so promptly and vigorously effected, that  
the French were thrown into irretrievable confusion,  
and obliged to quit the field. Their retreat was  
favored by the thick enclosures of the country, and  
was also covered by the centre and left wing of the  
army, which had not been able to pass the Saltz-  
bach : their loss however amounted to near 5000  
men, while the allies had no more than 300 killed,  
1000 wounded, and about 200 missing. A still  
greater source of evil to the enemy lay in the  
mutual jealousy and personal pique that existed  
between marshal Broglio and the prince of Soubise,  
whose armies were disunited during the remainder  
of the campaign : that under the former, having  
crossed the Weser, threatened to fall on Hanover  
and Brunswick ; while the troops of the latter passed  
the Lippe, and made dispositions to undertake the  
siege of Munster.

Prince Ferdinand not having forces sufficient to  
form two distinct armies, chose a central position  
for his main body, whence he could send out de-  
tachments to the relief of any place that was at-  
tacked. The skill and vigor of his measures pre-  
vented the enemy from making any important  
conquests, though they could not protect so large  
an extent of country from cruel ravages : after  
many manœuvres and enterprises on both sides, in  
which several posts were taken and recovered, and  
in which the hereditary prince of Brunswick greatly  
distinguished himself, marshal Broglio retreated,

CHAP. II. with more booty than laurels, into winter quarters near Cassel; the forces of Soubise were distributed along the Lower Rhine; and most of the allies occupied nearly the same positions which they held before the campaign. The British cavalry wintered in East Friesland, and the infantry in the bishopric of Osnaburg.

1761:

Tendency  
to peace.

The large supplies granted by the British parliament, while they astonished all Europe, contributed, with the distressed finances, the ruined navy, and the conquered colonies of France, to incline that power strongly towards a peace: in this wish Sweden and Poland were ready to join; nor was the empress of Russia herself unwilling to be released from a fatiguing attention to the affairs of Europe, in order to enjoy more freely that voluptuous mode of life, to which even age had not rendered her insensible. Austria alone, whose empress-queen was resolutely bent on the recovery of Silesia, and the destruction of its conqueror, seemed desirous of prolonging hostilities. Maria Theresa beheld with satisfaction the change lately effected in the British cabinet; anticipating the retirement of its great leader Mr. Pitt, as the period when England would relapse into a lukewarm support of her inveterate foe: her hopes were also raised by the accession of Charles III. to the crown of Spain, a prince less pacific in disposition than his predecessor, and who could not forget the degrading neutrality which he had been compelled to sign, by the presence of a British fleet, when he was on the throne of Naples. Strongly inclined to cherish his family connexions with France, he was also attracted to Austria by the conciliating conduct of Maria Theresa, who neither urged her pretensions to Parma, nor objected to the order of succession which he had established for the two Sicilies. His amicable dispositions were also strengthened by the marriage of his niece, Isabella of Parma, with the Austrian archduke Joseph; so that the three cabinets, united as they were by the ties of blood

and political interests, began secretly to concert together those arrangements, which terminated in the celebrated family compact, and gave a new ally to the house of Austria.<sup>8</sup>

CHAP. II.

1761.

When, therefore, overtures of peace on the part of France were made in London, through the medium of the Russian ambassador, Maria Theresa, affecting to force her inclinations in compliance with the wishes of the house of Bourbon, proposed that a congress should be held at Augsburg: but although she displayed this apparent anxiety for peace, she cautiously avoided engaging herself in any negotiation: indeed no long time elapsed, before the notion of the proposed congress was set aside by a ridiculous point of Austrian punctilio;<sup>9</sup> but it had been dexterously arranged, that the ministers of France and England should endeavor to settle the differences existing between those two countries at their respective courts, and negotiate a separate treaty. As this proposal was agreed to without any reference to the king of Prussia, it manifestly indicated some relaxation of that strict political alliance which had hitherto subsisted between the cabinets of Berlin and London. M. Bussy being sent as French negotiator to London, and Mr. Hans Stanley on the part of Great Britain to Paris, the prospect of an adjustment, after some delay, seemed fair. France, who proposed the separate treaty, and thereby disjoined herself from the general cause, appeared, by that very act, as if she was willing to forego any advantages arising from her success in Germany, and to accept such terms as an aggressor must naturally expect from the superiority of a rival. Under these circumstances, most persons conceived that her intentions were sincere, though her rulers were playing a very deep and artful game: they felt satisfied that Spain would never

<sup>8</sup> See Coxe's *House of Austria*, vol. iii. p. 462.

<sup>9</sup> The emperor, it was said, could not send an ambassador, because war had been declared against the empress-queen, and not against the head of the empire.

CHAP. II. consent to the humiliation of the eldest branch of the house of Bourbon; and they also knew that Charles III. entertained a jealous fear of the maritime power of Great Britain, to which his transatlantic colonies were so peculiarly exposed: hence they conjectured, that the more imperious the demands of their antagonist should be, the more certainly would they fix Charles to their cause, and draw Spain into the quarrel.

1761.

At first there seemed to be no great difficulty in settling the terms relative to mutual conquests, on the general basis of *uti possidetis*, cessions on the one side being compensated by equivalents on the other; but as no cessation of arms had taken place, a difficulty soon arose respecting the specific time to which this matter should be referred. France proposed the first of May for Europe; the first of July for the West Indies; and the first of September for the East; declaring her willingness to take other epochs, if these should prove unsatisfactory to England. The British minister at first declined all, except that on which the treaty of peace should be signed: but when it was intimated to him, that in such case the nature and value of possessions to be relinquished could not be ascertained, and therefore the treaty must necessarily fail, he acknowledged the propriety of this objection; but before he would treat definitively, he proposed two preliminary conditions: first, that the adjustment between England and France should be conclusive, independently of the congress to be held at Augsburg; secondly, that the definitive treaty should be signed before the first of August ensuing. These conditions being conceded, he named the first of July for Europe, the first of September for Africa and America, the first of November for the East Indies. The French ministry, after a consultation, real or pretended, with their chief ally, signified their assent, provided nothing should be stipulated to the prejudice of the house of Austria: they then sent in specific proposals, according to agreement;

Pacific proposals of France.

the principal of which were, 1. to cede Canada, under certain conditions, retaining liberty of fishing on the banks of Newfoundland, and possession of Cape Breton, on which no fortification was to be erected : 2. to restore Minorca for Guadaloupe and Marigalante : 3. to evacuate all Germany, east of the Maine, in return for either Senegal or Goree in Africa, and Belleisle in Europe ; neither party to assist the German potentates with troops : 4. to constitute the treaty made by Godeheu and Saunders in 1755, a basis for the re-establishment of peace in the East Indies : 5. Great Britain to restore all French ships captured before the declaration of war.

CHAP. II.  
1761.

Mr. Pitt found great difficulty in replying to these conditions, from the declaration made by England that she would preserve her faith inviolably towards her ally, the king of Prussia : the condition therefore respecting the German powers was considered as a very insidious one on the part of France ; for if the congress at Augsburg should fail in its pacificatory design, the Prussian monarch would probably be crushed by the powerful confederacy arrayed against him. Some of the other terms also were considered as too arrogantly adopted by France in the condition to which she was reduced.

It is very doubtful if any amicable arrangement could have proceeded from this negotiation : but at the same time it seems more than probable, that the French minister, before he entered into it, had secured the consent of Spain to an alliance with his court. Even while negotiations were pending, M. Bussy delivered to the British minister a private memorial, proposing that Spain should be invited to take part in the proceedings in order to prevent disputes, and guarantee the intended treaty ; intimating also that his catholic majesty had given his consent that such a requisition should be made to him, and hinting, as a species of threat, that under existing circumstances the Spanish court had no great reason to be kindly disposed toward Great

Inter-  
ference of  
Spain.

CHAP. II. Britain : to recover its friendship therefore and to de-  
 1761. serve its good offices as a mediator, it was required,  
 that England should remove several causes of uneasiness, by restoring some ships taken, during the war, under Spanish colors ; by granting to Spain the liberty which she claimed of fishing on the banks of Newfoundland ; and by demolishing the British settlements on the coast of Honduras, made contrary to treaty.<sup>10</sup> Again, as if to aggravate the insolence of these demands, France presented a memorial from Austria, stating that the empress-queen expected, if she consented to a separate pacification of France and England, that she should retain all conquests made from Prussia ; and that the allies should stipulate to withdraw their assistance from that power. Here then appeared the scope and aim of this ingenious piece of diplomacy.

France was, in the first instance, to be put forward, in order to acquire the credit of pacific inclinations and designs, after Spain had been cajoled by artful representations of French moderation, interested by fears for the house of Bourbon, and excited by a jealousy of British power : with this tone of moderation England was to be allured into negotiations, during which the demands of France might assume a degree of arrogance that would throw on her antagonist the necessity of resisting them, and excite a general suspicion of exorbitant pretensions : in this stage of the business, Spain was to come forward as a moderator, with a list of her own grievances to be redressed, and an offer of mediation under threats of her displeasure, if the overtures were rejected ; while an opportunity was given to Austria, for slipping in her pretensions, to upset the whole scheme for which the war had been undertaken ; and which, if granted, would tie down England against any future interference : no doubt, it was expected that this latter power would shrink

<sup>10</sup> There was a degree of justice in some of these claims ; but they were urged at an improper time, and to serve a particular purpose.



from encountering the odium of rejecting such pacificatory proposals, and the danger of an enlarged confederacy against her in case of such a rejection; that she would consult her own ease and present security, by leaving Prussia to be dismembered, and the combined system of European policy to be overthrown; especially when a considerable party of her own statesmen were blind to the danger of departing from the first principles of the war, when German subsidies were odious to a very large portion of the people, and when the rising favorite, as well as the sovereign, were unfriendly to the cause of Frederic.<sup>11</sup> Fortunately however for England and for Europe, the penetrating genius and patriotic counsels of Mr. Pitt were not yet lost to the state. Duly estimating the power and resources of Great Britain, he entertained no fear for the result, when he disdainfully rejected the attempt to place her in the position of a beaten and dejected power, positively refused the degrading proposal of admitting Spain into the negotiations, and declared the proposition respecting Prussia inadmissible, as being inconsistent with British honor.

CHAP. II.  
1761..

Feeling it however incumbent on him to return an official answer to the specific proposals which he had received, he stated that England would agree to receive Canada; but without any conditions, and accompanied by its appurtenances—that she rejected the requisition of Cape Breton by France—that she would grant to that power liberty of fishing on the banks of Newfoundland, provided France would demolish the fortifications of Dunkirk—that she agreed to the offer made concerning the West Indies and Belleisle—that she rejected the proposed neutrality regarding Germany, and demanded the evacuation of that country intirely by France—that she refused to restore either Senegal or Goree—that she would refer all negotiations respecting the East Indies to the two national companies—finally, she

Mr. Pitt's  
reply.

<sup>11</sup> He was personally odious to George III. whose religious mind was naturally shocked at the sceptical opinions promulgated by the royal author.

CHAP. II. refused to restore the ships, and resolved to assist his Prussian majesty in the recovery of Silesia.

1761.

Thus then the gauntlet was thrown down: to such terms France could not accede, while she had any means of prolonging the contest: she lost therefore her principal object in proposing the negotiations; but gained the inferior one of being able to complain with apparent justice of the haughty impracticability of her opponent. The Spanish minister also avowed the authenticity of his memorial; over which, for the sake of policy, some doubt had been hitherto discreetly cast.

Still the delusion was for a time kept up: an ultimatum was given in from the court of Versailles, and other delays were interposed, until the celebrated treaty, called the Family Compact, was actually signed between France and Spain. Of this transaction Mr. Stanley received some obscure intelligence, which he communicated to Mr. Pitt; the negotiations were then suddenly closed, Messrs. Bussy and Stanley being ordered to return to their respective courts.

Discussions with Spain.

The earl of Bristol, our ambassador at Madrid, was now instructed to demand from the Spanish minister, Don Ricardo Wall, either a disavowal or a satisfactory explanation of his irregular memorial delivered in by M. Bussy; which, said Mr. Pitt, 'best speaks its own enormity, and the extreme offensiveness of the matter it contains.' At the same time, lord Bristol was advised, while he remonstrated energetically and firmly, to give the offending party every fair opportunity of retreat and retraction; still however denying the Spanish pretensions to fish on the banks of Newfoundland; referring to the justice of English tribunals every claim concerning the restitution of prizes; and intimating his Britannic majesty's intention to destroy the settlements at Honduras, as soon as Spain would suggest any other method by which his subjects could enjoy the traffic in logwood, to which they were by treaty intitled.

From the earl of Bristol's reply, dated the thirty-first of August, and received on the eleventh of September, it appears that the Spanish minister artfully extolled the magnanimity of the king of England in refusing to add facilities toward the accommodation of differences with another sovereign, in consequence of any intimation from a power at war, or the threatenings of an enemy. Mr. Wall farther affirmed, that the assent given by his catholic majesty to the French king's offer of endeavoring to settle the disputes between England and Spain, was unconnected with any design to retard the peace, and absolutely void of the slightest intention to offend the sovereign of Great Britain. The king of Spain, he said, did not suppose that England would look on the French cabinet as a tribunal to which the court of London would make an appeal; nor did he mean it as such, when the statement of grievances was conveyed through that channel. His excellency also assured the earl of Bristol, that his catholic majesty, both before and then, esteemed and valued the frequent professions made by the British court of friendship, and of a desire to settle all differences amicably; and asked, whether it could possibly be imagined in England, that the catholic king was seeking to provoke Great Britain in her most flourishing and exalted condition, occasioned by the greatest series of successes that any single nation had ever experienced? but he refused to give up any of the three points in dispute; and owned that the most perfect harmony subsisted between the courts of France and Spain: that in consequence of such harmony, the most christian king had offered to assist his catholic majesty, in case the discussion between Great Britain and Spain should terminate in a rupture; which offer was considered in a friendly point of view.

On the receipt of this intelligence, Mr. Pitt felt certified of the hostile disposition of Spain, and of her intention, by delaying the open avowal of it, to

CHAP. II.

1761.

Mr. Pitt's policy.

CHAP. II. enter into the contest at her own season and with  
1761. the greatest possible effect: accordingly, he declared in council, that we ought to consider her evasive answer as a refusal of satisfaction; to withdraw our ambassador from Madrid; and to strike the first blow, by intercepting the Spanish galleons, and thus crippling the enemy's resources: he even delivered a proposition to this effect on paper, signed by himself and lord Temple, in order to show that his opinion was deliberately offered. After a full discussion of the subject at three cabinet meetings, the proposal was rejected by all the other ministers, as being precipitate, repugnant to the dictates of sound policy, and inconsistent with the laws of honor or justice. They allowed that Spain had taken a very extraordinary step, to which she had been unwarily led by the artifices of the French cabinet; but they wished to try the effect of farther remonstrances: they admitted that Great Britain ought not to be deterred from her just demands by menaces in any quarter; but they affirmed, that to create a new war, or to extend an old one, while our finances were so much dilapidated, was no proof of wisdom; and that to provoke a rupture with Spain in particular, was to injure wantonly the commercial interests of both nations. Besides, they said, such hasty measures would alarm all Europe, and more than counterbalance any advantages by their injurious effect on the national character: before we enter into war, let the world be convinced of the perfidious designs of those we would attack; let us not aim to surpass them in treachery; let not the lion debase himself by acting the part of the fox. Probably too the Spanish flota may be arrived in harbor, and we may eventually miss what it would be an act of piracy to take. If indeed Spain, blind to her real interests, and misled by French councils, should enter more decisively into the contest, then will be the time to draw the sword; then all other powers will applaud the determination, and our

own subjects will cheerfully sustain the burdens of CHAP. II.  
a war sanctioned by justice and consistent with  
honor. 1761.

There was an apparent truth and magnanimity in these sentiments, advanced by so great a majority of the cabinet, that stung Mr. Pitt, though they could not convince him : it is indeed believed, that, as he had a deeper insight into the real principles of the war than the other ministers, so also that he possessed a more certain knowlege of the Spanish councils, by means of a communication which he was not at liberty to disclose.<sup>12</sup> After again earnestly representing to his colleagues the progress of the family alliance, the necessity of intercepting the Spanish flota, and the present favorable opportunity, which might never be recovered, of humbling the house of Bourbon, this great, but imperious minister, seeing the little effect which his expostulations produced, thus concluded :—‘ I was called to the administration of public affairs by the voice of the people : to them I have always considered myself accountable for my conduct ; and therefore cannot remain in a situation which makes me responsible for measures which I am no longer allowed to guide.’ To this declaration, considered by the council as an arrogant assumption of ministerial superiority, the president, lord Granville,<sup>13</sup> coolly replied :—‘ The right honorable gentleman, I find, is determined to leave us ; and I can hardly regret it, as he would otherwise have compelled us to leave him. If he be resolved to assume the sole right of advising his majesty, and directing the operations of the war, to what purpose are we here assembled ? when he

<sup>12</sup> It is said that the attainted earl-mareschal of Scotland, then resident at the court of Madrid, anxious to regain the good opinion of the British government, was Mr. Pitt’s informant : by this means the minister knew that the family compact was actually signed by Spain, before he proposed to attack that power.

<sup>13</sup> The other members of the cabinet, ten in number, among whom were the dukes of Newcastle and Devonshire, the earls of Hardwicke and Bute, lords Mansfield, Ligonier, and Anson, were opposed to the opinion of Mr. Pitt, and severally delivered their dissent by word of mouth, according to lord Barington’s information to Mr. Mitchell.—Ellis’s Original Letters, second series, vol. iv. p. 442.

CHAP. H. talks of being responsible to the people, he speaks the language of the house of commons, and forgets that at this board, he is responsible only to the king. He may possibly have convinced himself of his infallibility: still it remains, that we should be equally convinced, before we can resign our understandings to his direction, or join with him in the measures he proposes.'

1761.

His inter-  
view with  
George  
III.

In pursuance of his resolution, Mr. Pitt repaired to St. James's on the fifth of October, and carried the seals to the king, which his majesty received with ease and firmness, but without requesting him to resume them. He candidly declared his satisfaction at the opinion of his council, adding, that he would have felt himself placed in a very difficult situation had contrary sentiments been expressed by so great a majority: in order however to testify his sense of Mr. Pitt's high merit and services, he made him a gracious offer of any rewards in the power of the crown to bestow. The ex-minister was sensibly affected by this candid, dignified, and condescending conduct. 'I confess, sire,' said he, 'I had but too much reason to expect your majesty's displeasure: I did not come prepared for this exceeding goodness: pardon me, sir; it overpowers—it oppresses me.' He then burst into tears.<sup>14</sup>

A pension of £3000 per annum, and for three lives, was conferred on Mr. Pitt, who declined the dignity of the peerage for himself, but accepted it for his wife and her issue. Lord Egremont, son of the great tory Sir William Wyndham, was appointed his successor; Mr. George Grenville having declined the seals, and chosen to remain treasurer of the navy, with the management of the house of commons. Lord Temple also retired from office; and the privy seal was committed to the duke of Bedford's keeping.

It can scarcely be matter of surprise that the

<sup>14</sup> See Annual Register for 1761, p. 44. For Mr. Pitt's own account of the reasons which induced him to resign, see a letter addressed by him to a friend in the city, in the Appendix, No. 1.

resignation of such a popular minister as Mr. Pitt, CHAP. II.  
 should have excited a vehement conflict between the admirers and the censurers of his conduct. While some thought, that in resigning office at so critical a moment, he showed himself more alive to his own personal glory than to his country's interests; others considered the act as a splendid proof of patriotic virtue, of just indignation against the betrayers of those interests, and of political wisdom well calculated to make them hesitate in their designs. While we find lord Barrington regretting it as a most unfortunate event,<sup>15</sup> likely to occasion great inconveniences both at home and abroad; Mr. Dodding-ton, or rather lord Melcombe, (for this selfish politician had been raised to the peerage) writes to congratulate his noble friend lord Bute, 'on his being delivered from a most impracticable colleague, the king from a most imperious servant, and the country from a most dangerous minister:' he adds, however, that 'he is told, the people are sullen about it.'<sup>16</sup> Lord Bute's answer to this communication would be a complete enigma, did we not know how cautiously we must receive as dictates of the heart, political opinions, too often expressed by one party for the purpose of misleading another. The letter alluded to contains sentiments throughout, on the subject of the war, which might be supposed to flow from the pen of Mr. Pitt, rather than one opposed to him in political sentiments.<sup>17</sup> No doubt, lord Bute was staggered at the moment; no doubt, he began to shrink from the Herculean task which he had long coveted, as soon as a load of diplomacy, connected with the four quarters of the globe, was taken from the Atlantean shoulders of Mr. Pitt, to be deposited on his own: he was however cordially

1761.

<sup>15</sup> Ellis's Original Letters, second series, vol. iv. p. 442.

<sup>16</sup> Letter to lord Bute, October 6, 1761.

<sup>17</sup> See the Appendix, No. 2. for this curious epistle and the still more curious answer of lord Melcombe. Almost every letter of this noble lord to his friend the earl of Bute is written with a covert design of creeping into office: in one he hints broadly that he is willing to hold the place of premier for him till it may be convenient to lord Bute to assume it.

CHAP. II. supported by his colleagues, who seemed as if they  
 1761. were actuated by a more than Persian devotion, in their readiness to worship the rising sun. The duke of Newcastle, in particular, had always been jealous of that ascendancy which Mr. Pitt's talents and popularity gave him over less illustrious statesmen: he had even beheld with feelings of envy and vexation the success of measures, which formed a strong contrast to his own career; for, although he held ostensibly the first place in the administration, he was in reality only an inferior coadjutor. Instead therefore of retiring with Mr. Pitt, this extraordinary personage conceived hopes of rising on his fall, and of regaining that pre-eminent station which he once occupied, when a confederacy of whig families held the crown itself in bondage: but his adherents were now so diminished in number and consequence, that he stood almost alone in the cabinet, as the representative of such a system: he soon found, to his infinite mortification, that if he would stay there at all, he must follow in the train of lord Bute!

Popularity  
 of Mr.  
 Pitt.

The press began to teem with publications respecting the late events; and both parties were assailed by this engine with equal violence. While lord Bute was vilified as driving from the helm the only pilot who could direct the vessel, Mr. Pitt's pension, and the honors conferred on his family, though far below his merit, were made objects of the most virulent abuse: even the popularity of this great man was for a time shaken, though it soon recovered its strength; or rather it took deeper root in the affections of the people, through that love of opposition, which generally draws the multitude towards an opponent of their rulers. The common council of London presented a vote of thanks to their favorite on the twenty-second of October; and on the lord mayor's day, when their majesties dined at Guildhall, Mr. Pitt was gratified with the most rapturous acclamations, while the king and queen were received with comparative indifference, and



lord Bute was exposed to the humorous but insulting ribaldry of the populace. It is time however to turn from the intrigues of cabinet policy to events of a more tranquil and domestic nature. CHAP. II. 1761.

In no instance does the king appear to have acted with a greater regard to his own happiness and his people's welfare, than in the choice of his royal consort. Various accounts have been given of the circumstances which led to this desirable connexion; but the real state of the case seems to be, that colonel Græme, a clever agent of the earl of Bute, was recommended by his lordship to the king, and commissioned to visit the protestant courts of Germany, for the purpose of discovering a princess, worthy to sit on the British throne. His instructions are said to have comprised the following particulars: that she should be perfect in form—of pure blood—of a healthy constitution—possessed of elegant accomplishments, especially music, of which the king was extremely fond—and of a mild, obliging, cheerful disposition. The choice of him who was honored by this difficult and delicate commission, fell on Sophia Charlotte, second daughter of the duke of Mecklenburg Strelitz, by his consort Albertina Elizabeth, daughter of the duke of Saxe Hildburghausen: but there can be little doubt, that he in some measure consulted his sovereign's known inclinations in the affair; and that he fixed on this interesting personage because he found that she possessed many qualities both of mind and person, corresponding with that excellence which was connected with her in the king's imagination. In fact, a letter addressed by this amiable princess to Frederic the Great, deploring the calamities of the war in which he was engaged, and endeavoring to avert a portion of them from her father's miserable subjects, had fallen into the king's hands, and created in his bosom a strong interest for its eloquent and feeling writer.

Prudence of George III. in choice of a queen.

On the eighth of July, his majesty, having called an extraordinary council, made the following de-

CHAP. II. **claration to its members:—**‘Having nothing so much at heart as to procure the welfare and happiness of my people, and to render the same stable and permanent to posterity, I have, ever since my accession to the throne, turned my thoughts towards the choice of a princess for my consort; and I now with great satisfaction acquaint you, that, after the fullest information and mature deliberation, I am come to a resolution to demand in marriage the princess Charlotte of Mecklenburg Strelitz; a princess distinguished by every eminent virtue and amiable endowment; whose illustrious line has constantly shown the firmest zeal for the protestant religion, and a particular attachment to my family. I have judged it proper to communicate to you these my intentions, in order that you may be fully apprised of a matter so highly important to me and to my kingdoms, and which I persuade myself will be most acceptable to my loving subjects.’ This announcement occasioned some surprise to most of those who heard it, the preliminary negotiations having been carried on with extraordinary secrecy. On the fifteenth of August the treaty was concluded, and preparations were set on foot to conduct the bride to her future home: the earl of Harcourt, who had been governor to the young king when prince of Wales,<sup>18</sup> with the duchesses of Ancaster and Hamilton, two of the finest women at the British court, were selected to escort her; and lord Anson had the honor of commanding the fleet which was destined to convoy the royal yacht.

From the court of Strelitz, where ‘the great honor done to it by the king was seen in its proper light,’ lord Harcourt sends to his correspondent a descrip-

<sup>18</sup> In allusion to this appointment, lord Harcourt says, in a letter to Mr. Mitchell; ‘I happened to be one of the few, perhaps the only man of quality, that did not solicit some favor of the king on his accession to the crown: he took notice of it, and was pleased with it. After what happened to me some years ago, it was beneath me to become a solicitor for favors and employment: if the king thought me worthy to be employed, I knew I should receive some mark of favor; if not, I was sure no solicitation would signify.’—Ellis’s Original Letters, second series, vol. iv. p. 440.

tion of his future queen, which remarkably corresponds with the instructions given to colonel Græme :—‘ Our queen, that is to be, has seen very little of the world ; but her very good sense, vivacity, and cheerfulness, I dare say, will recommend her to the king, and make her the darling of the British nation. She is no regular beauty ; but she is of a pretty size, has a charming complexion, with very pretty eyes, and is finely made.’<sup>19</sup>

CHAP. II.  
1761.

The separation of the princess from the members of her family, by whom she was much beloved, is said to have been very affecting. After receiving distinguished honors on her route, she arrived at Stade, and embarked on the twenty-fourth of August, under a salute of twenty-one guns from each ship in the squadron. Having had a long and tempestuous passage, in which the ships were twice in sight of land and driven out again to sea, they cast anchor in Harwich roads on the sixth of September ; but, owing to this unforeseen arrival, the princess did not land till the following day, when she set forward on her journey, and slept that night at lord Abercorn’s seat at Witham. About noon, on the eighth, she was met by the king’s servants at Romford, where she entered the royal carriage, being richly dressed, but intirely in the English fashion. From Mile-end she was escorted to St. James’s by the life-guards ; and when she arrived at the palace, the duke of York was ready to hand her out of the carriage, while his majesty raised her up tenderly and saluted her as she was dropping on her knee to pay him obeisance. It is said, that in the first interview, the king, whose heart was pre-occupied by another image, drew back a little, on observing in the princess a deficiency of those personal charms which he expected to find : an involuntary expression of countenance slightly revealed his disappointment ; but it was only momentary ; his generous feelings became interested ; and the effect of

Queen  
Charlotte  
arrives in  
England.

<sup>19</sup> Ellis’s Original Letters, second series, vol. iv. p. 439.

CHAP. II. an artless, cheerful manner, and of an obliging disposition, soon dissipated the cloud on his majesty's brow, while it elicited praise from the whole court, not only of his bride's affability, but even of her beauty.<sup>20</sup> While they waited for supper, it is stated that she sat down to sing and play; and that she exchanged much conversation with the king, both in French and German. The nuptial benediction was given by Dr. Secker, archbishop of Canterbury, who had officiated at his majesty's baptism, and afterwards placed the crown on his head: the duke of Cumberland gave away the bride; and the charming lady Sarah Lenox, the young king's first flame, whom Horace Walpole compares for beauty to the most exquisite Magdalene of Correggio, assisted to bear the queen's train. Why her presence should not have been dispensed with it is difficult to imagine, unless this were required as a trial of fortitude, to show whether one party could best endure the loss of beauty, or the other that of a crown.

1761.

Marriage  
of the king.

The first public appearance of the royal pair, after their marriage, was on the ensuing Sunday at St. James's chapel, which was crowded to excess; but the brilliant congregation there assembled was much disappointed by the Reverend Mr. Schutz, no part of whose sermon had any reference to the particular occasion, except the text; 'Provide things honest in the sight of men.'

The next evening was devoted to amusement at Drury-lane, to see 'The Rehearsal,' the first dramatic exhibition which the young queen had ever witnessed: their passage, in chairs, from the palace to the theatre, was almost obstructed by the curious but loyal multitude: the crowd indeed pressed so closely on them, that her majesty felt considerable alarm; but more sorrow next morning, on hearing

<sup>20</sup> 'In half an hour,' says Horace Walpole, who was himself at court, 'one heard of nothing but proclamations of her beauty: every body was content, every body was pleased. She looks very sensible, cheerful, and remarkably genteel.'

that many persons had suffered serious injury, and that one or two had been even trampled to death. CHAP. II.

Extraordinary preparations were made for the ensuing coronation, and enormous prices demanded for seats on the scaffolding to view the splendid pageant. Thousands of spectators sat up in the open air all night to secure good positions; and so great was the rage for witnessing the procession, that the husband of a lady who was far advanced in pregnancy paid 140 guineas for two rooms, commanding a view of the platform, where she could be attended by her nurse and accoucheur.

1761.

The ceremony took place on the twenty-second of September; when, notwithstanding all the pains taken to have things in order, some curious instances of error and forgetfulness occurred. First, it was discovered that the sword of state had been left behind; and chairs, with canopies for the king and queen, omitted: the lord mayor's sword was substituted for the former; and the whole procession had to wait in the hall till noon, while the others were arranged. It is worthy of remark, that when his majesty approached the altar to receive the sacrament, he asked if he should lay aside his crown; and when the archbishop, after having consulted with bishop Pearce, replied, that no order existed on the subject in the service; 'then,' rejoined the king, 'there ought to be one;' and at the same time taking the diadem from his head, he reverently placed it on the altar. He wished the queen to do the same, but was informed that her crown was fastened to her hair.

Coronation  
of their ma-  
jesties.

An incident occurred at the return of the procession, which, in ancient days, would have been considered as an omen to be averted by a thousand sacrifices. The largest and most valuable diamond fell from his majesty's diadem, and was for some time lost;<sup>1</sup> but it was soon afterwards found and

<sup>1</sup> This incident was brought up at the conclusion of the American war, and quoted as a remarkable occurrence.

CHAP. II. restored. At dinner, earl Talbot, the high steward, contrived to offend as many persons as possible: he took away the table of the knights of the bath, and that of the barons of the cinque ports, in the most insulting manner: he also refused one to the lord mayor and aldermen; on which occasion Mr. Beckford told him, that it was hard indeed to refuse a table to the city of London, whom it would cost £10,000 to banquet the king; adding, that his lordship would repent of it if they had not a table; and this spirited remonstrance soon procured one. The champion is said to have acted his part well, riding into the hall on the identical charger which carried George II. in the battle of Dettingen: the galleries were crowded with persons of distinction; and many peeresses, having been dressed over night, slept in arm-chairs, persons being at hand to wake them if they disturbed their head-dresses. On the king's complaining of the few existing precedents for these ceremonies, lord Effingham, the earl marshal, owned that his office had been strangely neglected; 'but,' added he, 'I have taken care that the next coronation shall be ordered in the most exact manner imaginable.' After all, no great public festival ever passed off with more éclat. Their majesties were very popular; the national prosperity stood at its greatest height; the heads of administration were acceptable to the people; and not a single accident occurred during the day.

Civic feast  
at Guild-  
hall.

The last splendid pageant of this year was the civic feast, on the ninth of November, which all the royal family attended. The king and queen witnessed the lord mayor's procession amid the acclamations of their subjects, under a canopy at the house of David Barclay, a quaker, son of the celebrated author of 'The Apology.' This worthy citizen had reached his eighty-third year; and the present was the third occasion on which a king of England had been his guest. The entertainment at Guildhall was so magnificent, that one of the foreign ambassadors observed, it was a banquet fit only to be

given by one king to another ; and, when the royal family retired, his majesty, addressing himself to the lord mayor, said, ‘to be elegantly entertained, I must come into the city.’ This fête cost upwards of £7000. A few days afterwards, at a court of common council, a motion was made, and unanimously carried, ‘that his majesty’s statue be erected on the Royal Exchange, among those of his predecessors ; and that pictures of his majesty and his royal consort be put up in Guildhall.’

CHAP. II.  
1761.

During the suspension of those projects which were to make Spain repent of her presumption, the new parliament met, on the third of November. Sir John Cust was unanimously elected speaker of the commons ; and on the sixth he was presented to his majesty ; when the king, having first signified his intire approbation of their choice, thus addressed himself to both houses :—

Meeting of  
parliament.

‘My lords and gentlemen :—At the opening of the first parliament summoned and elected under my authority, I with pleasure notice an event which has made me completely happy, and given universal joy to my loving subjects. My marriage with a princess, eminently distinguished by every virtue and amiable endowment, while it affords me all possible domestic comfort, cannot but highly contribute to the happiness of my kingdoms, which has been, and always shall be, the first object in every action of my life.

‘It has been my earnest wish that this first period of my reign might be marked with another felicity ; the restoring of the blessings of peace to my people, and putting an end to the calamities of war, under which so great a part of Europe suffers : but though overtures were made to me, and my good brother and ally, the king of Prussia, by the several belligerent powers, in order to a general pacification, for which purpose a congress was appointed, and propositions were made to me by France, for a particular peace with that crown, which were followed by an actual nego-

CHAP. II. **tiation; yet that congress has not hitherto taken**  
1761. **place, and the negotiation with France is intirely**  
**broken off.**

‘The sincerity of my disposition to effectuate this good work has been manifested in the progress of it; and I have the consolation to reflect, that the continuance of the war, and the farther effusion of christian blood, to which it was the desire of my heart to put a stop, cannot with justice be imputed to me.

‘Our military operations have been in no degree suspended or delayed; and it has pleased God to grant us farther important successes, by the conquest of the islands of Belleisle and Dominica; and by the reduction of Pondicherry, which has in a manner annihilated the French power in the East Indies. In other parts, where the enemy’s numbers were greatly superior, their principal designs and projects have been generally disappointed, by a conduct which does the highest honor to the distinguished capacity of my general prince Ferdinand of Brunswick, and by the valor of my troops. The magnanimity and ability of the king of Prussia have eminently appeared in resisting such numerous armies, and surmounting so great difficulties.

‘In this situation I am glad to have an opportunity of receiving the truest information of the sense of my people, by a new choice of their representatives: I am fully persuaded you will agree with me in opinion, that the steady exertion of our most vigorous efforts, in every part where the enemy may still be attacked with advantage, is the only means that can be productive of such a peace as may with reason be expected from our successes. It is therefore my fixed resolution, with your concurrence and support, to carry on the war in the most effectual manner, for the interest and advantage of my kingdoms; and to maintain, to the utmost of my power, the good faith and honor of my crown, by adhering firmly to the engagements entered into with my allies. In this I will per-



severe, until my enemies, moved by their own losses and distresses, and touched with the miseries of so many nations, shall yield to the equitable conditions of an honorable peace; in which case, as well as in the prosecution of the war, I do assure you, no consideration whatever shall make me depart from the true interests of these my kingdoms, and the honor and dignity of my crown. CHAP. II.  
1761.

‘Gentlemen of the house of commons:—I am heartily sorry that the necessity of large supplies appears so clearly from what has already been mentioned. The proper estimates for the services of the ensuing year shall be laid before you; and I desire you to grant me such supplies as may enable me to prosecute the war with vigor, and as your own welfare and security, in the present critical conjuncture, require; that we may happily put the last hand to this great work. Whatsoever you give shall be duly and faithfully applied.

‘I dare say, your affectionate regard for me and the queen makes you go before me in what I am next to mention—the making an adequate and honorable provision for her support, in case she should survive me. This is what not only her royal dignity, but her own merit calls for; and I earnestly recommend it to your consideration.

‘My lords and gentlemen:—I have such confidence in the zeal and good affections of this parliament, that I think it quite superfluous to use any exhortations to excite you to a right conduct. I will only add, that there never was a situation, in which unanimity, firmness, and despatch were more necessary for the safety, honor, and true interest of Great Britain.’

The commons, beside the usual address, resolved, on the seventeenth of November, to send a message of congratulation to the queen, on the occasion of her auspicious nuptials; and two days afterwards showed the sincerity of their professions, by making for her a provision equal to that which had been settled on queen Caroline; £100,000 per annum,

CHAP. II. with Richmond old park, and Somerset-house annexed, in case she should survive his majesty: a  
 1761. patent also passed the privy seal, granting to her majesty the sum of £40,000 yearly for the better support of her dignity. The annuity was charged on all or any part of those crown revenues, which, by an act of last session, were consolidated with the aggregate fund. The royal assent was given to this bill on the second of December, when the queen, who was present in a chair of state at the king's right hand, rose up, and made her obeisance in a very graceful manner: the speaker also renewed assurances of duty and affection from the commons, blended with the most respectful and gratifying compliments to her majesty. Soon afterwards a bill was passed for the repeal of the compelling clause in the insolvent act; and the estimates having laid about a month before the house, supplies for the ensuing year were adjusted: 70,000 seamen were voted; and of land forces, it was agreed to maintain 67,676 effective men, beside the militia of England, the two regiments of fencibles in North Britain, the provincial troops in America, and 67,167 German auxiliaries, for the support of the continental war: as some deficiencies of last session were to be made good, a loan of £12,000,000 was found necessary, which occasioned the imposition of some new taxes, including an additional one on windows, and an increased duty on spirituous liquors. The various sums voted from the twenty-first of November to the twenty-second of December amounted almost to £16,000,000, to which were added soon afterwards £2,000,000 for the defence of Portugal; so that altogether the supplies for the year 1762 amounted to more than £18,000,000.

Debates on  
the German  
war.

It was not to be expected that such vast sums should be granted without opposition, or debates on their expediency, particularly at the present juncture, when the sentiments of the people, and especially those of the court, respecting the Ger-

man war, were considered to be on the change. The CHAP. II.  
opponents of the continental system now appealed  
to another year's experience in support of their asser-  
tions, that no adequate advantage could result even 1761.  
from success: they represented the system as most  
absurd, in which defeats were accompanied with  
their usual bad effects, and victory itself tended  
only to rob us of the fruits of our naval successes;  
while they drained the exchequer to such a degree,  
that we should be in the end obliged to purchase a  
peace by the restitution of all our maritime con-  
quests. It was urged, that England can never pru-  
dently engage in a continental war against France,  
without a concurrence of other powers in her favor.  
This was a maxim of king William, and the founda-  
tion of that grand alliance which secured the liberty  
of Europe: on this principle also the contest under  
the great duke of Marlborough was so successfully  
carried on; but to engage with France, when those  
very states, wherein our safety lies, are combined  
against us, must necessarily end in ruin.

In addition to these arguments, the same party  
anticipated a reply which they knew would be made  
by their adversaries, that the war in Germany had  
occasioned a fortunate diversion in favor of Great  
Britain, by drawing off the forces and attention of  
France from her navy, from the defence of her colo-  
nies, and from any formidable enterprises against  
this country: all which was denied. 'In the be-  
ginning of the war,' it was urged, 'while their  
marine could possibly be supported, the French  
attended sedulously to that object; and while they  
saw any probability of invading England with suc-  
cess, they entertained no idea of marching into  
Germany: so little was Hanover considered in dan-  
ger, that troops were brought from thence to defend  
this country: but when France perceived that Eng-  
land was guarded against insult; that her own navy  
was destroyed, and her colonies in danger; then it  
was, that she betook herself to Germany, trans-  
ferring the war to the only quarter where she could

CHAP. II. act with effect, and where even victory itself would  
1761. be ruinous to her adversary: so that the German war was not, on the part of England, a war of diversion, but one of defence, in favor of a barren electorate, which, if put up to sale, would not fetch half the sum annually expended on it; and in support of an ally, from whom no service in return could ever be expected. A third part of the money thus squandered on the continent, if it had been employed in augmenting our navy, would have deprived France of all her West Indian islands, with the profits of her external commerce; and would have obliged her to accept such terms of peace as England might have been disposed to grant.

After having thus generally commented on the infatuation of the British cabinet, in renouncing the advantages of a naval superiority, and allowing the enemy to choose his own ground for action, the speakers animadverted with severity on the particular engagements we had made with some of the continental powers. 'We had,' they declared, 'officially interfered in the internal broils of the empire, and taken a part in disputes, which would have been better adjusted without our interference: we had not only sent the flower of our armies to defend the territories of certain petty princes; but had contracted enormous debts to pay these potentates for assisting us to guard their rights and fight their battles. Is England (they asked) to be, as it were, the knight-errant of Europe, neglecting her own interests in the pursuit of foreign phantoms? Are we to waste our resources on Hessians, Hanoverians; and others; who, if they deserve the name of allies; serve only to protract the struggles of a system, in which nothing would profit us so much as an early and total defeat? But even these connexions, burdensome as they are, do not display half so much folly as the treaty made with the king of Prussia, to whom we are paying annually a sum exceeding all the subsidies granted to our German allies in the wars of queen Anne; while he is so far from being

able to afford us any assistance, that he is scarcely in a condition to defend his own territories. We consider him, it is true, as the great defender of the protestant cause: but how lightly he thinks of religion, let his own writings testify: what mischief he has done to protestantism, this very war will show. He invaded and cruelly oppressed the protestant country of Saxony, where no one was molested on account of his faith: even among the Roman catholics, persecution had lost much of its edge, when he revived the memory of it; and by forcing the popish powers into a stricter union, brought more troubles on the divided protestants than they had ever experienced during the utmost rancor of a religious war.

CHAP. II.  
1761.

The opposite party were not wanting to themselves in the ingenuity of their reply. They ridiculed the idea of reverting to the reign of William or of Anne, for the purpose of examining the principles of a continental war, or of comparing the policy and resources of the contending parties. 'The present time,' said they, 'gives us the only just criterion; and here we have manifestly the advantage: our success in this contest, though we stand alone and unassisted, proves incontestably our superiority over France.'

In answer to the charge of folly in waging war on the continent, they ascribed to this very circumstance the success of all our operations. The attention of our rival was thereby distracted between her different enterprises on sea and land: grasping at two objects, she had missed both; and all her exertions had ended in the ruin of her trade, the utter destruction of her marine, the loss of her colonies, and the impending horrors of a national bankruptcy. 'And has she,' they asked, 'made any progress in Germany to counterbalance her reverses in other quarters? Far from it: at this instant she is less advanced than when she entered the country; and that too, after the loss of so much wealth, and the destruction of at least 100,000 men. Have not

CHAP. II. our enemies been defeated also on the continent?

Has not Hanover been recovered and protected?

1761. Has not the king of Prussia been, at all events, preserved from destruction? And have not the liberties of Germany hitherto been secured? Had we indeed remained at rest, and been content to see a great part of the empire in the possession of France, and the rest of it receiving her laws, the war would soon have been brought to an end; and we should have had to contend with our antagonist strengthened by victory, conquests, and alliances; we alone, against the whole force of her extended monarchy and revenue.'

They urged farther, 'that if the support of the protestant religion be any part of our duty, that religion must suffer grievously by the ruin of Frederic; for though the writings attributed to him, if really his, reflect disgrace on his character as a man; yet, as a king, he is the natural protector of protestantism in the German empire; and it will always be his interest to defend it.'

Whatever the new ministry might have thought concerning the original policy of the war, they saw it could not yet be honorably or consistently relinquished: the national faith was pledged to our allies; and it appeared to reflecting persons, that one more campaign, carried on with spirit, would lower the tone of France, and bring the contest to an end. All this opposition therefore against the continental system was happily overruled, though it certainly tended to confirm the new ministry in their intentions to withdraw the British subsidy from Prussia.

Lord Halifax meets the Irish parliament.

On the twenty-second of October, lord Halifax, the new lord-lieutenant of Ireland, met his majesty's first parliament in that country. In his opening speech, after alluding to the loss they had sustained in the death of George II., its happy reparation by the accession of his present majesty, the royal nuptials, and some other topics, as matters of course, he earnestly recommended to them the care of improving the natural resources of the kingdom, by

encouraging agriculture, the surest support of every state; and by regulating and improving manufactures, which are so subservient to commerce. CHAP. II.  
1761.  
'Your linen-trade,' said he, 'has been long and justly the object of public encouragement; but much still remains to carry to its full extent a manufacture, for which there is so large a demand, which is so various in its branches, and which, with due attention, might be rendered as considerable a source of wealth to the whole, as it is now to a part of this kingdom.' His lordship then brought the protestant charter-schools under notice; which merited protection, not only as supports of religion, but as seminaries of useful arts and virtuous industry. After affectionately exhorting them to lay aside, as much as possible, both public and private animosities, he concluded with expressing an earnest desire to maintain the honor and promote the service of the crown, to forward the united interests and preserve the constitution of both kingdoms; hoping 'that he might be able to represent in the warmest manner to his majesty the zeal and unanimity of this portion of his subjects; and to carry with him, on his return into the royal presence, the good opinion, the affection, and the hearts of the people of Ireland.'

Both houses voted addresses full of loyalty to the king, and gratitude to the lord-lieutenant, extolling his distinguished abilities, extensive knowledge, and great experience in the commercial interests of Great Britain; auguring the happiest results from his lordship's administration, and promising their hearty co-operation in the measures proposed to their consideration; to which addresses his excellency returned suitable answers.

During the preceding viceroyalty of the duke of Bedford, this country had been totally under the dominion of the lords justices,<sup>2</sup> who conducted every

<sup>2</sup> These were the primate, lord Shannon, and Mr. Ponsonby, speaker of the house of commons. At this time it was the custom for the lord-lieutenant to reside in England, except for a very short time, during his government.

CHAP. II. department of it without control : they had lately  
1761. made an attempt to gain popularity by expressing doubts in the privy council concerning the propriety of sending over a money bill, lest the rejection of it by the Irish house of commons should occasion a dissolution of the new parliament, and thereby cause much dissatisfaction. In this they were opposed by lord chancellor Bowes and his friends ; and party violence was inflamed to the highest degree : but the popular coalition prevailed so far as to alter the established custom, by sending a bill, not for a supply to the king, but relating to a vote of credit for Ireland ; a measure, to which every objection made against the usual mode of proceeding was applicable.

In this state of affairs the earl of Halifax took on himself the vice-regal government ; and his high character for independence, integrity, and firmness warranted expectations of a vigorous and successful administration : while however he was securing to himself a well-earned popularity, by promoting the agricultural and manufacturing interests of the country, and encouraging the charter-schools, with a due regard to the protestant establishment, an insidious attempt was made to lessen his reputation for independence, by a resolution of the committee of accounts ; augmenting the lord lieutenant's salary to the amount of £16,000 per annum, which was afterwards sanctioned by parliament on the twenty-sixth of February, 1762. The liberality of this vote claimed his lordship's thanks, though he rejected the application of it to himself ; but he recommended that the augmentation should be made provisionally, and conferred on his successor ; by which dignified and disinterested conduct he eluded the aim of faction, preserved his high character, and procured many liberal votes from parliament in favor of the objects alluded to in his speech.

Internal tranquillity however was disturbed in this country before any beneficial results from his patriotic measures could take effect. By the aboli-



tion of woollen manufactures in the southern parts of the kingdom, the people's employment naturally decreased; and this suffered a still farther diminution by the conversion of considerable quantities of land from a state of tillage to that of pasturage; the price of cattle having greatly risen in consequence of a fatal disorder which prevailed among them on the continent. These lands being let to wealthy graziers, great numbers of the peasantry were deprived not only of their work, but even of their habitations: many small farms however were still let to the cottagers at rack-rent; and the landlords, in order to lighten their burdens, allowed them rights of commonage; but afterwards, notwithstanding all engagements, they enclosed the commons, without making any recompense to their miserable tenants. Being thus provoked to resentment, and joined by numbers whom idleness had driven into vice and disorder, these unhappy people assembled together at night, and began to take the redress of grievances into their own hands. Beginning with demolishing the fences of the common lands, they thence obtained the name of levellers; but afterwards were distinguished by that of white-boys, from the practice of wearing white shirts over their common apparel. Binding themselves by solemn oaths, they proceeded to put their designs into execution, seizing horses and arms, houghing cattle, and committing acts of great cruelty on persons who were obnoxious to them, especially tithe-proctors, against whom the landlords and graziers contrived very artfully to direct their resentment, in order to remove the odium of oppression from themselves. The persons thus attacked were stripped naked, and made to ride on horses, with saddles formed of the skins of hedgehogs; or they were buried up to the chin in holes lined with thorns that were trodden down close to their bodies.

The royal troops were obliged to act in the suppression of these enormities: a considerable number of offenders suffered the extreme penalty of the

CHAP. II. law ; but too many were allowed to escape by the mistaken lenity of the judges, who were thought to be over-scrupulous in the consideration of evidence ; whence it happened that such disorders long continued to infest the country. As these disturbers of the peace were all catholics, a popish plot was suspected, for massacring the protestants and introducing the pretender prince Charles ; but, although several oaths were produced, charging some of the catholic clergy, and especially Dr. Butler, titular archbishop of Cashel, with promoting such a conspiracy, no charge was openly confirmed in a court of justice. A motion was made in parliament, to investigate the affair, but rejected ; and thus, the source of the disorder remaining unknown, it was difficult to apply any lasting remedy.

Explanations demanded from Spain.

Before the close of this present year, the British cabinet found itself under the necessity of justifying, if not the measures which Mr. Pitt proposed in council, at least his opinion respecting the hostile nature of that compact between France and Spain, which had manifested from the beginning so evident a tendency to produce a rupture between the latter country and Great Britain : for some time, indeed, the earl of Bristol was inclined to rely on the amicable disposition of the Spanish court, and the apparently ingenuous conduct of general Wall, its minister ; with which sentiments of their ambassador those of the British cabinet fully corresponded : but, as France began industriously to spread reports of the approaching hostility of Spain in consequence of the engagements she had contracted, it was thought expedient to demand from her cabinet satisfactory assurances of its pacific intentions.

The earl of Bristol therefore received orders from lord Egremont to use the most pressing instances to obtain a communication of the treaty acknowledged to have been concluded between the two houses of Bourbon, or at any rate, of those articles in it, which could, by any particular engagements, affect the interests of Great Britain. So anxious however was

the British ministry to preserve their amicable relations with Spain unbroken, that, by 'a secret and confidential' despatch, it was left to the ambassador's own judgment, if the Spanish cabinet should refuse the required communication, to accept in lieu of it a solemn assurance, 'given on the king's royal word, and signified in writing,' that the treaty was in no respect injurious to his Britannic majesty's interests: this however was to be taken *ad referendum*, to be transmitted to the British court.

CHAP. II.

1761.

Before the arrival of this despatch, lord Bristol perceived a great alteration in general Wall's manner, and a considerable agitation in the Spanish councils: alarmed too by prevalent rumors of an approaching rupture, and apprehending the existence of some agreement to that effect between the courts of France and Spain, he applied to general Wall for an explicit avowal of his intentions: but the Spanish fleet, with its rich cargo, being now safely arrived in port, and the armies of France and her allies in Germany having attained to a certain degree of superiority, the minister's tone assumed a corresponding elevation. Instead of giving a specific answer, he recapitulated a list of complaints against England, accusing her of rejecting the reasonable concessions of France, with a view to ruin that power, if possible, and then to seize on the Spanish provinces in America. 'But,' added he, 'if his catholic majesty's dominions are to be overwhelmed, I shall advise him at least to arm his subjects, and not appear any longer as a passive victim.' It was in vain for lord Bristol to press the subject farther at this time; but in a subsequent conference, when Mr. Wall was less exasperated, he obtained from him an avowal that 'the king of Spain thought it time to open his eyes, and not to suffer an allied monarch and a relation to receive such injurious terms as had been prescribed to him by an insulting foe:' he also acknowledged that his catholic majesty had renewed his family compacts with France,

CHAP. II. but refused any explanation of their nature or extent.

1761.

It was not possible for the British cabinet, after having rejected Mr. Pitt's counsel, to receive this intelligence with indifference: the crisis in fact was at length arrived; and a despatch was forwarded to our ambassador, expressly requiring him to demand an immediate and categorical explanation of the intentions of the Spanish ministry; also explicitly to assure them, that any procrastination, ambiguity, or evasion, would be considered sufficient grounds for authorising his Britannic majesty to take proper measures for the honor of his crown and the protection of his subjects: at the same time lord Bristol was instructed not only to avoid all irritating expressions and harshness of manner; but even yet to accept the explanation *ad referendum*: but in case of a peremptory refusal to give satisfaction, or the acknowledgement of an intention to join France in hostilities against England, he was ordered to quit Madrid without delay, after having signified to Mr. Wall that such conduct could not be viewed by his Britannic majesty but as an aggression, or an absolute declaration of war.

Every conference between our ambassador and the Spanish minister, after this despatch, although accompanied with reciprocal assurances of friendly feelings, failed to produce any satisfactory adjustment of the question, or any specific declaration of Spanish designs. Soon afterwards Mr. Wall began even to assume a cold and formal manner, demanding proofs, not expressions of a pacific disposition, in the redress of long existing grievances; and affecting to consider it derogatory to his master's dignity to gratify British curiosity regarding the articles of a treaty. Still lord Bristol did not relax his endeavors: on the receipt of lord Egremont's last despatches, he solicited an interview with the minister, and obtained it on the fifth of December: but his hopes were as heretofore eluded, though an

opening was still apparently left for reconciliation : CHAP. II.  
he attempted to take advantage of this in a farther  
conference on the seventh ; but, failing then also, 1761.  
he put his interrogatories to Mr. Wall in the most  
decided manner, and demanded from him a cate-  
gorical answer : this or war was the alternative.

The minister was not quite prepared for such an  
appeal ; ‘ for I cannot describe,’ says lord Bristol,  
‘ the surprise Mr. Wall expressed.’ Taking advan-  
tage of this emotion, he again urged every argument  
that might induce Spain to prevent the miseries of  
war ; and, after setting forth the fatal consequences  
which must result from the denial of a satisfactory  
answer, he even pressed Mr. Wall to conquer the  
effects of an indisposition under which he was then  
laboring, so far as to wait on the king himself, with  
the British ambassador’s demand reduced to writing.  
In compliance with this suggestion, the minister did  
attend his catholic majesty with the proposed memo-  
rial ; but returned with an answer, throwing all the  
causes and intentions of hostility on the British  
cabinet, and intimating that the ambassador might  
depart when and in what manner he pleased.

An account of these transactions was transmitted  
by the Spanish court to its ambassador in London,  
the condé de Fuentes, with directions for him also to  
take his departure : before he obeyed these instruc-  
tions, however, he thought proper to publish a me-  
morial, setting forth the haughtiness and unmea-  
surable ambition of him who had lately held the  
reins of government, and who still appeared to hold  
them, though by another hand : he dilated also on  
the indignities offered to the Spanish court, which  
alone had prevented his catholic majesty from com-  
plying with the requisitions made to him ; and he  
finally declared that the obnoxious treaty had not  
any relation to the present war ; for that, although  
it contained an article for the mutual guarantee of  
the dominions of the two sovereigns, it specified that  
such guarantee should only extend to those posses-  
sions which might remain to France after the peace.

Mutual de-  
parture of  
the ambas-  
sadors.

CHAP. II. This attempt to create discord in the British cabinet and nation totally failed. The manifesto was answered by lord Egremont in a manner highly creditable to himself and his colleagues: it pointed out the irregularity and indecency of appealing to the people in a discussion between two sovereigns: it reprobated personal invective, as inconsistent with the dignity of the high personages concerned, and irrelevant to the subjects at issue: it confined itself to facts, and recited them with an accurate reference to dates and documents; specifying the instances of hostility evinced by Spain; demonstrating from these the progress of that hostility, with our temperate and repeated attempts at conciliation; and showing, lastly, that her mode of proceeding amounted virtually to a declaration of war.

1761.

Domestic events.

Before the close of this year his majesty completed the purchase of Buckingham-house for £21,000, and presented it to the queen, who immediately fitted it up, and ornamented it with some choice paintings from the royal collection. The intention of their majesties, in thus selecting a residence distinct from the official palace of St. James, was to retire from court etiquette to the enjoyment of domestic comfort and tranquillity, except when the forms of state required the assumption of royal ceremony. Some were found to censure this system, talking of Asiatic seclusion, and seeming to think that it would have been better, if the bustle and frivolity of an open court, like that of Versailles, had succeeded to the stiff German grandeur and formal card-parties of the two preceding reigns: but George III. had better taste and purer principles than to sanction by his example the prevalence of levity or licentiousness: he also rightly judged, that if he paid strict attention to the forms of government, and to public ceremonies,<sup>3</sup> when necessary, he had as good a right as any

<sup>3</sup> That he did so, and strove to render the forms of court etiquette as agreeable as was consistent with propriety, appears from the description by Horace Walpole of the levees at St. James's:—'The king himself,' says he, 'seems all good nature, and wishing to satisfy every body: all his speeches are obliging:

of his subjects to avail himself of British liberty, and pass his leisure hours agreeably to that sense of propriety which was entertained both by himself and by his royal consort. CHAP. II.  
1761.

During this year the grave closed over two distinguished prelates, and principal antagonists in the celebrated Bangorian controversy, bishops Hoadley and Sherlock. These learned men began the career of life together as literary rivals, at Catharine-hall, in the university of Cambridge: though they adopted opposite opinions respecting church and state, they both arrived at the episcopal bench: each was long considered, as it were, the representative of his respective party; Sherlock of the high church tories, Hoadley of the low church whigs: both however appeared equally attached to the Hanoverian succession. Sherlock succeeded Hoadley in the see of Bangor, and afterwards in that of Salisbury: but at last they diverged, the former to London, and the latter to Winchester. In this same year died Samuel Richardson, author of *Sir Charles Grandison*, and other novels, which delighted and instructed the age for which he wrote: also Dr. Stephen Hales, a learned divine and great natural philosopher, whose useful invention of ventilators will be a more lasting memorial of him, and of the services he rendered to society, than the monument erected to his memory in Westminster-abbey, by the princess-dowager of Wales, to whom he was clerk of the closet.

I saw him again yesterday, and was surprised to find the levee-room had lost so intirely the air of the lion's den. This sovereign don't stand in one spot, with his eyes royally fixed on the ground, and dropping bits of German news: he walks about, and speaks to every body. I saw him afterwards on the throne, where he is graceful and genteel, sits with dignity, and reads his answers to addresses well.

## CHAPTER III.

## GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1762.

Determination of the British cabinet—War declared against Spain—Proceedings in parliament—Combination of France and Spain against Portugal—Firmness of his Portuguese majesty—Proposals made to him; his reply, and rejection of them—Declaration of war by France and Spain—King of England's message to parliament—Subsidy voted for Portugal—King's speech on the adjournment of parliament—Motives of the duke of Newcastle for retiring from office—His noble conduct at resigning it—Lord Bute succeeds him—Other changes in administration—Duke of Newcastle forms a political connexion with the duke of Cumberland in opposition to ministers—State of the king's sentiments with regard to Prussia—Death of the empress Catharine—Effect of it on the affairs of Prussia—Measures which led to the refusal of the British subsidy to Frederic—His resentment—His operations in Germany—His danger from the change of affairs in Russia, and escape—His success against Austria—Operations on the side of Westphalia between prince Ferdinand and the French generals—Affairs of Portugal, and successful resistance to the Bourbon confederacy—English efforts by sea—Conquest of Martinique and other West Indian islands—St. John's in Newfoundland captured by the French, but retaken—Attempts against the Spanish West Indian commerce—Attack and capture of the Havannah—Capture of Manilla, and of the Santissima Trinidad in the East Indies; also of the *Hermione*—Failure of an expedition against Buenos Ayres—French and Spaniards incline to peace, and send to open negotiations—Views of the minister and of other parties on this subject—Preliminaries of peace settled between Great Britain, France, Spain, and Portugal—Birth of the prince of Wales—The king's encouragement of literature and the fine arts—Addresses on the birth of the young prince, &c.

War de-  
clared  
against  
Spain.

THE British cabinet, irritated by the prevarication of France, and forced into a contest with Spain, determined to carry on the war with spirit and perseverance; while the machine of government, put into



motion by the energy of Mr. Pitt, continued for a time its progress, by means of the impulse which it had acquired. A distinct account of the exertions that had been made to prevent a rupture with the Spanish court, and of the circumstances which rendered it unavoidable, was given in his majesty's declaration of the second of January; and on the fourth war was formally proclaimed. On the nineteenth parliament met after its adjournment; and the king informed both houses of the measures which he had been obliged to adopt during their recess.

The commons were unanimous in their approbation of his majesty's conduct, and assurances of vigorous support: the lords also agreed to an address containing similar sentiments; but the consideration of the king's speech occasioned a debate on the general conduct of the war, which elicited considerable differences of opinion. On the fifth of February a motion was made, reprobating the enormous expense of our German campaigns; affirming that, notwithstanding every effort, we never could maintain a sufficient number of men in that quarter to cope with the French armies; and recommending a recall of the British troops, for the security of our own dominions, and as a method of diminishing the public burdens. The motion was strongly opposed, and the previous question carried by a majority of 105 to sixteen: seven members however of the minority, and among them the duke of Bedford, a cabinet minister, entered a long and argumentative protest on the journals, expressive of dissent; and this document, added to the previous debate in the commons on the same subject, had a considerable effect on public opinion; whence it became evident, that unless the ensuing campaign should prove decisive, the necessary supplies for another would not be obtained without great difficulty.

In the house of commons the ablest supporter of the minister was Mr. Fox, who for political experience, and talent in debate, was superior to

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

every other member of the cabinet. During the present session, he had no particular opportunity of exercising his powers ; for no regular opposition was yet organised, and the measures of government were supported by the energetic eloquence of Mr. Pitt, who attacked none of their acts, and impugned none of their propositions, unless he was compelled to speak in vindication of his own policy. A few wise alterations were effected in the militia laws, by which an exact line was drawn between such persons as were liable to serve, and such as were exempt. Relief was also given to the public brewers, whose houses were threatened by tumultuous mobs in London, irritated by the additional duty imposed on beer. Among the private bills was one of great importance, enabling the duke of Bridgewater to extend his canal, so as to form a communication with Liverpool : branches of this great inland navigation have since been made, intersecting all the surrounding districts ; and the duke lived to benefit himself and his country in the completion of an undertaking, which, as far as public utility is concerned, is scarcely second to any in Europe.

Combina-  
tion  
against  
Portugal.

Soon after Spain had thrown herself into the arms of France, these two powers determined on a rupture with Portugal. France was particularly anxious to promote this design, for the double purpose of injuring Great Britain, and of inducing Spain to engage heartily in the war. As there was no pretence to justify such an aggression, so there was no attention paid even to appearances : large armies were assembled on the Portuguese frontiers, the exportation of corn from Spain was prohibited, and the ambassadors of the two allied powers presented a joint memorial to the king of Portugal ; in which, after insisting strongly on the maritime tyranny exercised by England over other nations, and their intention of curbing it, they requested his alliance and co-operation : not seeming to doubt his ready acquiescence in this request, they declared that their troops were assembled for the purpose of

garrisoning his fortresses against any danger from the naval armaments of Great Britain; and finally they allowed his majesty four days, to send in a categorical answer; after which period any farther deliberation on his part would be considered as a negative, and their troops would enter his dominions.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

On this trying occasion the firmness of king Joseph did not forsake him; but he remained true to his honor, and his old allies. To the insulting proposals of these pretended friends, he replied, that his resources were incapable of supporting a war: besides, that between Great Britain and his country there existed ancient and uninterrupted alliances; that his Britannic majesty had given him no offence; and he could not declare war against him consistently with any principles of integrity or justice: in this situation therefore he was determined to confine himself to a system of self-defence; and, by observing a strict neutrality, endeavor to reserve his exertions for the more happy task of mediating between friends whom he so highly esteemed.

In reply to these equitable propositions, their most catholic and christian majesties, on the first of April, sent to the court of Lisbon a second memorial, more imperious and unjustifiable than the first; in which it was denied that his alliance with England could be called one of defence: 'it must necessarily,' said they, 'be turned into an offensive one, from the situation of the Portuguese territory and the nature of the English power, which can scarcely be kept up by sea without the harbors and the wealth of Portugal.' They endeavored also to awaken his jealousy, by representing his country as bowed down beneath the yoke of England, and to claim his gratitude for their enabling him to shake it off.

Although his Portuguese majesty foresaw the consequences of rejecting the proposed alliance, he still maintained 'that the treaties of friendship and commerce subsisting between his country and Great

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

Declaration  
of war  
against  
Portugal by  
France and  
Spain.

Britain were not only innocent, but ratified by the laws of God and of nations.' He exhorted his opponents to consider what a state public safety and public morals would be reduced to, if such an example of injustice should be generally adopted. He declared that he was determined to preserve the strictest neutrality; but, if that neutrality should be attacked, and his kingdom invaded, he would endeavor to repel hostilities with his own forces, aided by those of his allies. The consequence of this noble declaration was, that France and Spain withdrew their ambassadors from the court of Lisbon, and issued a joint declaration of war against Portugal.

It was just before the conclusion of this negotiation, that his Britannic majesty, on the eleventh of May, ordered the following message to be laid before the house of commons:—'His majesty, relying on the known zeal and affection of his faithful commons, and considering that in this conjuncture emergencies may arise, which may be of the utmost importance, and be attended with the most pernicious consequences, if proper means should not be immediately applied to prevent or defeat them; and his majesty also taking into his most serious consideration the imminent danger with which the kingdom of Portugal, an ancient and natural ally of his crown, is threatened by the powers now in open war with his majesty, and of what importance the preservation of that kingdom is to the commercial interests of this country;—is desirous that the house would enable him to defray any extraordinary expenses of the war incurred, or to be incurred, for the service of the year 1762; and to take all such measures as may be necessary to disappoint or defeat any enterprises or designs of his enemies against his majesty or his allies.'

This message was taken into consideration on the thirteenth; and the house, after a short debate, in which Mr. Pitt spoke with great animation and consistency in favor of our ancient ally, concurred

in granting to his majesty £1,000,000 for the purposes therein specified.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

Both houses sat a short time longer, in order to complete the business before them; and on the second of June they adjourned, after a speech from the king, expressing great approbation of the zeal, unanimity, and despatch, which had distinguished their proceedings. Adhering still to his resolution of carrying on the war for the sole purpose of obtaining peace on just and honorable conditions, he noticed the happy turn given to the affairs of his ally, the king of Prussia, by the death of the Russian empress; the concerns of Spain and Portugal; and the important conquests lately made by the British arms in the West Indies. After some other topics relating to the public burdens, and his determination to economise the resources of his country as far as was consistent with its safety and honor, he dismissed them, expressing a strong hope that the members of both houses would continue to diffuse throughout the several counties that spirit of concord which they themselves had so constantly exhibited in parliament.

This concluding portion of the king's speech was supposed to have a reference to the growing discontent of the people, on account of some recent changes in administration. Since the retirement of Mr. Pitt from office, a want of unanimity had been felt in the cabinet. The duke of Newcastle, its nominal head, as already has been observed, entered public life, and passed through a long career of office, steadily and uniformly supporting that great aristocratic combination, which the earl of Bute was desirous to weaken or dissolve, as encroaching too far on the independence of the sovereign. To his promised exertions in accomplishing a design that corresponded to the sentiments of the royal breast, the favor experienced by this minister was generally ascribed; which, galling as it was to the rest of the cabinet, particularly annoyed that ancient servant of the crown, the duke of Newcastle.

Dissen-  
sions in the  
cabinet.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

Scarcely reconciled to the ascendancy of Mr. Pitt himself, he could not endure to be thought second to lord Bute, or to be thwarted by him in that line of conduct, which his own principles had dictated, and the wisdom of Mr. Pitt had sanctioned. As soon therefore as lord Bute's determination to withdraw the British subsidy from the king of Prussia, as the readiest means of forcing that monarch into a peace, became known to the cabinet, the duke waited on the favorite, and in a peremptory manner insisted on £2,000,000 being appropriated to the payment of his subsidy, and the prosecution of the continental war. When his lordship expressed a decided repugnance to this proposal, the other immediately declared his intention of retiring from office, unless it were conceded: to this intimation lord Bute dryly replied, 'that if he resigned, the peace might be retarded;' but he never requested him to continue in office, or said a civil thing to him afterwards while they remained together. His grace went immediately to St. James's, demanded an audience, and announced his unalterable resolution to relinquish his station if the subsidy to Prussia was not continued: the king replied, 'that he should regret such a determination, because he was persuaded that the duke wished well to his service;' and thus ended the interview.

Resigna-  
tion of the  
duke of  
Newcastle.

The duke's resignation followed this conference, on the second of May; and nothing in the long exercise of his power ever became that veteran statesman so much as the manner in which he quitted it; for when he was offered a pension, as a debt due for past services, and the great detriment which his private fortune had sustained from his uniform zeal for the house of Hanover, he resolutely declined all such remuneration, with this reply;—'that if he could no longer be permitted to serve his country, he was at least determined not to be a burden on it:'

<sup>4</sup> 'You will undoubtedly lament with me,' says lord Barrington to Mr. Mitchell, 'that the duke of Newcastle should retire from business at such a juncture; but if you knew the whole, you would not condemn the step he has taken,

that if his private fortune had suffered by his loyalty, it was his pleasure, his glory, and his pride; and that he desired no reward but his majesty's approbation.'

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

Lord Bute succeeded him at the head of the treasury, taking the reins of government with almost as little experience as Phæton, and meeting with a fall almost as soon. Mr. George Grenville was appointed secretary of state, but soon afterwards exchanged his post with the earl of Halifax, who had left Ireland to succeed lord Anson at the head of the admiralty. Lord Barrington was removed from his office, and appointed treasurer of the navy; being succeeded in the exchequer by Sir Francis Dashwood. The duke of Devonshire no long time afterwards resigned, or, as some accounts say, was dismissed, from the post of lord high chamberlain; his name being struck by the king off the list of privy counsellors: even the earl of Hardwicke retired altogether from public business. Many of the duke's friends retained their places, or accepted others; but several noblemen and commoners of distinction now ranged themselves in the ranks of opposition.

Lord Bute  
prime mi-  
nister.

During this summer, the duke of Newcastle adhered to his determination of not opposing the government; he also professed an earnest desire for peace; but he did not conceal from his friend lord Barrington an inclination to accept the privy seal, if lord Hardwicke were, at the same time, made president of the council: a hint of this was properly conveyed to lord Bute; who, though he appeared pleased at the proposal, deferred moving in it till it was too late: about the end of August therefore his grace of Newcastle began to form a political connexion with the duke of Cumberland; a measure, of all others least expected; for they had always been opposed to each other, with a certain degree of contempt on one side, and of fear on the other.<sup>5</sup>

and taken with moderation, temper, and dignity.'—Ellis's Original Letters, second series, vol. iv. p. 446.

<sup>5</sup> Political Life of Lord Barrington, p. 75.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

Changes in  
continental  
policy.

At the conclusion of the last campaign, we left Frederic the Great struggling with an apparently inexorable destiny: his circumstances were in so low a condition as to excite the commiseration of his Britannic majesty, and incline him to recommend to parliament a renewal of the subsidy, and a prosecution of the German war: but when a contest with Spain was resolved on, and a defence of Portugal anticipated, the Prussian monarch received a forcible admonition from the British court to open negotiations for peace at Vienna: he was even requested to communicate confidentially to the British ministry the terms on which he would be willing to treat; and was promised all the assistance which they could give, in seconding him: besides, he was urged to explain the ground of his hope, if he entertained any at all, of successfully resisting the powers by which he was opposed. Frederic treated these applications with contemptuous neglect; but the king of England, though he complained of such silence, still retained a disposition to renew the subsidy, until an event occurred, which, by rescuing the Prussian monarchy from the principal danger that impended over it, placed its sovereign in a totally different position with regard to his British allies: this was the sudden death of his inveterate foe, the empress of Russia, who was succeeded by her nephew, Peter III. With Elizabeth expired that national antipathy which she had encouraged against the king of Prussia: the new sovereign in his early youth had visited the court of Berlin; and, struck with the discipline of the Prussian army, had conceived an enthusiastic admiration of Frederic, which was raised almost to adoration by the splendid successes, the unshaken fortitude, and the heroism of that extraordinary man.<sup>6</sup>

Death of the  
empress of  
Russia.

On his accession therefore to the Russian throne, he avowed this attachment without reserve; inveighed against the ingratitude shown by Maria

<sup>6</sup> Coxe's House of Austria, vol. iii. p. 472.



Theresa towards England ; and stigmatised his predecessor for having lavished so much blood and treasure to exalt a rival and depress a friend : nor did he stop here ; but immediately concluded a peace and even an alliance with Prussia, restoring all conquests made by the Russian armies, and transferring those very armies to the service of Frederic, to act against allies with whom they had so lately been associated. At this time, Sweden also, which power had been chiefly influenced by Russia in her hostility to Frederic, made peace with him, and thus left him free to contend with Austria single-handed ; since prince Ferdinand was quite a match for the French generals on the side of Westphalia.

At an early stage of these transactions Frederic was prepared to expect difficulties on the side of England : but her refusal of pecuniary succor was not resolved on till an armistice had been concluded between him and the Russian emperor, and it became extremely probable that Sweden would accede to a similar measure : there were however some additional causes of dissatisfaction on both sides : by the ministers of Great Britain it was asserted, that from the moment of Peter's accession, the conduct of Frederic toward this country began to manifest symptoms of an unfriendly reserve, while he clandestinely entered into negotiations with the czar, the object of which was detrimental to the interests of Great Britain, and prejudicial to her engagements with Denmark.<sup>7</sup> The Prussian monarch, on the other hand, accused the British minister of making secret overtures to the czar, and to the empress-queen, respecting a separate peace, and of proposing even to compel Frederic's accession to their terms : he complained to the king himself on this subject ; and lord Bute, by his majesty's command, explicitly disavowed the fact.

<sup>7</sup> The intention of this treaty is said to have been, that Peter should guarantee to the king of Prussia the duchy of Silesia ; in return for which Frederic was to assure to him the possession of Sleswick.—Adolphus's History of George III. vol. i. p. 18.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

There is no reason to believe that the king of England or his minister was guilty of such a piece of treachery towards an ally: neither, with regard to the principal point in question, the refusal of the subsidy, does it appear that Great Britain was bound under all circumstances to continue it. At an early period of the war Frederic himself had stated to Mr. Mitchell, the British envoy at his court, who officially communicated the intelligence to lord Holderness, that if England would but engage to secure him from the attack of Russia, he should have so little need of assistance, that he might even spare troops for the defence of Hanover. At this time then, not only had a new and powerful enemy started up against England, but Frederic had converted his mightiest foe into his warmest friend; and while the defence of Portugal was added to the burdens of Great Britain, the force of Sweden was withdrawn from the confederacy against Prussia. Besides, although it was the interest of England not to allow Frederic to be overwhelmed, she had none in promoting his ambition: the war in Germany was henceforth to be carried on, not for the purpose of supporting him, but of opposing France. As a question therefore of policy, the withholding of the subsidy at this stage of the business could scarcely have been censured, unless at the same time England had made a separate peace, or had withdrawn her troops from the defence of Prussia, on the side of Westphalia: protected there, Frederic was quite equal to combat Austria, deserted by her allies, whom he had long defied when she was so powerfully assisted. Of all men living too, he had least reason to complain of this slight infraction of a treaty, even if it could be so called; for his dissolution of alliances, in the late war of the Austrian succession, was a matter of astonishment and disgust to all Europe: still his complaints were loud, as his resentment was lasting; and his constant aim, in which to a certain extent he ultimately succeeded, was the injury of a nation, to which, above all others, he was indebted for the preservation of his throne.

Profiting by the favorable circumstances above related, the Prussian monarch began his operations in Silesia, and directed his attention particularly to the recovery of Schweidnitz; being aided in these designs by his gallant brother prince Henry, who had gained an important battle near Freyburg, and completely changed the face of affairs in Saxony. But while the king was carrying on, with his accustomed spirit, that bold series of manœuvres which unexpected events enabled him to pursue, he was threatened with a sudden reverse of fortune.

Peter III., by an extreme fondness for innovation, which extended itself to objects unimportant in themselves, though deeply rooted in the minds of a superstitious and bigoted people, had so alienated from himself the affections of his subjects, that an extensive conspiracy to dethrone him was formed and consolidated, before he knew that the first step had been taken: Catharine, his wife, a woman of powerful understanding and boundless ambition, irritated by the ill treatment she had experienced from her husband, and discovering the existence of such a plot, immediately headed it, and with great skill and courage directed it to her own purposes: having gained over the imperial guards, she quickly procured the deposition of Peter, and the acknowledgement of herself as an independent sovereign: this act being seconded by the nobility and clergy, she marched at the head of her troops, apprehended her husband at one of his country houses, intimidated him so far as to make him sign an act of abdication, declaring his incapacity for government, and then threw him into prison. It has often been observed that there is but a short passage from a throne to the grave: Peter III. died after a few days' confinement, of what was called a hæmorrhoidal colic.

Catharine, when she ascended the throne of the czars, withdrew her troops from Silesia into Poland, fearing lest Frederic might persuade them to declare against her usurpation: but he prudently determined to offer no opposition to her projects. It was

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

thought also that she would have renewed hostilities with the Prussian monarch; for her subjects were highly incensed against him, under the supposition that the late emperor had, by his suggestions, instituted and pursued a system of innovation; nor was Catharine herself without suspicion, that some portion of the ill treatment she had received might be referred to the same source: in the first manifesto therefore of the new empress, he was designated as 'the most dangerous enemy of Russia:' scarcely however had this harsh sentence been promulgated, when she had an opportunity of perusing Frederic's correspondence with her late husband, found among his papers: she then discovered not only that he had given his imperial friend the wisest and best advice on all public matters, cautioning him against rash innovations, and blaming him for wantonly insulting the prejudices of his subjects; but that he had also counselled him to behave well to herself; conjuring him, if he could not treat her with tenderness, at least to show her that respect which was due to her station and merit. Catharine, it is said, was moved even to tears at the discovery: she made known the contents of these letters to the principal persons of her court, who readily acknowledged the injustice of their suspicions; and she determined on adhering to the treaty existing with the Prussian sovereign: nevertheless, her troops were withdrawn from his army, and she resolved to abstain from actual warfare; not wishing, at so early a period of her reign, to provoke the hostility of Austria.

Although this change of an offensive alliance to one of mere neutrality, made a considerable difference in the king of Prussia's prospects, yet his present escape from the hostility of so powerful an antagonist was even more wonderful than his former deliverance: the subtraction of so great a force from his adversaries was rightly considered by Frederic as an accession of strength to himself; and as all his strong places, which had cost the Russians so much blood, were faithfully restored to him, he proceeded in his

campaign with such spirit and vigor, that he recovered Schweidnitz, and eventually all Silesia : he then turned his attention toward Saxony, reinforced his brother's army in that electorate, and projected the occupation of Dresden. These demonstrations, added to another great victory gained by prince Henry near the scene of his former success at Freyburg, so dispirited Austria, that she agreed to a cessation of hostilities for Saxony and Silesia. In consequence of this impolitic step, one part of the Prussian army broke into Bohemia, and advanced to the very gates of Prague ; while another fell on the same country from a different quarter, and laid great part of the town of Egra in ashes : some parties penetrated into the heart of Franconia, and even as far as Suabia, ravaging the country, exacting heavy contributions, and spreading ruin and dismay on all sides ; insomuch that many princes and states were reduced to the necessity of signing treaties of neutrality, to save their realms from total ruin ; nor did they see any prospect of being able to furnish their contingents for another campaign under the imperial standard.

The allied British and German forces contended with the French on the same scene which they had occupied for the two preceding campaigns. The army under prince Ferdinand, amounting to 100,000 men, in the best possible state of discipline, first took the field, though the enemy had been augmented so as to retain his usual superiority of numbers : but marshal Broglio had been recalled, and the army of the Weser given to his rival, the prince of Soubise ; under whom marshal d'Etrées was appointed second in command ; that of the Lower Rhine being committed to the prince of Condé. To check this latter, the hereditary prince was stationed with a strong detachment at Munster ; while prince Ferdinand in person, with the main body, lay behind the Dymel to watch the former, and, if possible, deprive them of their Hessian conquests. The French had chosen their ground very judi-

Operations  
in West-  
phalia.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

ciously : their centre occupied an advantageous eminence ; the left wing was almost inaccessible by reason of deep ravines ; and the right was covered by the village of Grabenstein, several rivulets, and a large detachment under M. Castries, one of their best officers : in this position they never imagined that an attack could be made on them ; but prince Ferdinand was determined to take advantage of this security ; and having made all necessary preparations with judgment, celerity, and good order, he suddenly assaulted them in front, flank, and rear. The right wing under M. Castries retreated without much loss ; but the rest of the army, after suffering considerably, would have been totally routed, had not M. Stainville, who commanded on the left, gallantly thrown himself, with the flower of the French infantry, into a wood, and thereby arrested the career of the victors. All except two battalions of this devoted band were slain or taken prisoners ; but the other bodies, covered by its bold manœuvre, made a precipitate retreat across the Fulda, and took shelter under the cannon of Cassel. The English, under the marquis of Granby, particularly distinguished themselves against the left wing of the French : lieutenant-colonel Townshend fell in the action, with great honor to himself, and to the regret of the whole army.

This action, from which the French never recovered during the campaign, was but a prelude to a series of bold and masterly enterprises, which so harassed the prince of Soubise, that he was obliged to call the army of the Lower Rhine to his assistance : resolved however not to hazard a general engagement before its arrival, he quitted his strong post on the heights of Mulsingen, fell back behind the Fulda, and left Cassel uncovered, though not defenceless ; having thrown into it a garrison of 10,000 men. Prince Ferdinand however without loss of time began the siege, from which he was not deterred, even by the defeat of the hereditary prince at Johannsburg, in which he was wounded, and lost

3000 men. After a variety of efforts made by the French armies to relieve Cassel, they were obliged to abandon it to its fate; and the surrender of this important place closed a campaign which had been both glorious and important to the allies.

Invasion of  
Portugal by  
France and  
Spain.

But these events in Germany were not more interesting to Great Britain than others which occurred on a smaller and less splendid field. France and Spain having determined to follow up their menaces by an invasion of his Portuguese majesty's dominions, his ambassador explained to our ministry the alarming situation of that monarch, presenting at the same time a formal request of succor, according to treaties existing between the two countries: he also expressed a wish that a number of experienced British officers should be sent over, to train and command the Portuguese troops, which had been long disused to warlike service. The magnanimity that had been displayed by the king of Portugal called forth corresponding sentiments in the king, the ministry, and the people of Great Britain; and it was determined to support the weakness of their ally with all the resources of this mighty kingdom. As a preliminary step, lord Tyrawley, a nobleman of high military talents, who also acted as ambassador, was sent to examine the state of the Portuguese forces, and to give his advice respecting the best disposal of them: the British auxiliaries, consisting of 8000 troops drawn from Belleisle and Ireland, were to be placed under his command. Notwithstanding the great accomplishments of this nobleman as a statesman and general, his haughty and quick temper totally disqualified him for the service on which he was employed: having taken offence at the Portuguese ministers for their inactivity in the execution of his designs, he sent violent complaints to England, and declared that the war between Spain and Portugal was a mere collusion to dupe the British government: in consequence of this he was recalled, and the command of the forces committed to the count de la Lippe Buckeburg, an active and intelligent

CHAP. III. officer, who had commanded the artillery under prince Ferdinand.

1762.

Ill success  
of the inva-  
ders.

The French, who despaired of attaining their avowed object, the exclusion of the English from the Portuguese harbors, by naval operations, attempted it by military force; and directed their principal endeavors against Oporto and Lisbon: for this purpose they made three inroads, one north, another south, and a third, for the sake of communication between the two former, into the middle provinces. The marquis de Sarria headed the first army, and, penetrating the north-east angle of Portugal, laid siege to Miranda: the fortifications of this town being ruined by the accidental explosion of a powder magazine, it became an easy conquest: still less opposition was met with at Braganza, where the keys of the city were presented to the Spanish commander as soon as he appeared: Moncorvo surrendered in the same manner: count O'Reiley marched into Chaves; and by these successes the marquis gained possession of almost all the province of Tra los Montes: Oporto was considered almost lost; and transports were prepared to carry off the effects of the British factory: in attempting, however, to cross the Douro, the Spaniards were repulsed; and the inhabitants, assisted by some English officers with a reinforcement of regular troops, drove them back to Torre de Moncorvo. The army which took the central route having entered the province of Beira, at the villages Val de la Mula and Val de Coelha were joined by a force almost equalling the whole army in Tra los Montes; and immediately besieged Almeida, the strongest place on the Portuguese frontiers, and of the utmost importance from its central situation, and the facility which its possession would give to the grand project of the invaders, in their attempt on Lisbon: the trenches were opened on the twenty-fifth of July; on the following day the besiegers were reinforced by 8000 French auxiliaries; and the garrison capitulated on the twenty-fifth of August. The invading forces, after this conquest, spread



themselves over the whole territory of Castel Branco, a principal district of the province of Beira, and proceeded southwards till they approached the Tagus. These alarming successes however were not of long duration: the disputes of lord Tyrawley with the Portuguese ministers had prevented the allies from acting in perfect concert; but after his recall, and the appointment of the count de la Lippe, affairs took a more favorable aspect. This excellent officer was accompanied by one of the princes of Mecklenburg Strelitz, brother to the queen of England: the generals next in command were the earl of Loudon, a man of great experience, and lieutenant-general Townshend, who had served with high reputation in America; the subordinates were lord George Lennox, and the brigadier-generals Crawford and Burgoyne, officers of well-known merit. The Spanish corps destined to invade the south of Portugal assembled on the frontiers of Estremadura, intending to advance into the province of Alentejo: the count de la Lippe, however, aware of the necessity of preventing, if possible, their entrance into Portugal, resolved to attack an advanced party of them in Valencia d'Alcantara, a frontier town; and the conduct of this enterprise was committed to brigadier-general Burgoyne, who effected a complete surprise of the enemy on the twenty-seventh of August, and took prisoner the Spanish general, as he was preparing to march into Alentejo.

This seemed to have been for some time the destination, not only of the troops under the captured general, but also of those which had hitherto occupied Beira, a rough mountainous country, where cavalry could be of little service: to prevent the entrance therefore of the Bourbon army from any side into Alentejo, was an object of high importance. General Burgoyne, by his incursion into the Spanish territories, had already prevented it in one quarter; and the vigilant activity of the same excellent officer had no small share in preventing it in the other.

That part of the enemy's army which acted in

CHAP. the district of Castel Branco had secured several  
 III. important passes, from which they drove some Por-  
 1762. tuguese forces; and though, in an attack on the rear  
 of the combined army, they suffered a repulse, they  
 yet continued masters of the country; and nothing  
 remained but the passage of the Tagus, to prevent  
 them from taking up their quarters in Alentejo.  
 General Burgoyne, who was posted with a view to  
 obstruct them, lay within sight of a detached camp  
 of their cavalry, near a village called Villa Velha:  
 observing that the enemy kept no strict guard in  
 this position, and also that they were uncovered on  
 their rear and flanks, he conceived a plan of attack-  
 ing them by surprise: he confided the execution of  
 this enterprise to colonel Lee, who turned their  
 camp, fell on their rear by night, dispersed the  
 whole party with great slaughter, and destroyed  
 their magazines; while Burgoyne supported him by  
 a feigned attack in another quarter, which prevented  
 the adjacent posts from sending any relief.

Liberation  
 of Portugal.

The season being now far advanced, the enemy,  
 destitute of strong places, as well as of magazines  
 for the subsistence of cavalry, retreated to the fron-  
 tiers of their own country, where they might pro-  
 cure supplies, and avoid the harassing efforts of the  
 combined army. Thus was Portugal saved by the  
 valor of English soldiers and their commanders,  
 under the wise conduct of the count de la Lippe;<sup>a</sup>  
 and thus did the insolent menaces of the Bourbon  
 confederacy end in its own disappointment and con-  
 fusion.

But in her expeditions by sea the success of Eng-  
 land was even more conspicuous; and the con-  
 quests effected by the joint energies of her naval

<sup>a</sup> It was not empty praise alone which repaid the success of this able com-  
 mander. The following were among the presents made to him by his Por-  
 tuguese majesty. Six pieces of small artillery, of massive gold, very curiously  
 wrought, with his excellency's arms on each: the carriages were made of Brazil  
 wood, plated with silver, and the wheels of silver gilt: a diamond star for his  
 order of the black eagle: a curious chest, which, on opening, was found to con-  
 tain cash to the amount of £80,000: his majesty's picture set in diamonds, and  
 a complete set of diamond buckles.—See Gentleman's Magazine, A. D. 1764.  
 p. 496.

and military heroes testified the great powers of that minister, whose spirit, though he was no longer at the helm, seemed still to direct and animate her counsels. He laid the plans; he collected the forces; his energetic mind imparted to them that heroic impulse, which rendered their attempts so eminently successful.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

The French West Indian islands were the first object of attack; and the squadron designed for this service, consisting of eighteen ships of the line under admiral Rodney, with 10,000 land forces under general Monckton, sailed from Barbados on the fifth of January, against Martinique, the principal of the French Leeward Islands. A landing having been effected, without any loss, except that of the *Raisonnable* man of war, through the ignorance of her pilot, the army advanced against Fort Royal, a strong town with a citadel, and extensive batteries erected on two commanding heights, named Morne Garnier, and Morne Tortenson: the latter of these they attacked and carried with irresistible impetuosity: but as the former was equally strong, and commanded the other, three days were considered necessary to make preparations for the assault. During this time, the enemy in full force descended from the heights, and assailed the advanced posts of the British; but the main body, rushing forward to their support, repulsed the assailants, pursued them past some ravines, ascended the hill, and obtained complete possession of the works: on the fourth of February the town and citadel capitulated: the governor-general, M. de la Touche, retired to St. Pierre, the capital of the island, seemingly prepared for a stout resistance: but on the tenth, when general Monckton was about to embark his troops for an attack on that city, the French, intimidated by preceding events, sent deputies with proposals for a capitulation, which were freely accepted. The reduction of Martinique was followed by a surrender of its dependent islands, comprising Grenada and the Grenadines, St. Lucia,

Conquest  
of French  
West In-  
dian is-  
lands.

CHAP. St. Vincent, and Tobago; and thus the possession  
 III. of all the Caribbee isles was transferred to Great  
 Britain.

1762.

To counterbalance these losses, the French made only one temporary conquest, that of St. John's, the capital of Newfoundland; where they captured a sloop of war and some merchant vessels, destroyed the stages for curing fish, and did in other respects considerable damage. Orders were immediately sent out to reconquer the place; but Sir Jeffery Amherst had anticipated them, by despatching thither lord Colville and colonel Amherst from Halifax, who soon expelled the invaders.

When the co-operation of Spain in this war was sought by France, a powerful inducement was held out to her in the prospect of a successful attack on Portugal: but while England felt that she had the means of preventing success in that quarter, she had also the consolation to know that the rich colonial possessions of Spain lay within her grasp; and that by the superiority of her navy she could cripple the resources of her new antagonist, and disappoint the hopes of her ancient enemy.

Capture of  
 the Ha-  
 vannah.

The British administration therefore prepared to strike a severe blow against the commerce of Spain; and as the navigation and trade of her West Indian islands centred in the Havannah, where her galleons and flota were accustomed to assemble before they sailed for Europe, it was determined to attack this stronghold of her transatlantic dominions: a powerful armament was accordingly prepared early in the year; and the expedition sailed from Portsmouth on the fifth of March, under the command of general lord Albemarle and admiral Pocock. Being joined off Hispaniola by a part of the squadron which was returned from the conquest of Martinique, the whole fleet, consisting of nineteen ships of the line with numerous transports, avoiding a long and circuitous passage, boldly ran through the perilous straits of Bahama, and without the slightest accident or interruption arrived before the

Havannah<sup>9</sup> on the fifth of June. A landing was effected on the seventh. CHAP.  
III.

1762.

They found the narrow entrance of the spacious harbor defended on the eastern side by a fort, on a projecting point of land, called the Moro, considered impregnable; and by one called Puntal on the west, connected with the town; which itself was surrounded by a small rampart and a deep ditch. In addition to this, a Spanish fleet, consisting of twenty sail, mostly of the line, was in the harbor, and assisted in making able dispositions for the defence of the city; the harbor being protected by a strong boom, behind which several ships were sunk. The army, when disembarked, was divided into two corps; the chief body being appointed to act against Fort Moro, while the other advanced southward, to cover the besiegers, and cut off all intercourse between the city and the country. A detachment, under colonel Howe, was posted to the westward, in order to create a diversion, and intercept all communication with the country on that side.

Notwithstanding this masterly disposition of the British forces, the difficulties attending the siege appeared insurmountable. The earth was so thin, that to cover their approaches, the besiegers used bags of cotton, being part of the cargo of some Jamaica ships in the squadron of Sir James Douglas: the supply of water was so scanty and precarious, that they were obliged to depend on the shipping for this necessary article: the labor of forming roads too for the artillery was so great, as to cause the death of many from fatigue: but such was the spirit and unanimity of this brave army, that in spite of all difficulties and dangers, batteries were raised to assail the fort and shipping; the Spaniards, 15,000 in number, were repulsed in a desperate sally; and

<sup>9</sup> Though not the capital, yet this is the most important town of Cuba, the largest island in the West Indies, running from east to west about 900 miles in length; irregular in breadth, but at an average of about 100 miles.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

three British men of war brought their guns to bear on the Moro ; but, as it was impossible to assault that fort from the sea without being exposed to the fire of Puntal, these were soon forced to retire; While the contest was carried on with great spirit and perseverance, the principal British battery, which was composed of wood, took fire, and was unfortunately consumed : sickness rendered one half of the land forces, and 3000 seamen, unfit for duty, and by this means doubled the fatigue of the other ; beside which, the want of good water and fresh provisions increased their disorders, and aggravated their sufferings : still not a murmur was heard, nor any relaxation of exertion perceived. At length a lodgment in the covered way was effected, after the cannon of the fort had been silenced, and the upper works destroyed. At this time a supply of provisions from Jamaica, and a strong reinforcement of men from New York, raised their spirits to the highest pitch ; when a new difficulty appeared, from an immense ditch cut chiefly in the solid rock : a thin ridge, however, had been left to flank it toward the sea ; which, though intirely uncovered, the miners passed with safety : thenceforth they were able to carry on their operations against the walls ; their mines were sprung, a great part of the ruins fell into the ditch, and a breach was reported practicable : orders were accordingly given to storm the fort, and this dangerous enterprise was hailed by the British troops as a joyful termination to their labors. They immediately mounted the ramparts and rushed into the breach : the enemy made a brave but ineffectual stand ; the marquis de Gonzales, who was second in command, fell as he was endeavoring to rally his troops ; and Don Lewis de Velasco, the valiant governor, collecting a small body of men round the standard, determined to defend it to the last : but he saw his little band slaughtered or dispersed, and was killed by a random shot, while in the act of presenting his sword to the conquerors. Fort Moro then remained in possession of the British, who lost

no time in improving this important advantage. A second reinforcement being now arrived, the fire of the conquered fortress was turned against the enemy; a line of batteries was erected on the heights where it stood; and another on the western side of the city. Lord Albemarle, when every thing was prepared, summoned the governor to surrender; but having received a firm refusal, he opened a tremendous fire from all the batteries, which, after six hours, compelled the enemy to hang out a flag of truce: this led to a capitulation; and the British troops took possession of the Havannah on the fourteenth of August, after a siege of two months and nine days. This conquest was the most important exploit of the war: a richer one has rarely been made. Nine sail of the line and four frigates were taken in the harbor, two were destroyed on the stocks, and three had previously been sunk by the enemy; while the treasure in ready money, and valuable merchandise belonging to the Spanish king, amounted to near £3,000,000 sterling. The garrison, reduced to 700 men, received all the honors of war, and were safely conveyed to Europe.

Nor was it in the western hemisphere only that fortune was adverse to his most catholic majesty. As soon as intelligence of the war reached the East Indies, an armament was fitted out at Madras under the command of admiral Cornish and Sir William Draper, for an expedition against Luconia, the principal of the Philippine islands. The force, consisting of 2300 troops, Europeans and Indians, and despatched on board a squadron of nine ships of the line and frigates, was disembarked on the twenty-fourth of September, and marched against Manilla, the capital of the island; for the defence of which, 10,000 of the natives had been added to a garrison of 800 men. During the progress of the siege some daring attempts were made to impede the advance of the works, but the assailants were repelled with great slaughter. A strong body of Indians, in the service of the colonists, made a desperate sally, and

Manilla  
taken by  
the British.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

fought with almost incredible ferocity: they ran furiously on the ranks of the besiegers; and many of them died, like wild beasts, gnawing with their teeth the bayonets by which they were transfixed. At length, a breach was effected in the enemy's works, but no proposal of capitulation, no offer of surrender, was heard: the garrison awaited the result in sullen despair; the place was taken by storm, and for some time exposed to the ravages of a merciless soldiery, while the governor, archbishop, and magistrates retired into the citadel. This however being in no condition of defence, a capitulation ensued, by which the city and port of Manilla, with several ships, and the military stores, were surrendered to the king: but a ransom of 4,000,000 dollars for all private property was offered and accepted. This important conquest was achieved with very little loss to the British; but the fruits of it did not terminate here: in consequence of information acquired from some letters which fell into the hands of the captors, two ships were despatched from the British squadron to intercept the rich galleon *Philippina*: and though they missed their expected prize, they took the *Santissima Trinidad*, an *Acapulco* ship, with a cargo valued at 3,000,000 dollars. While the resources of Spain were thus effectually destroyed in either India, her immediate supplies were intercepted in Europe, by the capture of the *Hermione*, bound from Peru to Cadiz, which surrendered to two English frigates near Cape St. Vincent: the treasure in specie and valuable effects, contained in this vessel, amounted to more than £1,000,000 sterling.

Unsuccessful attack on Buenos Ayres.

The only attempt against the Spanish possessions which did not succeed, was a joint expedition sent out by Great Britain and Portugal against the settlement of Buenos Ayres; and its failure was owing to an unfortunate accident which could scarcely have been prevented by human foresight. The troops destined for this service were embarked, in the Tagus, on board three frigates and some smaller



armed vessels, under the command of captain Macnamara; and on the second of November they arrived at the mouth of the river Plata: but no sooner had they entered that mighty stream, than they encountered a dreadful storm with terrific thunder and lightning; and were also greatly embarrassed with the shoals and dangerous navigation of the channel. The Spaniards also were well prepared to receive them, and had so far anticipated the attack, as to have taken possession of a strong Portuguese fortress, called Nova Colonia, the recovery of which it was first determined to attempt. An English pilot undertook to carry the ships within pistol-shot of the principal battery; and after a vigorous cannonade of four hours, the guns of the fort were nearly silenced, when the Commodore was perceived to be in flames; and while these were raging, the distress of the crew was augmented by a renewal of the enemy's fire. The scene of horror was indescribable; in the terror and confusion that ensued, the unfortunate commander was drowned; and of 340 souls only seventy escaped the flames and waves. The other vessels were obliged to retire, after suffering much damage; but the Spaniards, with characteristic humanity, succored and relieved the unfortunate men who were driven ashore, and forgot their hostile intentions in the calamity by which they had been frustrated.

Thus did the operations of war contribute to augment the glory of England, while they humbled the pride and confounded the designs of the Bourbon confederacy. France, disconcerted in her views of dictating the law to her ancient antagonist, now entertained in good earnest those pacific inclinations which some time before she had merely professed. Spain also, having suffered tremendous losses during the short period of hostilities, became anxious to avoid those greater calamities, which she saw impending over her colonies, and which must eventually ruin the mother country. As every day brought to both these powers intelligence of fresh

Negotiations for peace.

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

disasters, they did not wait the issue of all the enterprises above described ; but early in September sent to open negotiations for peace. Happily for themselves, they found the cabinet of Great Britain sincerely disposed to meet their overtures, and to treat with them on terms of justice and liberality.

These views of the minister were so far seconded by the nation, that most parties, though elevated by success, were not so intoxicated by it, as to prefer an expensive and hazardous continuance of hostilities to an honorable and satisfactory termination of them. One body of men however were particularly disinclined to pacific sentiments, because they largely profited by the maritime war which had been so successfully prosecuted. During the negotiations of last year, the city of London instructed its representatives to oppose any peace which did not reserve to England all, or greater part, of her conquests : and if such were its opinions and pretensions then, it was not probable that these would be lowered after the brilliant actions of the last campaign. In fact, they were now raised to an extravagant height ; and while the whole glory of the war was assigned to Mr. Pitt, the very proposal of peace was considered as a dereliction of his principles, and a sacrifice of the national honor.

Mr. Pitt himself, aware of the existence of such feelings, determined to take advantage of them : he saw, that by increasing his interest in the city, where he was already a great favorite, he should be able to organise a powerful party of his own, in opposition to the minister : as a preliminary step, therefore, he concerted measures for securing the election of alderman Beckford to the office of lord mayor ; a man devoted to his interests, possessing great influence over the corporation, of a proud and rather turbulent disposition ; but respected for his independent character, and the incorruptibility, which that, and the possession of enormous wealth, bestowed. By this aid then, joined to that of the

monied men and capitalists, whose unlimited confidence Mr. Pitt enjoyed, he raised a very formidable force, which he could wield on all occasions, and at all times, according to his own pleasure and discretion.

In addition to this, a powerful combination of rank, influence, and ability, existed in full opposition to the minister among the whigs, irritated by the removal of so many of their adherents from office, and countenanced by the duke of Cumberland, who had imbibed all the principles and prejudices of the party. Besides, the premier himself was extremely unpopular with the English people: he neither commanded their admiration by superior genius like Mr. Pitt; nor did he engage their affections by that affable and courteous demeanor which the duke of Newcastle was accustomed to assume; but his manners were cold and formal, and his disposition was imperious; while his supposed predilection for arbitrary power, and his known attachment to his own countrymen, who were presumed to be abettors of it, exposed him to the most virulent abuse. His administration was attacked with a violence which scarcely any age has witnessed; and the town was inundated with scurrilous pamphlets and disgusting caricatures,<sup>10</sup> in which bitterness of sarcasm contended with licentiousness of description.

Under these circumstances, lord Bute must have seen that it was a matter of little concern to himself personally, whether he continued the war or effected a peace. He could not expect to remain long in power: indeed, there is reason to suppose that he did not even wish it.<sup>11</sup> He had already perceived a great falling off in supplies both of money

<sup>10</sup> In these latter generally are observed the mystical emblems of a boot and a petticoat, indicating his supposed intimate connexion at Leicester-house.

<sup>11</sup> 'Conscious of my own feelings,' says he in a letter to lord Melcombe, 'conscious of deserving better treatment, I shall go on, though single and alone, to serve my king and country, in the best manner my poor talents will allow me; happy, too happy, when the heavy burden that I bear shall be removed, and placed on other shoulders.'

CHAP.  
III.

1762.

and of men ; he also foresaw a vast increase of the public debt, much financial distress, and violent obstructions from the cabals of party. If he should fail in his plans, the failure would be ascribed to his incapacity ; if he should be successful, his success would be converted into a reason for demanding such exorbitant terms of peace as could not be procured. At all events, the difficulty would be immense in conducting operations so as to satisfy a public which was accustomed to such brilliant triumphs, and which already grasped in imagination the mines of Mexico and Peru. He determined therefore to follow his own line of policy, laid down long before, and seconded by the inclinations of his royal master : this led him to embrace the present opportunity of making peace, though he knew that, on whatever terms it might be concluded, his political antagonists would represent it as inadequate to the successes of the war, if not inconsistent with the interests and glory of Great Britain.

Till the meeting of parliament no effectual opposition to him could be made : accordingly, the duc de Nivernois was received in London as ambassador from the court of Versailles, with full diplomatic powers ; and the duke of Bedford, a nobleman who had filled many high offices in the state, was delegated to Paris, in the same capacity, by the British cabinet. Actuated by mutual desires to effect a reconciliation between their respective countries, and prudently abstaining from all discussion of German affairs, with which they were not immediately concerned, the negotiators avoided much of that jealousy which formerly prevailed, and thereby facilitated the progress of the present treaty ; so that preliminaries were signed and exchanged at Fontainebleau, on the third of November, between the ministers of Great Britain, France, Spain, and Portugal.

Preliminaries signed.

Birth of the prince of Wales.

Among all the domestic occurrences which distinguished this eventful year, the nation was most gratified by one which promised fair to keep in his majesty's family the protestant succession, that best

foundation of its civil and religious rights. On the twelfth of August, the anniversary of his family's accession to the throne, an heir apparent was born; and while the guns were still firing on this joyful occasion, the Spanish treasure which had been captured in the *Hermione* moved in a stately procession of artillery waggons, decorated with flags and escorted by cavalry, before St. James's palace; where the king, surrounded by his nobility, stood at a window, and joined heartily in the acclamations of the people. With what an accumulation of interest did that unconscious infant repay, during his regency, the treasures thus paraded, as it were, before his cradle!

In this year, the king, who was always anxious for the advance of morals, literature, and the fine arts, granted a pension of £300 to Dr. Johnson, avowedly on the score of his able exertions in the cause of religion and morality: one also of £200 was conferred on Sheridan, father of the celebrated orator, for the purpose of enabling him to continue his labors in the improvement of the English language: at the same time he gave great encouragement to the society for the preservation and performance of ancient music; and declared also his intention of chartering a royal academy of painting; an institution, which had long been contemplated, though checked in its progress by the jealousy of rival artists. His majesty also formed a magnificent collection of drawings and prints, by means of extensive purchases in Italy. The museum of Mr. Smith, at Venice, consisting of his library, prints, drawings, designs, and antiquities, was bought for this purpose; and the capital collection of cardinal Albani, at Rome, was procured at the expense of 14,000 crowns. In the month of October, numerous addresses, from different bodies corporate, from the clergy of the established church, and from the protestant dissenters, were presented to the king, on occasion of the birth of the prince of Wales. These were generally distinguished by loyal and patriotic

Domestic  
occurrences.

CHAP.  
III.

---

1762.

sentiments, hailing the young prince as one born for the preservation of our civil and ecclesiastical constitution; and they were answered by his majesty with a spirit corresponding to such feelings. In his reply to that presented from the province of Canterbury, the king declared 'that he accepted with thanks their good wishes and regard expressed for the queen; and saw with particular pleasure their gratitude to Heaven for the birth of a protestant heir: that their opinion of his fixed intention to educate that prince in every principle of civil and religious liberty was truly acceptable to him;' and he desired them 'to be confident, that no endeavor on his part should be wanting to promote the sacred interests of christian piety and moral virtue, and transmit to posterity our most happy constitution.'

## CHAPTER IV.

### GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1762,

Facilities of carrying on negotiations—Terms of the preliminary treaty of peace—Objections urged against them, and the answers to these objections—Feelings of the French people respecting the treaty—Meeting of the English parliament, and the king's speech—Debates on the address to his majesty, which is carried by a great majority in both houses—Effect of the reconciliation between England and France on the German powers—Miserable state to which they are reduced by the war—Negotiations between Austria and Prussia—Peace of Hubertsburg concluded—Relations of the states remain the same as before the war—Balance of power—Relations between England and Prussia—Growing power and influence of the former of these states—Her maritime code—General state of Europe—Political speculations, and increased intellectual activity—Attention paid by the different governments to their internal affairs—State of Prussia and Austria—Of France—Of Portugal—Of Spain—Of Russia—Of England—Her domestic policy, and alteration of system—Difficulties and extensive changes which ensued.

EVERY diplomatist concerned in the treaty of Fontainebleau appeared actuated with a sincere desire of peace; which object was no longer impeded by the interested designs of the king of Prussia, because the British ministry had declined a renewal of that article in the annual treaty which bound them to conclude no peace without his concurrence; while the intervention of Spanish claims, which proved so great an obstacle to an adjustment last year, now produced a contrary effect, by affording an extraordinary facility to the settlement of equivalents and compensations: besides, as Great Britain had sent out formidable expeditions into various parts of the globe, and the possessions of France and Spain lay exposed, almost defenceless, to attack, a spur was thus added

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

Terms of  
the preli-  
minaries of  
peace.

to the ministers of both those powers to bring negotiations for peace to a conclusion. Under such circumstances the following preliminaries were speedily arranged.

First, in regard to Europe—France consented to restore Minorca to England; to evacuate Hanover, as well as the territories of the landgrave of Hesse, the duke of Brunswick, and the count de la Lippe Buckeburg; also Cleves, Wesel, Gueldres, and other places belonging to his Prussian majesty; both nations agreeing to observe a strict neutrality with regard to the disputes of Germany. Full restitution was promised by France and Spain to Portugal; and the fortifications of Dunkirk were to be demolished according to the tenor of former treaties. Great Britain in return restored Belleisle to France.

In the East Indies, France recovered Pondicherry, and all she had possessed in the beginning of 1749, on condition of renouncing every conquest made since that period, of erecting no fortifications in any part of Bengal or Orissa, and of acknowledging the reigning subahdars of the Deccan, the Carnatic, and Bengal. The conquest of Manilla was not yet ascertained, but was understood to be relinquished, if made, on the part of England.

Africa gave little trouble to the negotiators. England gave up Goree to France, and retained Senegal.

America, the primary cause of contention, afforded ampler grounds for cession and restitution. France not only renounced all pretensions to Nova Scotia, but ceded to Great Britain the islands of Cape Breton and St. John, with the intire province of Canada, including the islands in the gulf and river of St. Lawrence, as well as that part of Louisiana which is situated east of the Mississippi, reserving to all Roman catholic inhabitants the right of exercising their religion, and permission to quit the country, if they desired it, within a limited time. That tract also, between the Ohio and St. Lawrence, on which the French had erected their forts, which had been a



proximate cause of the war, was given up, together with the forts themselves. CHAP. IV.

Spain, on her part, resigned East and West Florida,<sup>12</sup> with all pretensions to fish on the banks of Newfoundland: she also conceded to British subjects the full right of cutting logwood in the bay of Honduras; stipulating only that they should destroy their present forts, and build no other on the coast. 1762.

In return for these advantages, England made large concessions in the West Indies, restoring the Havannah, with all other conquests in Cuba, to Spain; Martinique, Guadaloupe, Marigalante, Desirade, and St. Lucie, to France: but she retained St. Vincent, Dominique, Tobago, Grenada, and the Grenadines. To the first three of these, as well as to St. Lucie, she had an ancient claim.

The Newfoundland fishery was a subject of much controversy between the French and British diplomatists. England desired to exclude her antagonist altogether from its advantages; but with this desire France could not comply: a compromise therefore was agreed to; and the French were permitted to fish on the north-east and north-west coasts, according to the treaty of Utrecht; within the gulf of St. Lawrence, at a distance of three leagues from the shore; and off Cape Breton, at a distance of fifteen. The small islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon were granted as a shelter for their fishermen, with liberty of stationing fifty soldiers there, to act as a police.

The difficult question regarding French prizes captured before the declaration of war, was passed over in discreet silence, though it had previously been an object of vehement controversy. France could scarcely have made a greater sacrifice of her feelings to the honor of Great Britain than by such a mode of proceeding.

It was hardly to be expected that any articles by which peace could be restored to the nation with a prospect of its permanency, would be satisfactory to

<sup>12</sup> In return, France declared herself ready to cede Louisiana, by a separate treaty, to Spain. This however was not done till 1769.

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

parties whose object was to harass the ministry, or to that portion of the public who thought only of exalting themselves and depressing their antagonists. Many were the objections made, both in and out of parliament, against the terms of adjustment. First, the cession of Belleisle for Minorca was declared to be more than an equivalent: but a ready answer to this cavil existed in what had occurred during the former negotiation; when that very objection having been stated to the French minister, his reply was, 'Keep then Belleisle, and we will retain Minorca.'

It was also strongly asserted, that we had disgraced the national character, by deserting our old ally the king of Prussia. This charge, however, could not be substantiated: the events of last campaign had left him in a condition not merely secure, but extremely formidable to his imperial foe: Saxony was in his power; Russia and Sweden had withdrawn from the contest; and the efforts of France were paralysed; so that Austria was left, as a panting victim, at the feet of Frederic; and the balance of power was actually endangered by his preponderance in the system. Besides, it was well known that the British treaty with Prussia was subject to an annual renewal; and in this very year, before any negotiations took place, the stipulation prohibiting a separate peace was expressly omitted.

The objections urged against the African arrangements are not worthy of notice; those in the western hemisphere lay open apparently to a better founded charge. The West Indian islands were the great source of foreign trade, of wealth, and of naval power to our enemies; and France, it was said, is chiefly, if not solely, to be dreaded by England as a commercial and maritime opponent. Here then we had made the most important conquests; but by our impolitic concessions we had enabled that country to regain her superiority in the West Indian trade, by which she would not only drive us out of the European markets, but repair all her losses, especially those of her marine. Of the many islands

reduced under our dominion we had selected but a few, and those of little value, to retain: St. Lucie alone was said to be of more importance to Great Britain than them all; the advantages of its favorable situation and excellent harbor being so well known to Mr. Pitt, that he refused to restore it in the negotiations of last year.

With regard to the cession of St. Lucie, an answer readily suggested itself: this was the only neutral island possessed by France; and good policy dictated, that the task of keeping the Caribbs in order should partly devolve on her. To Martinique indeed, or Guadaloupe, the same observation could not have applied; but the very attempt to retain either of these islands would have created an insuperable disgust in the French cabinet, and probably in all the civilised world: war would have appeared to assume the principles of piracy, or the rage of extermination; and no conquered nation for the future would expect any terms from a stronger adversary, except after an unconditional surrender. The same remarks might be urged respecting a prohibition of our neighbors from the fisheries of Newfoundland. Could the principle, if assumed, be maintained in the face of Europe, that we were to cut off all resources from the navy of France? If the proper end of peace be permanent tranquillity, social intercourse, and general security, would not all these be more endangered by such severe terms, than by the equitable, though still advantageous conditions, which Great Britain had granted to her opponents?

Besides, as we had fought, not for ourselves only, but also for our allies, and as we intended to make large demands in America, it was the more necessary to relax in other quarters. In those days, Canada was the grand aim of British policy; and however its possession may have contributed to the loss of our North American provinces, by removing from their vicinity such warlike rivals as the French, and thereby setting them free from the necessity of British assistance; still at that period no notion was entertained of American independence by the mother

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

country : she thought solely of foreign aggressions ; and was now satisfied that those vast colonies were secured to her by the frontiers of a co-extensive empire, containing all the advantages which a fertile soil and the finest navigation in the world could bestow.

Nor could the disadvantageous terms imposed on the French in the East Indies be left out of consideration ; for though they had regained their factories, their fortifications were destroyed ; and if they should attempt to restore them, such restoration could only take place in provinces which would not interfere with the ascendancy of Great Britain : it was well known that the maintaining of Coromandel would cost more than it was worth ; especially as they were prohibited from any interference with Bengal and Orissa, where the English had vast possessions, and where alone a great territorial dominion could be established. After all, however, the best argument to show that the terms of peace were favorable to Great Britain, was the manner in which they were received by the French. Never before perhaps had the high and sensitive feelings of that people been so wounded ; never before did they experience such deep humiliation, which they owed not so much to their own want of courage, talent, or resources, as to the imbecility of their government, and the fundamental vices of its constitution. A large portion of that loyalty, or attachment to ancient forms of despotism, which still lingered in the nation, was lost, together with its national honor, when this treaty, so disgraceful to the great monarchy, was made known. England was in fact exalted on the depression of France ; and the bitter fruits of jealousy, derived from this source, appeared in a succeeding age.

Meeting of  
parliament.

While preparations were making in Great Britain by political parties for a trial of strength, parliament met on the 25th of November, and the session was opened by his majesty with a speech, in which, after alluding to the late sanguinary contest, and his resolution to prosecute it vigorously, for the purpose of obtaining an honorable peace, he dwelt at some

length on the ineffectual attempts made to promote a reconciliation, and the subsequent extension of hostilities; taking that opportunity of eulogising the conduct of his commanders and their troops, while he enumerated the conquests made by their united wisdom and valor. His majesty then proceeded as follows:—‘ Preliminary articles have been signed by my minister with those of France and Spain, which I will order in due time to be laid before you. Their conditions are such, that there is not only an immense territory added to the empire of Great Britain, but a solid foundation laid for the increase of trade and commerce; while the utmost care has been taken to remove all occasions of future disputes between my subjects and those of France and Spain, and thereby to add security and permanency to the blessings of peace.’

Having adverted to the good faith which we had religiously kept towards our allies, and to the necessity of economy, after that exhaustion of our pecuniary resources, which such a war must necessarily create, his majesty thus concluded:—

‘ My lords and gentlemen:—It was impossible to execute what this nation has so gloriously performed in all parts of the world, without the loss of great numbers of men. When you consider this loss, whether on the principles of policy or humanity, you will see one of the many reasons which induced me to enter early into negotiation, so as to make a considerable progress in it before the fate of many operations was determined; and now to hasten the conclusion of it, to prevent the necessity of making preparations for another campaign. As by this peace my territories are greatly augmented, and new sources open for trade and manufactures, it is my earnest desire, that you would consider of such methods in the settlements of our new acquisitions, as shall most effectually tend to the security of those countries, and to the improvement of the commerce and navigation of Great Britain. I cannot mention our acquisitions, without earnestly recommending to your care and attention my gallant subjects, by

CHAP. IV. whose valor they were made. We could never have carried on this extensive war without the greatest union at home. You will find the same union peculiarly necessary, in order to make the best use of the great advantages acquired by the peace, and to lay the foundation of that economy which we owe to ourselves and to our posterity, and which can alone relieve this nation from the heavy burdens brought on it by the necessities of this long and expensive war.'

Debates on  
the prelimi-  
nary treaty.

1762. When the preliminaries of peace came to be discussed, the opposition was much less powerful than was expected. The motion for an address to his majesty, in the house of commons, approving the advantageous terms of this treaty, was moved by Mr. Fox, who took the lead in support of it; while Mr. Pitt, in a very elaborate argument of more than three hours, advanced every objection that could be urged against the negotiations. Though he was suffering such excruciating torture from a fit of the gout, that he was obliged to be supported by two persons during the commencement of his speech, he declared, that even at the hazard of his life, he would that day raise his voice, his hand and arm, against a transaction which he stigmatised as derogatory to the honor of his country: its terms, he said, were totally inadequate to our successes, surrendering all those advantages to which our glorious achievements had intitled us, and sacrificing the public faith in a disgraceful desertion of our allies. These general observations he illustrated by minute details, and an analysis of the whole treaty; challenging the minister to compare the present conditions of it with what he could have obtained from M. Bussy. He saw in these nothing but the seeds of future war; for the peace was insecure, because it reinstated our enemies in their former greatness; it was inadequate, because the places we retained were not equivalent to those we had surrendered.

Mr. Pitt's arguments were combated by the considerations of general policy already alluded to, and by a different estimate of the conquests ceded and

retained : the impossibility also of obtaining peace at all on better terms was strongly urged. France and Spain would have run any risk in continuing the war, rather than have consented to the total ruin of their commercial interests ; and then Great Britain would have suffered more in her increased expenditure and the augmentation of her debt, than she could have gained by the most favorable concessions. These arguments had their weight with the house ; so that, after an ample debate, the question was carried for the address by a majority of 319 to 65.

In the house of lords also objections were urged to the treaty, and severe reflections thrown out against the earl of Bute, who defended his own conduct with temper, but at the same time with a spirit and tone quite unexpected by those who had listened to his generally cold and formal harangues. Having given a complete account of the late negotiations, and vindicated the terms of the treaty, as wise and just, ascertaining the points in dispute so clearly that they left no ground for litigation, and manifesting such moderation that no feelings of enmity could or ought to exist, he concluded with expressing a wish, ' that no other epitaph might be inscribed on his tomb, than that he was the adviser of this peace, on the merits of which their lordships were required to decide.' He was seconded by the earl of Halifax ; and notwithstanding all the arguments and objections of opposing peers, the address was carried by an immense majority.

When the belligerent powers in Germany saw Great Britain and France determined to effect a reconciliation between themselves, they became convinced of the propriety of terminating the series of war in a country exhausted by sufferings, which an authentic and contemporary historian has thus described :—' Whole provinces had been laid waste ; and even in those that were not, internal commerce and industry were almost at an end ; and this too, in spite of the vast sums which France, England, Russia, and Sweden had scattered over

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

them, either through their armies, or by means of subsidies. These sums, it has been calculated, amounted to 500,000,000 crowns of the empire. A great part of Pomerania and Brandenburg was changed into a desert: there were provinces where hardly any men were to be found, and where the women were therefore obliged to guide the plough: in others women were as much wanting as men. At every step appeared large tracts of uncultivated country; and the most fertile plains of Germany, on the banks of the Oder and the Wesel, presented only the arid and sterile appearance of the deserts of the Ohio and Oronoko.<sup>15</sup>

Maria Theresa had lost all hopes of retaining Silesia since the fall of Schweidnitz: harassed too by the defection of her allies, the disorder of her finances, and the declining health of the emperor, she saw her own hereditary dominions open to the incursions of the Prussians, while Hungary was threatened by the Turks, who had been excited to hostilities by Frederic. She was therefore obliged, though with great reluctance, to make overtures to her opponent; and these being favorably received, a conference was held at the close of the year in the castle of Hubertsburg in Saxony; where a treaty was signed on the fifth of February ensuing, of which those of Breslau and Berlin were the basis. Negotiations indeed were easily managed, where neither of the parties coveted aggrandisement or claimed compensation; and perhaps there is no instance of a convention, which concluded such a protracted and relentless contest, being conducted with so little delay and formality. The empress-queen, when she renewed her renunciation of Silesia, endeavored to retain possession of the county of Glatz; but was resisted by the firmness of Frederic, and obliged to relinquish the whole territory. Each party guaranteed the other's possessions; all places and pri-

<sup>15</sup> Archenholz, quoted in lord Dover's life of Frederic II. vol. ii. p. 278.



soners taken on either side were restored ; all claims for reimbursement of expenses or reparations during the war were relinquished ; and Frederic, by a secret article, engaged to give his vote to the archduke Joseph in the ensuing election of a king of the Romans. In this peace the empire was comprehended, and the treaty of Westphalia, with the other constitutions of the Germanic body, renewed : the same day saw likewise a treaty signed between Prussia and Saxony, in which Frederic covenanted to evacuate that country and to restore its archives, which he had carried off from Dresden.

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

The pacification of Hubertsburg left the states of Germany exactly in the same relative position as they were in at the commencement of the late contest. The struggle was protracted as long as the means of warfare lasted ; and most of the parties derived no other advantage from it, except that of knowing each other's strength, and learning to dread the renewal of such a conflict. Prussia, however, though she gained nothing in extended territories or increase of commerce, obtained an equivalent for all her disasters, in the consolidation of her power, in the acknowledgement of her high place among the combined states of Europe, and in the prospect that lay open to her, when the sources of her prosperity should become developed under the genius of her great monarch. In these advantages indeed all parties might be said to share, inasmuch as a due regulation of the balance of power affected the rights and liberties of them all. Hence it follows, that this great septennial war was not, as it is sometimes represented, an unmixed and unmitigated evil ; for by its means the European confederative system was maintained and carried on to perfection : Prussia and Austria were now its main supports : neither Russia nor France could disturb its equilibrium for the present ; since the power of the former was not sufficiently consolidated ; and that of the latter was not only fettered by the court of Austria, but re-

Peace of  
Huberts-  
burg.

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

State of  
Prussia  
and Au-  
stria.

duced to a state of extreme exhaustion in the late struggle. The relations therefore between Prussia and Austria, no longer hostile, nor yet friendly towards each other, remained as leading objects of European policy ; and on their proper adjustment the balance of power chiefly depended.

The ties of friendship between the sovereigns of England and Prussia, loosened in the negotiations of the preceding year, were broken by these separate treaties ; and a feeling of resentment seems to have kept possession of Frederic's mind, which he took every occasion to display. No point of collision however existed on the continent, since the maintenance of the German empire and the integrity of the federative states-system were leading features in his policy. But this dissolution of alliance between the two kingdoms broke nearly all the great connecting links which bound England to the continent : her relations with Portugal and Holland alone remained intire ; since Austria had abandoned her for a French alliance, and with Russia she was only slightly connected by a commercial treaty : but that power, which a dominion over the ocean and an unlimited commerce with the whole world bestow, was growing up to its full height, being peculiarly cherished by the genius of the nation, and advanced by some new treaties with the continental states : this was destined to restore, and augment in a tenfold degree, the influence of Great Britain among those states, and to animate and direct their energies with an almost electrical effect.

In arriving however at such an eminence, she was compelled to exercise a species of despotic power : not content with annihilating the navy of an enemy, she began to deny to neutral flags the privilege of trading, even with its colonies : and this encroachment laid the foundation of that code, which England afterwards, in time of war, denominated her maritime law ; modifying it according

to time and circumstances, but never able to succeed in reconciling other nations to what they deemed an encroachment on their rights.

Numerous and mighty energies had been drawn forth by the late struggle, and a spirit of activity called out, which peace could scarcely allay. A kingdom like Prussia, which had raised itself from the class of secondary states to the highest rank among nations, could not hope to maintain its position but by constant exertion, and the development of all its powers; neither did its rival Austria dare to remain behind. The great disturbing force of the age was found to be its growing intelligence, which enabled and excited men to discuss philosophical speculations, especially on those relations which exist between subjects and their rulers. The great mass of ideas which this intellectual activity brought into action, was looked on by many as the dawning of a brilliant day; but the lights which it diffused were too often those of a dazzling sophistry rather than of sober truth; hence arose considerable danger to existing institutions; for what was at first only reasoned on as a subject of speculation, soon came to be demanded as a matter of right.

As a considerable period of repose was naturally to be expected after so long and bloody a contest, the various governments that had been engaged in it now turned their attention more or less to domestic concerns. The fixed nature of the Austrian and Prussian dominion, admitting little or no change, left the sovereigns of those countries at liberty to attend intirely to their internal amelioration: both Frederic and Maria Theresa began instantly to adopt many salutary regulations, and to suppress many useless or hurtful institutions: nor did they forget to keep up in full force and discipline those great military establishments, which were necessary for the stability of their respective governments. Neither of these powers could be said to have been reduced to a state of humiliation by the

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

other; for although Prussia was terribly lacerated by the wounds she had received, the glory of her monarch communicated its salutary influence to her people; and Austria herself, after combating with diversified success, and reducing her conqueror at times to the very brink of ruin, came unscathed out of the conflict, without the loss of any portion of her dominions.

State of  
France.

The case was very different with respect to France, which had lost much both of honor and of territory. The people felt deeply this disgrace; but their monarch consoled himself for his disappointments in the lap of pleasure; and as a voluptuary is generally a tyrant, he soon engaged in violent and vexatious contests with the parliaments of his kingdom, the only institutions which kept alive any spirit of resistance to the extraordinary encroachments of the royal prerogative. Thus the loyalty of the French, which they had cherished above all other nations, began to lose its hold on the public mind: religion also, set at naught as it was by the monarch, soon became discountenanced by the great; and being exposed to the attacks of a new school of philosophers, who craftily employed the arms of ridicule, where argument was sure to fail, that main pillar of public safety gave way, and left room for the elements of moral disorganisation to act in this unhappy nation: to crown all, luxury and rapine advanced with rapid strides, and the declining state of the finances kept pace with every other evil. If any country could have resisted such a terrible combination, France might have been expected to succeed: with so fertile a territory, so advantageous a position among the European states, so great a variety of climate and productions, she generally requires only a short space of time to repair her losses, and renew her transcendent powers: but her government and the irritated feelings of her people now counteracted or resisted every principle of amelioration; and when an opportunity occurred, it was eagerly seized, to retaliate on Great

Britain for this state of national degradation. In the very same country too, where her greatest sacrifices had been made, was the prospect of revenge laid open : but a result took place which was foreseen by many reflecting minds : her ethereal spirit, coming into contact with the fire of American independence, created a blaze, which for a time enveloped the whole European continent, and entirely dissolved that boasted scheme of confederative policy which it had taken so many ages to rear. One mark of the changing system of things in France remains still to be mentioned. In this year, the parliament of Paris, with the co-operation of the king, issued a decree condemning the institution of the jesuits, releasing its members from their vows, and alienating the possessions of the order ; which example was followed by the other parliaments of the kingdom.

Portugal, in the repose which she had bravely earned, found time to carry on a system of the most daring experiments ever planned ; in which trial was made, how far a nation might be reformed by a strong but well-intentioned compulsion on the part of government. No minister ever attempted so comprehensive a reform, or executed it so violently, as the celebrated marquis Pombal : every thing that stood in the way of his designs was removed ; even the jesuits were expelled from the most catholic kingdom in Europe, because the spirit of their order was opposed to the reforming principle : all the national institutions were then remodelled ; but after twenty-seven years of trial, no traces of this extensive alteration remained : nothing was left, but the lesson which had been practically taught mankind, that national institutions established by force will inevitably fall when that force is taken away.

State of  
Portugal.

In Spain, under Charles III., no important change was made in the constitution, though his reign became distinguished by enlightened ministers, who introduced many wise regulations into the affairs both of the mother country and of the co-

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

lonies; but these had little effect on the great mass of the people, the features of whose character were too deeply marked to be easily effaced. As the family compact was in full force, and Spain remained under French influence, there was no reason to apprehend hostilities from that country, while her ally was inclined to peace: besides, she was now feeling the effects of pride, treachery, and precipitate counsels, in the deep wounds which her commerce and colonies had received.

State of  
Russia.

In the north, a new epoch began with the accession of the empress Catharine II., whose ratification of the separate peace made by Peter III. with Frederic severed her connexion with Austria, and left her free scope to act. If we pass over the voluptuous habits of this princess, and consider her only as a sovereign directing the government of an immense and half-civilised empire, we shall find her intitled to the highest praise. While she laid the plans of extensive conquests, and encircled almost all Europe and Asia with her diplomatic agency, she confined her immediate views to the states by which she was surrounded, and in which anarchy opened a large field to her exertions: Poland and Turkey were the principal objects of her political speculation; and in their fertile territories she determined to acquire granaries and magazines for that extensive dominion which seems destined to disturb all the ancient affinities of European states. In the mean time, like a wise and prudent sovereign, she employed the most assiduous care on the domestic concerns of her realm, multiplying and enlarging every opportunity of education, investigating the remotest parts of her empire for that laudable purpose, and abolishing the most cruel portions of the Russian code of laws: by thus enlightening the minds of her subjects, and sowing the seeds of political improvement, she gradually prepared a way for the introduction of a more free and liberal system of government. At present, Russia felt very sensibly the havoc of war in the decrease of her

population ; and this was an additional motive with Catharine to avoid precipitate quarrels : she herself was scarcely firm on the throne, or free from domestic dangers ; all distant contests therefore were diligently to be avoided ; while her nearer neighbors, Sweden and Denmark, exhausted in finances and awed by the extraordinary elevation of Russia, were not likely at present to disturb her tranquillity.

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

But of all the nations that had taken part in this great contest, England acquired the most tangible advantages : these extended to the four quarters of the world, where her territories were enlarged and her influence was augmented ; but more especially did they appear in the progress of that colonial system, which eventually raised her above all rivals. The great cause of this prosperity lay in her navy, which enabled her, during the existence of war, to keep up a regular communication with her most distant possessions, while it prevented her enemies from doing the same, and thus ruined their commerce. Her dominions in North America, extending from the mouth of the Mississippi to that of the St. Lawrence, and from the Alleghany mountains to the Atlantic ocean, were augmented by the acquisition of Canada ; and never did authority seem more firmly established over so vast a tract than hers : who could foresee the events which were so soon to follow ? In the eastern hemisphere, the dominion of Great Britain was gradually advancing by successive and securer steps : in this quarter, where her wisdom was displayed in yielding to the prejudices and supplying the wants of subject nations, her authority was respected, and her protection courted by the native powers. Her ancient relations with the united Netherlands were somewhat changed : a jealousy of her naval and commercial pre-eminence operated to a considerable extent in alienating the minds of the people from their ally ; but the family of the new hereditary

State of  
England.

CHAP.  
IV.

---

1762.

stadtholder, being united by the ties of blood with the royal family of Great Britain, still kept up a connexion between the two countries.

With regard to domestic policy, the long meditated change of system was now coming into action. The peace which had been just concluded removed all foreign obstructions, and allowed the new monarch, with his ministerial adviser, to break the bonds of that oligarchical combination which had so long fettered his prerogative. It soon became necessary for those who sought office under their new sovereign, especially if they fought under the banners of opposition, to found their claims on the confidence of the people rather than family connexions: hence the whigs began to embrace larger notions of liberty, and to conciliate adherents by a zealous advocacy of popular rights. From this period they declined rapidly from that character which they had established at the revolution, contracting the habits of an opposition, and giving a different tone to parliamentary warfare: this, instead of being a struggle, as before, between whigs and tories, soon became a contest between the friends of the crown and the advocates of the people; so that although the king had liberated himself from the domination of the great families, his prerogative soon became more subject to the encroachment of popular pretensions. About this period also the very form and constitution of parliament admitted a change: many of the smaller boroughs rejected the influence of high families, or even of the crown itself; transferring their representation to persons who were recommended solely by their wealth: indeed about the commencement of this reign we first hear of the sale of seats in parliament; whence an opening was made in the legislature for the representatives of the monied and commercial interests, which were now making such rapid advances: in short, the house of commons appeared to consist of four different bodies of men: the crown had its immediate



friends, who affected to belong to no party, to maintain no parliamentary connexions, and to hold no fixed opinions; the aristocratical families still retained a considerable portion of that influence which is inseparable from rank and property united; the popular interests found advocates through the change of sentiments; and the monied interests through the change of representation above mentioned.

---

CHAP.  
IV.

1762.

## CHAPTER V.

## GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1763.

Opposition to the minister—Necessity for taxation—Reduction of expenditure—Principle of taxation—Cider tax—General opposition to it—Resignation of lord Bute—Conjectures regarding the cause—Changes in the cabinet—Mr. G. Grenville prime minister—Publication of the North Briton—Character of Wilkes—Use of this demagogue in the altered circumstances of the constitution—Close of the session—King's speech—No. 45 of the North Briton—General warrant issued from the home secretary's office—Wilkes arrested—Committed to the Tower—Preliminary proceedings against him—Judgment of chief justice Pratt respecting the privilege of parliament—Wilkes discharged from custody—Lord Temple disgraced—Wilkes's violent conduct—Effect on public opinion—Death of lord Egremont—Negotiations with Mr. Pitt to bring him into administration—These fail—Recourse had to the duke of Bedford—Ministerial changes—Birth of the duke of York—Meeting of parliament—Proceedings against Mr. Wilkes—He is wounded in a duel—Debate on the privilege of parliament—Question carried against the decision of the court of common pleas—Protest in the house of lords—Address to the king—Riot when the order of parliament for burning No. 45 of the North Briton by the common hangman was put into execution—Proceedings of parliament in consequence thereof—Message from his majesty regarding the marriage of his sister—Actions brought by Wilkes against the secretaries and under secretaries of state—Chief justice Pratt's amended judgment respecting general warrants—Public gratitude displayed towards him—Mr. Wilkes required to attend at the bar of the house—Interposes delay, and finally escapes to France.

Opposition  
to the  
ministry.

THOUGH the decided approbation expressed by parliament seemed to promise stability and permanency to the present ministry, several causes were now at work, and others near at hand, which soon effected its overthrow. A grand coalition was

organised at the house of the duke of Newcastle which held out a determined opposition; means were effectually taken to render the peace unpopular with a large portion of the people; while the measures of lord Bute were reviled, his abilities depreciated, and his character assailed by virulent party scribes. The definitive treaty, signed on the tenth of February, 1763, was scarcely made known, when reports were circulated that the British minister had been influenced by the ancient partiality of the Scotch to France, and even that the duke of Bedford had been bribed by the cabinet of Versailles to conclude a treaty disadvantageous to his country: addresses too, on occasion of this peace, were refused by the counties of York and Surrey, and the difficulty of getting them up in many other quarters was by no means slight. CHAP. V.  
1763.

The popular indignation thus excited was likely to be increased by the necessity of taxation; for though at no time is this necessity more strong, yet it is never less apparent to the people at large, and never less palatable, than when unaccompanied by the glory of victory or the prospect of revenge. Ministers foresaw this, and determined, before any fresh burdens were laid on the nation, to adopt the most rigid economy, and to make every possible retrenchment in that profuse system of expenditure which had been introduced during the last two reigns, chiefly for the purpose of keeping up a base and venal interest in parliament. But although in the reformation of such abuses great regard was paid to just claims, a vehement outcry was raised by the dependents of former ministries against the present; many persons alleging that they had bought their places from their superiors in office, and were intitled, not only to retain them, but to make the best of their bargain: after all too, the saving thus effected was very inadequate to the exigencies of the state; and as the expenses of the war had left a large arrear of debt unprovided for, ministers were obliged to negotiate a very considerable loan, while

CHAP. V. they took £2,000,000 from the sinking fund, and raised £700,000 by two lotteries. To discharge the interest it became necessary to impose new taxes on the people; nor could any principle be more fair than that which was laid down, of subjecting articles of luxury, rather than necessities, to the impost: an additional duty of eight pounds a tun therefore was proposed to be laid on French wines, and half that sum on other wines: but as the luxuries of the lower classes are much more productive of revenue than those of the higher, it became expedient to include them also in the calculation; and as ale and porter were already taxed directly and indirectly, it was determined to lay a duty of four shillings a hogshead on cider. Certainly it does not seem unreasonable that the drinkers of this beverage should contribute to the public exigencies, as well as they who drink a liquor which is produced from malt: neither is there any species of taxation less burdensome to the people, or more directly thrown on the consumer, than that of the excise; yet from the aversion which an Englishman feels to the visits of the officer, and to other operations of the excise law, no scheme for extending it had ever failed to excite popular commotions: hence prudence might perhaps have dictated some other mode of raising money, until the temper and disposition of the people had been more clearly discovered, and their prejudices gradually removed: at all events, the present was a dangerous proceeding to be adopted by a minister, against whom the tide of popularity ran so strong as it did against lord Bute. Instead however of imitating the conduct of Sir Robert Walpole in similar circumstances, he persisted in the measure, with an obstinate inflexibility of purpose, which is too often mistaken for political wisdom; and the bill passed into a law, notwithstanding the eloquence of Mr. Pitt exerted against it in parliament, and the petitions of numerous corporate bodies, among which that of London distinguished itself by addressing his ma-

1763.

Unpopularity of the  
cider-tax.

jeſty in perſon. The oppoſition, being ſure of the people's concurrence, took this opportunity of inveighing againſt their political antagoniſts; repreſenting the meaſure as an extension of a hateful and oppreſſive ſyſtem, which their ſcribes affected to conſider as a ſcheme to plunder England, gratify the rapacity of Scotchmen, and eſtabliſh the principles of arbitrary power.

CHAP. V.

1763.

In a few days after this unpopular meaſure had been carried, lord Bute aſtoniſhed all parties by ſuddenly reſigning his office. Assertions were very generally made and credited, that he had retired from the riſing ſtorm of national indignation; that he had bargained with his ſucceſſors for perſonal ſecurity, in caſe any parliamentary inquiry ſhould be made into his adminiſtration; and that, although he nominally reſigned the office of prime miniſter, his intention was ſtill to direct affairs behind the curtain, preſerving his power without its reſponſibility. As it has been already obſerved, the part taken in public affairs by this nobleman ſubſequentially to his retreat, beyond occaſional negotiations for miniſterial changes, is involved in a profound, and apparently impenetrable myſtery: if he directed them at all, he acted without any immediate connexion with the king, but as an agent of the princeſs dowager, with whom he was known to hold frequent conſultations: theſe were always broken up at his majeſty's approach, when lord Bute made his exit unperceived. The chief reaſons of his reſignation were probably a want of able ſupport from the cabinet which he had formed; and a deficiency in the courage and talent neceſſary to face that terrible oppoſition which was arrayed againſt him in parliament; and diſguſt at the ſcurrilities with which he was aſſailed by the populace: his own public declaration was, 'that having reſtored peace to the world, performed his engagements, and eſtabliſhed a ſyſtem of policy ſo ſtrong as no longer to need his aſſiſtance, his determination was to depart to that domeſtic life and literary retirement which he loved.'

Reſignation of lord Bute.

CHAP. V. how far these assertions corresponded with the opinion of his friends, is shown by the following extract from a letter of lord Barrington to Mr. Mitchell :—

1763.

‘ Lord Bute resigned last Friday : he will have no office ; and declares he will not be minister behind the curtain, but give up business intirely. The reasons he gives for this step are, that he finds the dislike taken to him has lessened the popularity which the king had and ought to have ; that he hopes his retirement will make things quiet, and his majesty’s government easy. To this public reason, lord Bute adds, that his health absolutely requires exercise and calmness of mind : he says, that he unwillingly undertook the business of a minister, on the king’s absolute promise that he might retire when the peace should be made. I am of opinion that he had a clear and fully sufficient support in both houses of parliament, and therefore I deem his resignation voluntary : people are infinitely surprised at it ; for my part, it is when a man accepts the ministry, not when he quits it, that my wonder is excited.’<sup>14</sup>

Together with lord Bute, Sir F. Dashwood, who was unsuited both by inclination and talent to the business of finance, resigned his office of chancellor of the exchequer, and went up to the house of peers with the title of lord le Despenser : Mr. Fox also was ennobled as lord Holland : lords Egremont and Halifax remained secretaries of state ; while lord Sandwich was placed at the head of the admiralty in the room of the honorable G. Grenville,<sup>15</sup> who became prime minister, and united in himself the offices of chancellor of the exchequer and first lord of the treasury. He seems to have been selected by the king and lord Bute, as a ready instrument for carrying their concerted plans into execution : his ambition led him to desire office, and his moderate

<sup>14</sup> Ellis’s Original Letters, second series, vol. iv. p. 461.

<sup>15</sup> Brother of lord Temple, and brother-in-law of Mr. Pitt.

fortune rendered him averse to relinquish it. Mr. Nicholls informs us,<sup>16</sup> that whenever the new minister resisted the wishes of the king and the princess dowager, he was recalled to obedience by a negotiation opened with Mr. Pitt; and that while he continued in office, this species of coercion was not unfrequently repeated.

CHAP. V.

1763,

The members of administration being connected with lord Bute, or appointed by his recommendation, were supposed to remain under his influence, and to adopt his political maxims; and as the door was thus closed against the popular leaders, and public affairs seemed but little affected by the late minister's retreat, party spirit increased in violence, and the press teemed with scurrilous publications. Amongst these, a periodical paper, called the North Briton, was pre-eminently distinguished by its attacks on men as well as measures. The author of this journal was the celebrated John Wilkes, member of parliament for Aylesbury, and a lieutenant-colonel in the Buckinghamshire militia; a man possessed of considerable talents and erudition, with an abundance of ready wit; but ruined in fortune, and disgraced by the most dissolute morals and profligate habits. His increasing embarrassments induced him, in the very beginning of this reign, to solicit a lucrative post under government;<sup>17</sup> and attributing his failure to lord Bute's influence over the royal mind, he began to vent his spleen against the government with such reckless abuse and calumny, that he at length raised a persecution against himself, which has rendered him a prominent object in the annals of his country. Scandalous indeed was the character of this demagogue, and interested were his motives; but now, time having put an end to the party heat and animosity which they provoked, his restless spirit may perhaps be viewed as

Character  
of Wilkes.

<sup>16</sup> Recollections, vol. i. p. 14.

<sup>17</sup> 'In his real politics,' says Mr. Butler, who knew him intimately, 'he was an aristocrat, and would have much rather been a favored courtier at Versailles than the most commanding orator in St. Stephen's chapel: his distresses threw him into politics.'—Reminiscences, v.

CHAP. V. an innoxious instrument, which was required to settle some very important principles in the altered circumstances of the constitution, or even to moderate that increasing influence of the crown, which, in the opinion of much abler politicians than Wilkes, was becoming dangerous to public liberty.<sup>18</sup> While the audacity and talents of this pretended patriot fitted him for the enterprise, his character stood in the way of his forming a party, or disturbing the public tranquillity longer than was necessary for the establishment and elucidation of those great constitutional questions, which were as yet unsettled and obscure. Every public man who defended him, as the opponent of arbitrary government, or as the object of ministerial tyranny, found it necessary to disclaim the slightest participation in his moral sentiments, and the most distant approbation of his conduct: even the lower orders became at length disgusted by his indecency and profaneness, permitting him soon to fall into oblivion, after he had performed that part in public affairs, for which he seemed, as it were, providentially designed.

On the nineteenth of April, a few days after the ministerial changes above mentioned had taken place, the king went to the house of lords, and closed the session by a speech, in which he thus noticed the peace, and the subjects principally connected with it:—

‘ My satisfaction at the establishment of peace, on conditions so honorable to my crown and so beneficial to my people, is highly increased by my receiving from both houses of parliament the strongest and most grateful expressions of their intire approbation. These articles have been established, and even rendered still more advantageous to my subjects, by the definitive treaty; and my expectations have been fully answered by the happy effects

<sup>18</sup> ‘ In one of the conversations,’ says Mr. Butler, ‘ which Mr. Fox permitted the writer to hold with him, that great man expressed the same opinion on the magnitude of this influence. He said, that no one could conceive its extent and effect, who had not opportunities of observing its direct or indirect operation on every state and condition of life.’—*Reminiscences*, p. 74.



which the several allies of my crown have derived from this salutary measure. The powers at war with my good brother the king of Prussia have been induced to agree to such terms of accommodation as that great prince has approved; and the success which has attended my negotiation has necessarily and immediately diffused the blessings of peace through every part of Europe. I acquainted you with my firm resolution to form my government on a plan of strict economy: the reductions necessary for this purpose shall be completed: although the army maintained in these kingdoms will be inferior in number to that usually kept up in former times of peace, yet I trust that the force proposed, with the establishment of the national militia, whose services I have experienced, and cannot too much commend, will prove a sufficient security for the future. I have seen, with the highest concern, the great anticipations of the revenue, and the heavy debts unprovided for during the late war, which have reduced you to the unhappy necessity of imposing farther burdens on my people. Under these circumstances, it is my earnest wish to contribute by every means to their relief: the utmost frugality shall be observed in the distribution of the supplies which you have granted; and when the accounts of the money arising from the sales of such prizes as are vested in the crown shall be closed, it is my intention to direct that the produce shall be applied to the public service.'

CHAP. V.  
1763.

These patriotic and liberal sentiments of the monarch were followed, on the twenty-third of April, by the celebrated number XLV. of the North Briton, which did not confine itself to an abuse of the administration, but deliberately accused the king of uttering premeditated falsehoods from the throne. Though his majesty's ministers had borne the attacks of this libeller against themselves with a stoical indifference, they felt themselves imperatively called on to take measures for vindicating the insulted honor of their sovereign; and the offensive

General  
warrant is-  
sued.

CHAP. V. publication, being laid before the attorney and solicitor-general, was by them considered as strictly  
 1763. meriting a public prosecution: accordingly, a general warrant on the twenty-sixth of April issued from the office of lord Halifax, which ordered the authors, printers, and publishers, without describing or designating them by name,<sup>19</sup> to be seized, together with their papers, and brought before the secretary of state. To show the effects of a general warrant, it is only necessary to observe, that between that day and the twenty-ninth,<sup>20</sup> no less than forty-nine persons were taken up on suspicion; and among them a reputable tradesman, who was carried from his bed, his child being ill in the room, while his house was thrown into the utmost confusion, and ransacked of his papers: having been thus seized, he was still more cruelly detained in custody three days without any proofs of guilt appearing against him. On the twenty-ninth, the evidence of Messrs. Kearsley and Balfe, the publisher and printer, clearly determined Mr. Wilkes to be the author of number XLV. of the North Briton: still the general warrant was not withdrawn, by virtue of which his house was forcibly entered, his doors and locks broken open, and his papers placed in the hands of the messengers without any schedule or security for their recovery; and he himself was carried before lord Halifax.

Immediately after his apprehension, lord Temple, at Wilkes's particular request, applied to the court of common pleas for a writ of habeas corpus, and the motion was granted; but before this writ could be prepared, the offender, having refused to answer any questions, had been committed to the Tower in close custody; and was for the present debarred from the visits of his friends, and even of his lawyers.

Wilkes  
committed  
to the  
Tower.

<sup>19</sup> A general warrant to apprehend all persons suspected, without name or description, was illegal; and, in the words of Blackstone, 'void for its uncertainty; for it is the duty of the magistrate, and ought not to be left to the officer, to judge of the ground of suspicion.'

<sup>20</sup> See Gentleman's Magazine for 1764, p. 578.

Such were the circumstances which brought the very important question of general warrants into public notice and discussion. The illegality of these instruments was maintained by all who were acquainted with the forms of our constitution, and was subsequently affirmed by the highest legal authorities; but the process was a customary one, sanctioned by precedents; and it had been adopted by Mr. Pitt, as well as by other popular ministers: so that in the present instance the opinion of the crown lawyers was taken, not respecting its legality, but the offence of Mr. Wilkes; whether it brought him under its operation, and whether his parliamentary privilege protected him.

CHAP. V.

1763.

The first writ of habeas corpus, directed to the messengers, being ineffectual, as the prisoner was out of their custody, another was procured, and addressed to the constable of the Tower; by virtue of which, on the third of May, Mr. Wilkes was brought into Westminster-hall, where he took that opportunity of making a virulent speech against the administration; accusing ministers, with great effrontery and falsehood, of resorting to this mode of persecution, because they could not corrupt him. The court, in order that the judges might have time to consider the case, remanded the prisoner to the Tower, free access being granted to his counsel or his friends; and on the sixth he was again brought into court, where he made a second speech of a most inflammatory tendency, but which was cried up by his partisans as a master-piece of eloquence: after this, chief justice Pratt, subsequently known as lord Camden, and always found a stanch supporter of constitutional liberty, proceeded to deliver the opinion of the court. Inclining at this time to think the commitment legal, as supported by precedents, and justified by a regard for the public safety, though not agreeable to the forms of the constitution; and deciding that there was no necessity for a specification of particular passages in the publication which had been deemed libellous, he never-

CHAP. V. theless admitted that the privilege of parliament had been violated ; inasmuch as this could only be forfeited by treason, felony, or breach of the peace : he accordingly directed Mr. Wilkes to be liberated from confinement.

1763.  
His liberation and violent conduct.

While the populace hailed this demagogue as the champion of their rights, and received him with acclamations of joy, the attorney-general was ordered to institute a prosecution against him for the libel : the king also directed lord Temple's name to be erased from the list of privy counsellors, for the countenance and support given by him to Mr. Wilkes ; and more especially for the terms of regret, and even of compliment, used by that nobleman, when, as lord lieutenant of the county, he announced to him the loss of his commission : at the same time, the lieutenancy of Buckinghamshire was transferred to lord Le Despenser.

Wilkes had no sooner regained his liberty, than, slighting the advice of his more prudent friends, to remain quiet until the decision of parliament and of the courts of law was known, he determined to pursue his headlong course, and provoke persecution for the sake of that popularity which was sure to accompany it : he accordingly wrote a scurrilous letter to the secretaries of state, asserting that his house had been robbed, and that the stolen goods were in their possession ; he even attempted to procure a search-warrant from a magistrate to examine their premises ; and carried on his insults by printing the letter and distributing several thousand copies. Taking advantage also of the popular enthusiasm in his favor, when he found the printers averse to run the hazard of publishing his productions, he established a printing-press in his own house, and sold copies of the proceedings against him at the price of a guinea : he also committed to this press a blasphemous and obscene poem, intitled ' An Essay on Woman,' affixing the name of bishop Warburton to some of the accompanying annotations ; and a sheet of this, procured from one of his

working printers, was laid before the secretaries of state. He next determined to republish the first forty-five numbers of the *North Briton*, with notes and emendations, though he was cautioned against affording by this measure more certain means of his own conviction: but, disregarding all advice, he put the work into a state of forwardness, and then set out to pass a few weeks in France.

CHAP. V.

1763.

The efforts of this public disturber were ably seconded by the anti-ministerial writers; so that many men even of talents and probity, though they detested his immorality, began to associate his name with the idea of liberty; the proceedings instituted against him were designated as the tyrannical efforts of arbitrary power; and being attributed to the hateful influence of lord Bute, tended to lessen the respect in which his supposed ministerial dependents were held by the public. Mr. George Grenville, though a man of sound understanding and unimpeached integrity, was better fitted to arrange the details and follow the routine of office, than to enter into plans of a comprehensive and enlightened policy: he had been first brought into notice by his connexion with Mr. Pitt, but had neither personal influence nor intellectual sagacity to give stability to a political party: besides, his cabinet, which had never possessed much strength, was at this time brought to the verge of dissolution by the loss of its most experienced and efficient member, lord Egremont, who died on the twenty-first of August.

Under such circumstances, a coalition seemed desirable; and negotiations were opened with Mr. Pitt, to whom lord Bute stated the king's earnest wish of employing political talent and integrity, without any respect to parties; and having obtained from him in return an explicit declaration of his views regarding men and measures, he settled for him an interview with his majesty at Buckingham-house on the twenty-seventh of August. At this conference, which lasted three hours, the king listened very patiently, while the ex-minister dilated

Negotiations with Mr. Pitt.

CHAP. V. on the infirmities of the peace, the disorders of the  
1763. state, and the principal remedy which he proposed to adopt in restoring to power those great whig families, in whose abilities, experience, and integrity, the public reposed confidence. His majesty at this time made no objection to what he heard, farther than by saying 'that his own honor must be preserved :' he then broke up the conference, and appointed a second interview on the twenty-ninth.

In the intervening day, feeling confident respecting the result of his negotiations, Mr. Pitt conferred with the duke of Newcastle and other leaders of that party, by whom the plan of a new cabinet was arranged, with which he went prepared to meet his majesty : but he was doomed to experience a complete disappointment of his hopes ; for though the king, desirous, as he was, of obtaining this great man's services, expressed himself willing to receive into a new administration several members of the whig party, yet, true to his concerted scheme of policy, he refused to surrender the whole direction of affairs to an oligarchical and exclusive confederacy. As Mr. Pitt continued inflexible in his opinion, that the government could not stand without the aid of those powerful leaders whom he had proposed, his majesty terminated the conference with the following emphatic declaration :—' Well, Mr. Pitt, I see this will not do : my honor is concerned, and I must support it,'<sup>1</sup> Many conjectures were formed, and rumors set afloat, concerning this alteration in the king's sentiments : there can be little doubt that his majesty was at the first interview charmed by Mr. Pitt's eloquence and reasoning into an apparent acquiescence in his policy ; but when the intervention of a day had given him leisure for reflection, and for the recovery of his self-possession, he met the fascinating pleader on more equal grounds, and resolutely maintained his own preconceived opinions.

<sup>1</sup> See a letter from lord Hardwicke to a near relation on the subject of a ministerial negotiation in the year 1763, (London, 1785,) in which a detailed account of this conference is given.

These negotiations having thus failed, recourse was had to the duke of Bedford, by whose powerful influence and numerous connexions it was thought the tottering cabinet might still be supported : lord Sandwich was now made secretary of state, and lord Egmont placed at the head of the admiralty ; while the duke himself, being appointed president of the council,<sup>2</sup> gave his name to this ministry, though Mr. Grenville still retained his post. The nation however generally was in a state of irritation, jealousy, and alarm ; and probably nothing at this time could have restored immediate tranquillity but the introduction of Mr. Pitt into the cabinet.

1763.

On the sixteenth of August the queen was delivered of a second son, who was baptized by the name of Frederic, and afterwards created duke of York. The popular sentiments at this time respecting constitutional liberty may partly be gathered from the congratulatory address presented to the king by the city of London, in which was expressed a strong hope, 'that every increase of his royal family might prove an additional security to our religion, and to the great charter of liberty, which in consequence of the glorious revolution his illustrious house was chosen to defend.'

The newly-arranged ministry met parliament on the fifteenth of November, when his majesty exhorted both houses to cultivate the blessings of peace, to improve the commercial acquisitions of the country, and to attend earnestly to the reduction of the heavy debts contracted in the late war ; but with care to support the navy, that most efficient instrument of British power : nor did he fail to impress on their minds the necessity of promoting domestic union, and discouraging that licentious spirit, which is repugnant to the true principles of liberty and of our happy constitution. On the return of the commons to their own house, Mr. Grenville,

Proceed-  
ings against  
Wilkes.

<sup>2</sup> In the room of lord Granville, lately deceased.

CHAP. V. knowing it was the intention of Mr. Wilkes to make  
1763. a formal complaint respecting the breach of privilege, anticipated every other motion by delivering a message from the king to the following effect:—  
'that his majesty having been informed that John Wilkes, Esq., a member of that house, was the author of a most seditious and dangerous libel, he had caused the said John Wilkes to be apprehended and secured, in order to take his trial in due course of law; and Mr. Wilkes having been discharged out of custody by the court of common pleas, on account of his privilege as a member of that house, and having since refused to answer to an information filed against him by the attorney-general, his majesty, desirous to show all possible attention to the privileges of the house of commons, and at the same time solicitous not to suffer the public justice of the kingdom to be eluded, had chosen to direct the said libel, and also copies of the examinations on which Mr. Wilkes was apprehended and secured, to be laid before them.' On the same day, Mr. Grenville proposed a resolution to this effect:—'that the paper intitled the North Briton, number XLV., is a false, scandalous, and seditious libel against his majesty and both houses of parliament, manifestly tending to alienate the affections of the people from his majesty, withdraw them from obedience to the laws, and excite them to traitorous insurrections.'

Whatever may be thought of the effects produced by this parliamentary contest between ministers and Mr. Wilkes, there can scarcely be a doubt, but that a due regard to their own interests should have restrained the former from engaging in it; especially as the case was already laid before a court of justice, and waiting its determination. After a long and violent debate, in which the friends of the ministry dilated on the nature and mischievous tendency of seditious libels, while the opposition endeavored to extenuate Wilkes's offence, the motion was carried, and the house made a party in the strife: the libel



itself was ordered to be burned by the common hangman, and the whole question came to be considered as one of national importance. CHAP. V.  
1763.

After Mr. Grenville's motion had been disposed of, Mr. Wilkes, taking up the question of privilege, recounted to the house the proceedings that had been employed against him, and requested its judgment; when it was resolved to take the matter into consideration on the twenty-third: but on the same day in which Mr. Grenville's resolution was carried in the commons, the attention of the lords was called to the 'Essay on Woman.'<sup>3</sup> That the learned prelate,<sup>4</sup> whose name had been so scurrilously used on this occasion, should complain of a breach of privilege, surprised no one; but that lord Sandwich, whose own morality was more than questionable, should stand forward as a public censor, and argue at great length against the profaneness and indecency of Mr. Wilkes, was matter of astonishment to most men: it was however determined to proceed against the author of this scandalous publication for a breach of privilege, while he was indicted for blasphemy in the courts below.

During the debate in the lower house, Mr. Martin, member for Camelford, whose character had been attacked in the North Briton, took occasion to stigmatise the author as a malignant and infamous coward; in consequence of which Mr. Wilkes in a letter acknowledged the authorship, and a meeting between them ensued, in which the latter was severely wounded. On the twenty-third, the question of privilege was taken up by the house, and a motion made, 'that the privilege of parliament does not extend to the case of writers or publishers of seditious libels, nor ought to be allowed to obstruct

Wilkes  
wounded  
in a duel.

<sup>3</sup> Infamous as this production was, the method employed to make it a matter of complaint, by bribing a journeyman printer to purloin a proof-sheet as it passed through the press, would scarcely be countenanced in these days. It is said that the author only intended to print a dozen copies for private distribution; but in the eye of the law, the act of printing implies publication.

<sup>4</sup> Bishop Warburton, the learned commentator; whose name was appended to some notes on the text.

CHAP. V. the ordinary course of the laws, in the speedy and effectual prosecution of so heinous and dangerous an offence.' The debate was carried to a great length, and with great earnestness on both sides : on the second day, the speaker read a letter from Mr. Wilkes, requesting an adjournment until he should be convalescent : the house however determined to proceed ; and though ministers were deserted by some who generally voted on their side, while the opposition made a vigorous resistance against the surrender of their supposed privileges ; and though Mr. Pitt, in a speech of great eloquence and acuteness, deprecated the measure as dangerous to the freedom of parliament, and infringing on the rights of the people ;—the resolution was carried by a majority of 258 to 133 ; and that, in direct contradiction to the late decision of the court of common pleas : a strong mark of the ascendancy which the executive power was now gaining over the legislative body, and of that servile spirit which was diffusing itself among the representatives of the people. The concurrence of the lords was not procured without considerable difficulty and a long debate, in which Lord Lyttleton took a prominent part on the side of ministers, entering at large into the history of parliamentary privilege, analysing the powers of the crown and parliament, and opposing the doctrine of inviolability when applied to cases like the present. 'The dominion of law,' he concluded, 'is the dominion of liberty : privilege against law, in matters of high concernment to the public, is oppression, is tyranny, wherever it exists.' A spirited and able protest was signed by seventeen peers, affirming it to be 'incompatible with the dignity, gravity, and justice of the house, thus to explain away a parliamentary privilege of such magnitude and importance, founded in the wisdom of ages, declared with precision in their standing orders, repeatedly confirmed and hitherto preserved inviolable by the spirit of their ancestors ; called to it only by the other house on a particular occasion,

and to serve a particular purpose, *ex post facto, ex parte, et pendente lite* in the courts below.' In a conference of both houses, a dutiful and affectionate address was voted to the king, blaming with becoming indignation the insults offered to his majesty; and the author of them was required to attend at the bar of the commons in a week, if his health would permit.

CHAP. V.  
1763.

In the mean time, when the sheriffs of London attempted to execute the order for burning the North Briton at the Royal Exchange, the people began to manifest a spirit very different from that of their representatives: a violent riot ensued, the paper was rescued from the hands of the executioner before it was consumed, the staves of the constables were broken, and a flaming billet was thrown at Mr. sheriff Harley, which slightly wounded him, through the window of his carriage: the pieces of the libel which had been rescued were then conveyed in triumphal procession to Temple Bar, where a fire was kindled, and a large jack-boot committed to the flames, in derision of the late minister.

Riots in  
London.

On the report of these proceedings, both houses of parliament concurred in voting that the rioters were disturbers of the public peace, dangerous to the liberties of the country, and obstructers of national justice: the thanks of the house of commons were voted to the sheriffs, and an address was presented to his majesty, praying that the most effectual methods might be taken for discovering and punishing the offenders. During these tumults and discussions, his majesty sent another message to parliament, announcing that proposals of marriage had been made by the hereditary prince of Brunswick-Luneburg to his sister the princess Augusta, and accepted; when the sum of £80,000 was voted for her dowry. On the twelfth of January following, the prince arrived in England; and on the evening of the sixteenth the nuptials were solemnised with great magnificence.

CHAP. V. Notwithstanding the parliamentary proceedings

1763.

Important  
decision on  
general  
warrants.

above mentioned, several actions had been brought in the court of common pleas against the messengers by persons arrested under the general warrant, and verdicts for damages obtained: Mr. Wilkes himself also had commenced actions against the two secretaries of state, and against Mr. Wood, the under-secretary, for the seizure of his papers, and other injuries sustained. Lord Egremont died in the course of these proceedings: while lord Halifax, in a manner highly derogatory to his character and cause, interposed all possible means of delay which the law affords, and then stood out in contempt of court until his prosecutor was outlawed: but the action against Mr. Wood was duly tried in Guildhall, before chief justice Pratt and a special jury; when, after a patient hearing of fifteen hours, a verdict was given for £1000 damages, with full costs of suit. In his charge to the jury on this occasion, his lordship ventured to go far beyond his opinion, before expressed, regarding the general warrant on which Mr. Wilkes had been apprehended; pronouncing it illegal as well as unconstitutional, but expressing his wish that a matter of such importance should not rest on his sole opinion, since there were twelve judges, and a still higher court, whose decision is final, where the question might be canvassed. ‘If these superior jurisdictions,’ said his lordship, ‘should declare my opinion erroneous, I shall submit as becomes me, and kiss the rod; but I must say, I shall always consider it as a rod of iron for the chastisement of the people of Great Britain.’ This judgment respecting the illegality of general warrants, which was afterwards confirmed by lord Mansfield,<sup>4</sup> secured a lasting popularity to the constitutional judge by whom it was promulgated. The corporation of Dublin took the lead in presenting him with the freedom of their

<sup>4</sup> In arguing on bills of exceptions which were granted at the foregoing trials.

city in a gold box ; others followed the example ; and that of London, in addition to this mark of respect, requested that he would sit for his picture, to be placed in Guildhall, as a memorial of their gratitude. CHAP. V. 1763.

When the order was made for the attendance of Mr. Wilkes at the bar of the house of commons, two gentlemen of the medical profession appeared in his stead, and declared that the state of their patient's health would not permit him to obey the injunction : the time was then enlarged for a week ; and at the end of that period, the excuse being repeated, it was still farther extended beyond the Christmas recess : but in order to prevent collusion, Dr. Herberden and Mr. Cæsar Hawkins, two eminent medical men, were requested to observe the progress of his cure, and make their reports of it to the house. Mr. Wilkes refused to admit their visits ; but to vindicate the character of his own friends, he called in Dr. Duncan and Mr. Middleton, who both held appointments under the crown, observing, in his usual sarcastic strain, that as the house of commons wished him to be watched, he thought two Scotchmen most proper to be his spies. But either his case was less dangerous than was imagined, or his fears were greater ; for he seized the opportunity, while the house was adjourned, of escaping to the continent, under pretence of visiting his daughter, who was said to be dangerously ill at Paris.

## CHAPTER VI.

## GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1764.

Proceedings against Wilkes—Question on the legality of general warrants—Wilkes indicted, found guilty, and outlawed—Harsh proceedings against general Conway and others—Supplies raised—Notion taken up of taxing the American colonies—Manner in which the scheme was introduced—Postponed to the next session of parliament—Sentiments of the Americans on the subject, and measures taken by them to oppose it—These aided by other circumstances—The question considered, as to its right and expediency—War with the Indian tribes of North America—Peace concluded—Conduct of the savages and their prisoners, when the latter were delivered up—Bill for preventing abuses in franking letters—Exhortations in the king's speech—These needed by the state of the country—Voyages of discovery—Prince Frederic appointed bishop of Osnaburg—King of the Romans—Affairs of Poland, and election of Poniatowski to the throne—Affairs of Corsica—Final suppression of the jesuits in France—Death of Madame Pompadour—Injuries and insults offered by the French and Spaniards to the British nation redressed, and peace preserved.

Proceed-  
ings against  
Wilkes.

DURING the recess of parliament, speculation was afloat respecting the return of Mr. Wilkes in obedience to the order of the house; but on the nineteenth of January, the last day fixed for his appearance, the speaker produced a letter from him, inclosing a certificate from one of the French king's physicians and an army surgeon, testifying that he could not quit Paris without danger to his life: these documents, however, being unauthenticated, were considered nugatory; and the whole conduct of the man appearing as if designed to oppose or elude the authority of parliament, the house determined to proceed with the charges against him; when, after a full examination of witnesses, which lasted till

three o'clock in the morning, it was voted that number XLV. of the North Briton was an infamous and seditious libel—that Mr. Wilkes be expelled the house of commons—and that a new writ be issued for the borough of Aylesbury. This measure had ultimately the effect of rendering Wilkes a popular champion in that memorable struggle between the house of commons and the electors of Middlesex, which served to define the power of the representative body in relation to its constituency.

But although the triumph of ministers was thus far complete, they were soon attacked at a point where defence was not so easy; for notwithstanding the expulsion of this demagogue, his complaint on the subject of parliamentary privilege was taken up as a constitutional question, which occupied the attention of the house for several days.<sup>5</sup> On due inquiry, it was found, that nothing had been done by lord Halifax, or the under-secretaries, but what was warranted by official usage since the revolution of 1688; and as the house agreed that no reason for censure existed against those public functionaries, the complaint was dismissed, and a motion to produce the general warrant, from which it arose, was also rejected. A general question was next submitted to the house, for declaring such warrants illegal: ministers, however, though they abstained from directly asserting their legality, would by no means consent to this declaration of law by one branch of the legislature only: Westminster-hall, they observed, was the best interpreter of the law, where the point was still under discussion: <sup>6</sup> if this were not admitted, recourse must be had to a regular act of parliament: they proposed therefore to adjourn the consideration of the question four months, which was only a civil way of getting rid of it altogether.

<sup>5</sup> The principal leaders on the popular side were Sir W. Meredith and Sir G. Savile.

<sup>6</sup> The chief justice of the court of common pleas indeed had given his opinion; but the judgment of the court of king's bench, on the bills of exception that were taken, was not yet delivered.

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

The principal point urged by ministers in their defence, was long established precedent; of which they cited instances in the administrations, not only of lord Townshend and the duke of Newcastle, but of Mr. Pitt himself. In his explanation, however, that statesman, after declaring it was time to do justice to the nation, the constitution, and the laws, denied that precedents afforded any justification; saying that when he himself issued such warrants, he knew them to be illegal; but preferring the general safety, in time of war and public danger, to every personal consideration, he ran the risk, as he would that of his head, had it been the forfeit, and did an extraordinary act, against a suspicious foreigner just come from France, who was concealed at different times in different houses. He distinguished strongly between his case and that before the house. 'What was there in a libel,' said he, 'so heinous and terrible, as to require this formidable instrument, which, like an inundation, bore down all the barriers and fences of happiness and security? Parliament had voted away its own privilege, and laid the personal freedom of every representative of the nation at the mercy of his majesty's attorney-general. If the house negatived this motion, they would become the disgrace of the present age, and the reproach of posterity; being found, after sacrificing their own privileges, to have abandoned the liberty of the subject, on a pretence wilfully grounded in error, and manifestly urged for the purpose of delusion.'

After a long and animated debate, the question of adjournment was carried, at seven in the morning, by a small majority of fourteen; there being 218 votes against the proposal, and 232 in favor of it: but the illegality of general warrants was so effectually established by these numbers, and by the previous discussion, that henceforth the use of them was wholly discontinued. Here then was one great constitutional principle settled by the instrumentality of a most unworthy member of society: nor did a long period elapse, before the ministerial measures



taken against him effected other important alterations in the practice of our constitution.

CHAP.  
VI.

Wilkes, having entered an appearance in Westminster-hall, was tried and convicted on two indictments, for publishing number XLV., and the 'Essay on Woman;' but his cause being identified with that of the constitution, his popularity remained undiminished, and the spirit excited by the proceedings against him unallayed: being afterwards outlawed for not appearing in court to receive sentence, the suit which he had carried on against the secretaries of state fell of course to the ground.

1764.  
Wilkes out-  
lawed.

Though the power of ministers seemed to be shaken in the late contest, yet they had only been deserted by some of their partisans on this occasion; which soon appeared, when other questions, especially that of the supplies, came to be discussed: they had less reason therefore, and less excuse, for indulging in a vindictive spirit, by dismissing some military officers of rank from the service, and among them lieutenant-general Conway, whose merit and abilities intitled him to different treatment: that which he received was creditable neither to the ministers nor to the sovereign; for the question which led to it was one that involved an important point of constitutional doctrine; and if the holding a commission in his majesty's service must prevent a member of the legislature from giving a conscientious vote on such an occasion, injustice is done, not only to the individual himself, but to the nation at large.

The method proposed for raising the supplies this year was so far gratifying to the public, as it involved the imposition of no new taxes: not a loan was opened, nor even a lottery accepted, though few ministers had hitherto let slip such favorable opportunities of obliging their friends and strengthening their connexions. As a large debt contracted on account of the late war still remained to be satisfied, it was proposed to discharge this, to the amount of £2,000,000: exchequer bills, to the value of £1,800,000, were at such a discount, as to weigh

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

down the whole fabric of public credit : as the Bank contract was to be renewed, the treasury prudently took advantage of so favorable a conjuncture, and stipulated with this body to receive £1,000,000 of these bills for two years, at an interest reduced by one fourth ; as well as to pay a fine, on the renewal of its charter, of £100,000. For the rest of the exchequer bills, new ones were struck off ; and £700,000, the produce of French prizes, taken before the declaration of war, was applied to the public service. Ministers also brought to account, what, as they stated, had been left long unaccounted for, to the reproach of administration and the detriment of the service, the saving on non-effective men ; which amounted to so large a sum as £140,000. With these resources, added to the land-tax, now grown into a settled revenue of four shillings in the pound, the duty on malt, £2,000,000 overplus taken from the sinking-fund, and some other savings, they paid off the above-mentioned debt, and provided for the service of the ensuing year, with all its establishments and contingences ; the whole amounting to £7,820,102. They justified this employment of the overplus of the sinking-fund by precedents, and by the wisdom of the measure itself ; but they principally rested on the credit of having augmented it by near £400,000 in the single article of tea, an immense quantity of which had been brought to pay duty, by prudent measures taken in the prevention of smuggling, and a more careful collection of the revenue.

Proposition  
to tax the  
American  
colonies.

But the most important measure that distinguished this session, was the proposal to extract a direct revenue from the colonies. This idea was not wholly new ; for when Sir Robert Walpole failed in his excise scheme, he was earnestly recommended by Sir William Keith, governor of Virginia, to impose a tax on the North American provinces ; but the reply of that cautious and far-seeing statesman was to the following effect :—‘ You see I have old England against me already : do you think that I can wish to

set new England against me also?' George III., however, had different notions on this subject: for the scheme of taxing America was now taken up by him, and it met with encouragement from a considerable majority of the nation. At this period, when economy was loudly called for, his majesty proposed it to Mr. Grenville, as a just as well as advantageous measure, for relieving the country from those financial difficulties which had been occasioned by a war, undertaken chiefly for the protection and security of the colonies themselves.

The minister is said to have acknowledged that the proposed plan had not unfrequently occupied his own thoughts; though he had come to a conclusion, not only that it was impracticable, but that the very attempt to put it into execution would produce alarming consequences. The king listened patiently to his observations, but remained unconvinced: he again introduced the subject to Mr. Grenville, who still objected to the measure; when his majesty gave him to understand, that if he was disinclined or afraid to bring it forward, others would be found with resolution enough to make the attempt. The minister, having then only the alternative of resigning his office or complying with the king's inclinations, chose the latter, and determined to incorporate this into a series of resolutions, which he had framed for the promotion of his favorite object, the increase of the revenue.

In his regulations for the prevention of smuggling, Mr. Grenville had extended the collecting powers of naval officers to America and the West Indies; and they began to seize all ships employed in a clandestine trade, which was largely carried on at this time between the English and Spanish colonies; a trade, which was found very advantageous to England herself, as a channel through which her manufactures were imported into the Spanish settlements, while she received a return in gold and silver: but to the North American colonists it was almost necessary, as it chiefly enabled them to pay for the

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

manufactures which they drew from Great Britain : accordingly they murmured loudly at the check which it thus received. At the same time another measure contributed to increase their ill humor. The colonial assemblies, during the war, had been in the practice of issuing bills ; which, being made legal tenders for money, had suffered a depreciation, and caused some inconvenience : to remedy these evils, Mr. Grenville procured the enactment of a law, to prevent any such bills, as might hereafter be issued in his majesty's American provinces, from being made legal tenders ; which obstruction of their paper currency was very displeasing to the colonists : but their dissatisfaction reached its climax, when, in order to make them participate in the expenses necessary for their protection, it was resolved to bring them under the operation of direct taxes imposed by the British legislature.

A distinction had been hitherto preserved in these provinces between taxes, and duties arising from the exportation or importation of merchandise : payments had been imposed on certain goods and produce when carried to a foreign country, or to a different colony ; and to such imposts, considered merely as regulations of trade, the Americans had raised no objection : but when the minister proposed a deviation from this practice, and one which involved in it the rights of British subjects, the colonists quickly took alarm ; the proposition became far more serious and complicated than its authors could have anticipated ; and the scheme of raising an inconsiderable revenue from stamps used in the colonies, laid the foundation of one of the most important revolutions in the history of the world :

For the present, however, the introduction of a bill to sanction this financial measure was postponed to the next session of parliament, in order to allow time for the colonists to petition against it, if they should deem it exceptionable ; or to offer an equivalent for its expected produce.

The inhabitants of New England, whose republican sentiments particularly prompted them to oppose all such attempts, and whose bold intelligent character was best fitted for resistance, were the first to investigate these new schemes, and to discover their tendencies. They soon perceived that if the claim made by England to tax the colonies for her own benefit, and at her own discretion, should once be conceded, a system of oppression might be introduced, which from the nature of things would gradually become insupportable, but which, when once established, could hardly be removed by any efforts: as they were unrepresented in the British parliament, what could prevent the house of commons from going on to relieve themselves at their expense? and what compunction would be felt by a legislature in ordaining taxes from which the imposers would be intirely free? They accordingly denied the authority of the British parliament to levy any direct tax on the colonies; declaring every such attempt to be a violation of their rights as colonists, possessing by charter the privilege of taxing themselves for their own support; and as British subjects, who ought not to be taxed except through their proper representatives.

The inhabitants of the northern provinces had not lost that inflexibility of character, or captious spirit, which distinguished their sectarian ancestors; and long before this period there existed among them men who were determined to seek and to seize every opportunity of revolt: these gladly availed themselves of the present to propagate their sentiments, and to excite a spirit of discontent and resentment against Great Britain in those provinces of the south, whose milder character and increasing prosperity rendered them more obedient to government, and more attached to the mother country. The New Englanders succeeded in this design to a considerable extent: having obtained a power of appealing to the feelings of the colonists, without offending even the most loyal, they engaged their

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

countrymen to abstain from the use of those luxuries which had hitherto been imported from Great Britain; and having made colonial taxation a regular subject of their petitions to king, lords, and commons, they established very extensively the principle of resistance, and sowed the seed of that discontent throughout the states, which finally separated them from Great Britain.

Some other causes too at this time were in operation, by which these efforts were assisted. Government had lately established a permanent military force in the provinces, to support the executive power; and by increasing the salaries of the judges, had given rise to an opinion, that it was desirous of diminishing their independence: besides, many of the governors were thought to be inclined to arbitrary measures; and against several of them complaints had been made, which either received no attention from ministers, or if a reply was given, it was accompanied with asperity and rebuke: into this account also must be taken the vast increase of population lately introduced into all the provinces by the emigration of discontented spirits, and that feeling of independence, which increasing prosperity and the possession of strength produce.

In this state of public sentiment the postponement of the stamp-duty was a measure intirely nugatory: not a single province authorised its agent in England to consent to this tax, to propose any other in its stead, or to promise an equivalent; while every debate in their assemblies at home was marked by a determined opposition to the assumed jurisdiction of the British government over their property.

After the lapse of time that has taken place since the period of these disturbances; possessing, as we do, the power of forming a judgment of things from events; and being free from the heat and animosity which affected all parties concerned in them;—we are apt to assume too much credit to ourselves for a different course of action that we should have recommended; and perhaps ascribe too high a degree of

blame to those who first loosened the ties which connected our American provinces with the parent state. As to the main point, the right possessed by Great Britain of taxing her unrepresented colonies, there were very few persons at that time who denied its existence: planted as these colonies had been by Great Britain, cherished by her resources in their infancy and weakness, protected by her strength against their powerful foes, and raised to prosperity by her enlightened wisdom;—they never complained of privileges violated or rights disturbed, until they saw themselves freed from all those enemies on their frontiers, against the attacks of whom the force of the mother country was necessary to defend them. Their great object in their charters had been to gain a title to her favor, by the insertion of clauses importing that they were still to be considered as Englishmen; and in return for protection, they had frequently submitted to such fiscal regulations, as went far, in general opinion, to establish the principle of taxation.<sup>7</sup> But when England, exhausted by a long war, undertaken chiefly for the defence of these provinces, endeavored to draw aid from their returning prosperity, then it was that abstract propositions were set up, and claims were made, which, if granted to the Americans, appeared applicable to all our dependencies, like the isle of Man, and others of the same rank: such a position seemed absurd to the politicians of that time; and when to this feeling was added that of indignation against the ingratitude of the colonists, and the consciousness of our own strength, so lately and so triumphantly shown;—we cannot be greatly surprised at the compulsory measures adopted by the English, or the pertinacity with which they were carried on; for although, as regards the right of taxation, precedents drawn from the fiscal and commercial regulations above alluded to may be contro-

<sup>7</sup> See Stedman's History of the American War, pp. 10. 44.

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

verted and perhaps refuted ;—yet that such a right was then generally acknowledged, and the exertion of it in our particular circumstances considered just and reasonable, cannot be denied : it is no disparagement to ministers to say, that some persons existed, who thought differently regarding this right itself, and whose penetration anticipated the evils which the proposed plans were calculated to produce—that the sagacity of dean Tucker boldly advocated the scheme of liberating the colonies at once from their dependence, and profiting by the claim thus established to their love and gratitude—that governor Pownall was enabled by his experience to show their power as well as their determination to resist oppression—and that lord Chatham, with all the fire and force of eloquence, insisted on their rights, and deprecated every harsh measure which tended to hasten the catastrophe that ensued : parliament could not anticipate the result of the contest ; its legal advisers reasoned only from the usage of past times ; a majority in the country was on its side ; while the king would sooner have parted with his head, than have relinquished a right which he supposed to be attached to his crown.

The foregoing observations are intended to apply solely to the question of right, not to that of expediency ; and to vindicate the parliament, not the minister of the day. Little indeed can be said in excuse of Mr. Grenville : he prided himself on his talents for figures ; he stood prominently forward as a financial minister ; and he ought to have known that the finances of the country were not exhausted ; that it had the means of raising a revenue far more than adequate to its expenses, without searching for new sources ; and that from the increasing commerce of America alone, if well governed, it would soon have been enabled even to pay off the national debt : if he did not know this, he was not fit for the situation which he occupied ; if he did know it, and yet consented to carry the king's favorite measure for



the purpose of keeping his own place, the slur on his abilities will be removed, only to be fixed on his moral character.

CHAP.  
VI.

But while the seeds of war were springing up in our American colonies, government was relieved from a considerable source of anxiety, which had some time existed, in a merciless and destructive contest carried on with the savage tribes that bordered on their territories. The colonists had not only imprudently neglected all means of acquiring the affections and confidence of the Indians since the conclusion of the Canadian war, but had very unwarrantably pushed their settlements beyond the prescribed limits, and trenched on the hunting grounds, which are the sole resource of savage life. Irritated by seeing strangers almost surrounding their woods with a strong line of forts, and alarmed at an unfounded report which was industriously circulated by French jesuits, that their extirpation was intended, these wild tribes had formed a powerful confederacy in the spring of the preceding year, and made a sudden attack during harvest on all our frontier settlements. The surprise being complete, a large number of planters were put to death with every species of torture that savage ingenuity could devise; their effects were plundered, their habitations burned, their crops destroyed, and many members of their families carried off; while numerous itinerant merchants, travelling throughout the country, and relying on the peaceable disposition of the inhabitants, were cruelly murdered; and their property, valued at £200,000, was plundered. In consequence of these ravages, the western frontiers of Virginia, Maryland, and Pennsylvania were deserted, and the savages surprised three garrisons: they were rapidly advancing on the principal force stationed at fort Pitt, when general Amherst despatched a strong detachment under captain Dalzel, which was fiercely attacked on its march, and with difficulty effected a retreat into fort Detroit: a numerous body of Indians then surrounded fort Pitt, to the relief of which colonel

1764.  
War with  
North  
American  
Indians.

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

Bouquet advanced with a strong corps under his command : the severities and dangers which these troops underwent can only be conceived by those who know what in those days was to be done and to be endured in an American campaign, where every object was frightful in the face of the country, the enemy, and the climate ; where inhospitable woods and morasses afforded no refreshment to the healthy, or relief to the sick and wounded ; where victories were rarely decisive, but defeats most calamitous ; and simple death was one of the least misfortunes that could befall a soldier. The Indians, who had their scouts over all the country, were no sooner informed of the march of the English troops, than they abandoned the blockade of the fort, in order to cut off, if possible, the advancing reinforcement : having met it in a rough and mountainous country, near a dangerous defile, called Turtle Creek, which the British were preparing to pass by night after a long and fatiguing march of seventeen miles, they made a sudden attack on the advanced guard ; but were beat off, and even pursued to a considerable distance. As soon as the savages were driven from one eminence, they occupied another, till by a constant accession of numbers they were enabled to surround the whole detachment, and to attack their convoy in the rear. The action now became general ; above sixty of the British troops were killed or wounded ; and it required all their skill and bravery to repulse the foe, which came on them increasing in numbers : at length they succeeded ; and placing their wounded, with the convoy, in the centre, they passed an anxious night with scarcely any repose, surrounded by daring enemies, who seemed to wait only for the light in order to complete their destruction.

When morning dawned, the savages, at a short distance, began to utter terrific yells in order to intimidate their antagonists ; after which, they rushed to the assault with the ferocity of wild beasts, and made the most vigorous efforts to pene-

trate into the camp: though repulsed, they still continued their attacks; and the British, continually victorious, were yet exposed to the greatest dangers. Colonel Bouquet, seeing that when the savages were hard pressed they always fled off, to rally with greater effect, and that every thing depended on bringing them to close action, determined to feign a retreat; and this manœuvre completely succeeded; for as the Indians were rushing on with the anticipation of victory, the first two companies halted and received them with a steady fire: at the second volley they fled, but were received by two other companies who had wheeled round, and now presented themselves, wholly routing and pursuing them with great slaughter: the British however had suffered so much, that they were obliged to destroy part of their provisions, and thus give up one of the chief objects of their expedition. About two miles farther on, the savages made another attack, which was again defeated; and the detachment arrived at fort Pitt in four days after the action, having suffered in killed and wounded nearly as much as the Indians: but to these latter, who were not populous tribes, the loss, increased as it was by the death of their bravest chiefs, was deemed almost irreparable.

Though forts Detroit and Pitt were thus secured, the Indians in other parts of the country were not discouraged, but made an attempt on Niagara; chiefly however attacking the convoys, with the hope of reducing it by starvation. The great distance of the forts from each other, and of all from any civilised portion of the country, favored this design: near to the carrying-place of Niagara a large body of savages surrounded a convoy of British troops on the fourteenth of September, and killed seventy-two privates, beside commissioned and non-commissioned officers. On lake Erie they had the rashness to attack, in canoes, a schooner, which was conveying provisions to fort Detroit; but here they were repulsed with great loss; for against that

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

floating battery they were not able to make their approaches with so much facility as by land.

In this stage of the business, general Amherst, aware that, although British discipline and valor must ultimately triumph over savage ferocity, the prosperity of the colonies would suffer greatly in a prolonged contest, used the powerful influence of Sir William Johnson with the Indian warriors; and the indefatigable zeal of that officer contrived to retain in the British interests such of them as had not yet commenced hostilities: he also met with great success among the six nations, and some neighboring tribes; but could not prevail on the Senecas and their allies to discontinue their massacres and depredations, until they felt the effects of British power; when they also began to profess a desire for peace.

Peace con-  
cluded.

In the treaty concluded with them by Sir William Johnson, all occasions of future quarrels were guarded against; their limits were more accurately determined; their past offences were forgiven; and, in consequence of their solemnly engaging to commit no more acts of violence, they were re-admitted to the friendship of Great Britain, and indulged in a fair and open trade. This reconciliation took place in April; and a principal source of assistance being thus cut off from the other hostile tribes, these also were soon reduced to submission by the skilful and determined measures of colonels Bouquet and Bradstreet, each of whom advanced into their territories with a large body of troops; treaties were then concluded with the Indian chiefs, who delivered up their prisoners, renounced all pretensions to the forts and other posts already occupied by the British; admitting also their claim to build others necessary for trade, and giving hostages for the fulfilment of the terms of this convention.

The scene which ensued, when the prisoners were brought in, is represented as having been one of extraordinary interest, exhibiting the effects of expectation, terror, joy, and disappointment in the

highest degree; fathers and mothers recognising and clasping their long-lost infants, husbands clinging to the necks of their newly recovered wives, sisters and brothers scarcely able to speak the same language, or for a time to feel certain that they were the offspring of the same parents; numbers both of men and women flying from place to place, after relations not found, trembling to receive an answer to their inquiries, or stiffened with horror at the tidings of their unhappy fate.

The Indians too bore a part in heightening these affecting scenes: they delivered up their captives with the utmost reluctance, shed tears over them in torrents, and continued their regard to them all the time they remained in the camp, visiting them daily, bringing all the presents which they had bestowed on them while in their families, and adding others, with every mark of the most tender affection. The following extract from the speech of the Shawanese chief, on releasing his prisoners, shows the strong attachment felt by these native tribes for the captives they had preserved:—  
‘Father,’ said he to the English officer, ‘we have brought your flesh and blood to you: they have been all united to us by adoption; and although we now deliver them up, we will always look on them as our relations, whenever the Great Spirit is pleased that we may visit them: we have taken as much care of them as if they had been our own flesh and blood: they are now become unacquainted with your customs and manners; and therefore we request you will use them tenderly and kindly, which will induce them to live with you contentedly.’<sup>7</sup> When the army marched, many solicited and obtained leave to accompany their former captives as far as fort Pitt, and employed themselves in hunting, and bringing provisions for them on the road. A youth of the Mingo nation had conceived so great an affection for a Virginian

<sup>7</sup> Annual Register for 1765, p. 207.

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

young woman, whom he called his wife, that against all remonstrances on account of the danger to which he exposed himself by approaching the frontiers, he persisted in following her; and this at the risk of being killed by the surviving relatives of many unfortunate persons who had been captured or scalped by his tribe. Again, among the captives, numbers both of children and adults were found unwilling to leave those with whom they had so long sojourned: the Shawanese were obliged to bind several of their prisoners, and force them along to the camp: many women, who were delivered up, clung to their savage companions at parting, and continued in bitter lamentations, refusing even sustenance; while some found means afterwards to escape, and ran back to the Indian territories.

Among the bills prepared for the royal assent at the close of this session, was one to increase the revenue of the post-office, by correcting and restraining abuses in the practice of franking letters, through which it was ascertained that government lost on an average the annual sum of £170,000. It was now made felony, subject to the punishment of transportation, to forge a frank.

Domestic  
disturb-  
ances.

The measures of the new administration were generally viewed with satisfaction in the house of commons. 'Mr. Grenville,' says lord Barrington, 'has obtained a great deal of credit very deservedly; and this credit helps him every where. Lord Halifax's garter is well-timed; and my lord chancellor is made an earl, purely to show favor to such as firmly support government.'<sup>8</sup> The king's speech on dismissing his parliament contained little beyond the usual thanks to both houses for their wise and spirited exertions, a declaration of pacific assurances from foreign powers, and an exhortation that all would employ the present season of tranquillity in perfecting the works of peace so happily commenced. It cannot indeed be denied that such

<sup>8</sup> Ellis's Original Letters, second series, vol. iv. p. 479.

exhortation was strongly called for in the present state of domestic affairs: for not only did the cider tax occasion many turbulent meetings and violent resolutions, which ended frequently in riots; but a great scarcity of provisions<sup>9</sup> gave rise to much discontent, causing a vast increase of robberies and almost every species of crime; which evils were augmented by the discharge of numerous soldiers and sailors at the peace, who had not yet procured employment, or settled into habits of industry. In consequence also of the greater resort of country gentlemen and landed proprietors to the metropolis, anxious to obtain the many lucrative offices in the patronage of government, increased as they were by the extent of our conquests and colonial acquisitions, an immense quantity of land was left to the management of stewards and bailiffs; while the owners involved themselves in debt, and were reduced to the necessity of raising their rents. This took place particularly in Scotland and Ireland; so that the people were driven to despair, and many thousands of industrious artisans emigrated to the North American provinces, in order to obtain means of subsistence, and at the same time preserve the religion and customs of their forefathers. This multitude, indignant at the treatment they had received at home, and adopting a mode of life which approximated to the principles of primeval equality, helped to accelerate that separation of the colonies from the mother country, which probably could not have been long deferred.

The absence of those strong excitements which spring from a state of warfare, turned men's attention to maritime discoveries, of which the king was a very active patron: his munificence seemed to restore that spirit of enterprise which distinguished the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, and

Voyages of  
discovery.

<sup>9</sup> This scarcity formed the subject of parliamentary inquiry, when it appeared by the evidence of many witnesses to have been chiefly occasioned by the scandalous arts and practices of forestallers, gaining the command of the markets, and keeping them in a few hands. See Annual Register for 1764, p. 138.

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

which now produced results no less brilliant than the successes of the war had been. It was in this year that commodore Byron set sail on his voyage; being successively followed by captains Wallis, Carteret, Cook, and Mulgrave; so that in a few years from this time discoveries were made of greater extent and importance than all which had occurred since the expeditions of Columbus.

As a vacancy now occurred in the bishopric of Osnaburg, the presentation to which was in the houses of Saxony and Hanover alternately; and as the present turn belonged to the king in his quality of elector, he bestowed it on his infant son, prince Frederic: but although the chapter obeyed his *congé d'élire* in this nomination, they were unwilling to give up the management of the revenues during the minority of the young bishop; and the dispute which arose on this subject was subsequently referred to the superior jurisdiction of the empire. The archduke Joseph was also elected king of the Romans: but a still more important election, as it regarded the affairs of Europe, took place in Poland, the throne of which kingdom had been vacant since October, 1763, and was now filled by count Poniatowsky, a great favorite of the Russian empress. During the interregnum, Catharine acquired a great ascendancy in the affairs of Poland; and by protecting the dissidents<sup>10</sup> against the jealousy and injustice of the Roman catholics, introduced a large army into the country, by means of which the dissidents formed a strong confederation: this was afterwards opposed by a similar force of their antagonists; which soon brought the king to the necessity of casting himself on the protection of the empress for the preservation of his crown.

Affairs of  
Poland.

In her general system regarding Poland, Catharine was supported by the king of Prussia, whose great object was to prevent its throne becoming

<sup>10</sup> Under this term were included protestants, members of the Greek communion, and all who dissented from the church of Rome.



hereditary in the house of Saxony; but the empress strongly opposed the establishment of any hereditary succession: and this was the object of a secret article in the treaty of alliance recently concluded between these two potentates.

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

In southern Europe a contest had long subsisted between the republic of Genoa and the isle of Corsica; the oppressor and the oppressed. During the war of 1740, Genoa being an ally of France, England had repeatedly afforded aid to these brave islanders, but had neglected to make any mention of them in the treaty of Aix la Chapelle: they however continued to defend their liberties with invincible courage and resolution. During the administration of lord Bute, they applied to the British nation, where they were deservedly popular, for assistance; but were answered by a proclamation which denounced them as rebels, and strictly forbade the subjects of Great Britain to afford them the slightest aid.

After various conquests, however, and various triumphs, the Corsicans, under the celebrated Paoli, gained a superiority over their oppressors, which promised them success in throwing off the yoke: then it was that the Genoese senate formally requested assistance from the court of France, as an ally of the republic: this application was most favorably received; for how seldom did his most christian majesty, under the old *régime* of France, refuse to shed blood in the cause of despotism! A convention was signed at Compiègne, by which the French king guaranteed the island to Genoa, promising to send a naval and military force to assist in its reduction: but the Corsicans, though justly alarmed for the event, determined with inflexible resolution to defend their liberties against the insupportable oppression of Genoese tyranny. General Paoli was commissioned to remonstrate, in the most respectful terms, with the French king, against the act of injustice he was committing, when the Corsicans were on the very point of

Subjugation of  
Corsica.

CHAP.  
VI.

1764.

driving their enemies out of the island : but anticipating the futility of their appeal to such a monarch as Louis XV., his countrymen charged him also to solicit protection at the different courts of Europe, especially those of London and Vienna ; and at all events to implore their mediation. Every such application however was received with coldness or contempt ; and the French troops, under the marquis de Marbœuf, arriving in the latter part of the year, took possession of those fortresses which still remained in the hands of the Genoese. It is not necessary to describe the desultory, but vindictive and bloody contest which ensued ; but it becomes us to remark the severe though late examples of retributive justice in this case of national oppression. From Corsica went out that extraordinary man who ruled France with a rod of iron, spilling the blood of millions of her sons in the advancement of his ambitious projects ; while Genoa, after having long been subject to French domination, and lost every vestige of her ancient glory, was delivered up by the British minister, lord Castle-reagh, to the bigoted despot who then occupied the Sardinian throne.

Suppression of  
jesuits.

In this year the society of jesuits was completely suppressed in France ; but their expiring influence had been exerted with double force on the eve of its extinction. Actuated by the deepest sentiments of revenge, they secretly arraigned the measures of a corrupt court and vicious administration ; exciting the people to the most bitter complaints, under the weight of taxes, the extortion of farmers-general, and the capricious influence of royal mistresses : one of these, the celebrated Pompadour, died about this time, after having irritated all classes by her inordinate pride, insulted the laws by patronising miscreants of every description, and contributed by her extravagance to render the embarrassed state of the finances irretrievable.

Some events also occurred, which threatened to disturb the tranquillity of our relations with France

and Spain. A French force in a ship of the line, with three smaller vessels, suddenly appeared before Tortuga, a small island in the West Indies, valuable only for the salt which it produces; and having carried off the English inhabitants prisoners to Cape François, took intire possession of the place. The report of this unjustifiable violence caused a considerable sensation in England; but the court of Versailles, in reply to a spirited remonstrance made by the British ambassador, explicitly disavowed its sanction to any part of the proceeding, and at the same time promised an ample indemnification; the terms of which were to be adjusted by the governors of Jamaica and St. Domingo. Besides this proof of sincerity in desiring to preserve the peace, France had lately given another, in a proposal submitted to the British government, for discharging the balance due for the subsistence of French prisoners during the late war. The offer made was £670,000 for an acquittal of the whole demand; £130,000 to be paid immediately, and the rest at the rate of £40,000 each quarter.

Such conduct appeared the more honorable, when contrasted with that of Spain, whose government refused to pay the ransom agreed on at the capitulation of Manilla. The principal arguments used to evade its engagements were, that the signatures to the capitulation were extorted by violence, and that the English themselves broke it by permitting the city to be pillaged: these allegations however were instantly refuted in a memorial addressed to lord Halifax by Sir William Draper; and the shameless sophistry of the Spanish government was completely exposed.<sup>11</sup> But the most outrageous conduct was exhibited by the commodore of some Spanish xebèques cruising against the Algerines, who attacked and captured an English vessel, which had hoisted its colors, after reducing it almost to a wreck, and wounding many of the crew; amongst whom

<sup>11</sup> See Annual Register for 1764, p. 138.

CHAP. VI. 1764. was a passenger, who lost his arm. In another part of the globe also complaints were exhibited against the Spanish power; for not only had the English logwood cutters in the bay of Honduras been disturbed by order of the governor, Don Ramirez; but they were ordered to remove from their places of settlement, under pretence that they were unable to prove themselves British subjects. In the two latter instances however full satisfaction was promised by the court of Madrid to all parties aggrieved: the affair of the Manilla ransom remained unsettled; one of the few instances of reproach that can be cast on Spanish honor, and a fertile source of future attacks on the pusillanimity of the British government.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1765.

King's speech—Notice of his sister's marriage—Questions in parliament relating to general warrants, and the attorney-general's powers—Discussion respecting the taxation of the American provinces—The Americans deny the principle and right—Opinions out of the house—Bill to purchase the regalities of the isle of Man—Causes in operation to weaken the administration—Distress of commercial men and laborers—Scarcity of provisions—Regency bill—Riots of the silk-weavers—Kind consideration of their majesties—Displeasure of the king against his cabinet—He applies to the duke of Cumberland to form a new administration—Conferences with lord Temple and Mr. Pitt—The attempt fails, and ministers propose the conditions of their continuance in office—These are accepted, but much dissatisfaction prevails on both sides—The king again makes overtures to lord Temple and Mr. Pitt, which fail—Formation of the Rockingham ministry—Its first acts—Death of its patron—Its influence diminished—Opposition in America made to the stamp duty—Acts of the presbyterian faction—Proceedings at Boston, New York, and Philadelphia, on the arrival of the stamp act—Reasons for the conduct of the colonists—Proceedings in the assembly of Virginia, and in those of New England—Congress at New York—Its resolutions—Public irritation on the arrival of the stamps, and general proceedings of the colonists—Irritation in some of the West Indian islands—Conduct of the Rockingham ministry blamable—Obituary—Domestic events.

ON the tenth of January, when parliament re-assembled, the leading topics of the king's speech referred to continental events; whence he concluded that the nation had reason to expect the continuance of 'peace, which for his part he was resolved to maintain.' In allusion to America, and the scheme of taxing that country, his majesty said, 'The ex-

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

perience I have had of your former conduct makes me rely on your wisdom and firmness, in promoting that obedience to the laws, and respect for the legislative authority of this kingdom, which is essentially necessary for the safety of the whole; and in establishing such regulations as may best connect and strengthen every part of my dominions, for their mutual benefit and support.' At this time also his majesty introduced to the notice of parliament a match concluded between the prince royal of Denmark, and the princess Caroline Matilda, the king's youngest sister; to be solemnised as soon as their respective ages would permit.<sup>12</sup>

Early in the session the attempt was renewed, by opposition, in the commons, to procure a resolution against the legality of general warrants; but the decision of this point was eluded, and the previous question carried. Another motion to restrain the attorney-general in his power of filing informations *ex officio* was likewise negatived.

Debates on  
colonial  
taxation.

The highly important topic of colonial taxation was soon brought under discussion. It has been already mentioned, that the measure of laying a duty on stamps had been postponed, in order to give the colonists time to propose, in lieu of it, any other mode of taxation more convenient and agreeable to themselves: but it was the principle of taxation itself to which they objected; accordingly, their agents were instructed to reject every kind of compromise; and to oppose the bill, if brought into parliament, by petitions and remonstrances, questioning the right of the British legislature to impose any direct tax on her colonies. In the memorials transmitted from America, the claims of England were declared to be totally opposed to the spirit and letter of her own constitution; while great indignation was expressed at the argument used against the colonists, by which they were considered as

<sup>12</sup> The prince was born January 29, 1749, and the princess, July 22, 1751. The result of these unfortunate espousals will be noticed hereafter.

virtually represented in the British parliament. 'The very essence,' they alleged, 'of representation consists in this; that the representative is placed in a situation analogous to that of his constituents, as far as relates to his being subject to every law and tax which he enacts for them: with regard to Great Britain, this is precisely the case; but in taxing America, these mock representatives relieve themselves by the imposts which they lay on others. Who does not see the irresistible tendency to abuses in such a system? and what security have they who are called constituents against its oppression?' In reply to the statement, that it was reasonable for America to contribute her proportion toward the general expenses of the empire, it was urged, 'that America had never been backward in obeying the constitutional requisitions of the crown, and contributing liberally, in her own assemblies, toward the expenses of wars, in which, conjointly with England, she had been engaged: that in the course of the last memorable contest, her patriotism had been so conspicuous, that large sums had been repeatedly voted by parliament, as an indemnification to the colonists for exertions allowed to be far beyond their means and resources;—exertions, which, notwithstanding all such indemnifications, left them with a debt of more than £2,500,000; and a large portion of this was still unliquidated: that the proper compensation Great Britain ought to expect, was the monopoly of their trade, the direction and regulation of which was acknowledged to belong by right to the British legislature.'

The point however was not to be carried by argument or representations: the minister had pledged himself too firmly, and gone too far to recede: the memorials therefore which questioned the legislative rights of parliament were not allowed to be read in the house: a proposal indeed was made to hear the colonial agents at its bar against the tax; but this was rejected by them as derogatory to the honor of the colonies, who were determined on this occasion,

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

not to petition, but to protest. On the seventh of February, fifty-five resolutions of the committee of ways and means, relating to this branch of the revenue, were agreed to by the commons, and afterwards incorporated into an act for laying nearly the same duty on stamps in the American colonies as were payable in Great Britain. The debates which followed the proposal of this bill were neither long nor animated. Its most eloquent supporter was Mr. Charles Townshend, in whom the minister had lately acquired a powerful auxiliary; and its principal opponents were the friends of the duke of Newcastle, among whom general Conway and Mr. Dowdeswell particularly distinguished themselves: it was also attacked by colonel Barré, in a vehement and indignant harangue, which he concluded with a prophetic denunciation; but there was only one division during its progress. In the house of lords it passed without debate, division, or protest; and received the royal assent by commission on the twenty-second of March.

Public sentiment on this subject.

Out of the house, the subject underwent a severer scrutiny and a more ample discussion: much was brought forward, on both sides, respecting the right of Great Britain to tax her transatlantic provinces; and the subjection of Roman colonists to their parent state was quoted as authority by one party, while the independence of Grecian emigrations was insisted on by the other. Wiser heads, however, laid aside the abstract question of right, and viewed the subject altogether as one of practical expediency. They knew that commercial advantages were the chief objects proposed in the planting of our colonies; and that every expectation on this head was fully realised in the great and rapid accession of trade, caused by the increasing wants of those foreign settlements. In the old plan of profiting by their commerce, we acquired their wealth without murmur or dispute; and 'in this manner,' as Sir Robert Walpole observed, 'we taxed them agreeably both to their own constitution and to ours.'



It now remained to be seen, whether this system of tried advantage, or new schemes, doubtful in operation and certain of opposition, were most likely to advance the grand objects for which our colonies were established.

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

Ever attentive to his plans for improving the national revenue, Mr. Grenville determined to check the progress of illicit trade on our own coasts: for that purpose he recommended to his majesty the purchase of the regalities of the isle of Man, which place had become a notorious receptacle of smugglers. This small territory formed a domain of singular tenure, being part of the territories of the crown, but not of the realm; under allegiance to the king, but governed by its own laws and customs: his majesty had therein neither courts nor officers; and there was no instance of a prerogative writ having been sent and returned from thence, as there was no officer to whom it could be addressed.

Purchase of  
the isle of  
Man.

Before the second reading of the bill, which was intended to alienate the sovereignty of so remarkable an inheritance from the duke of Athol, in whose family it had been vested for nearly four centuries, the noble inheritor and his consort presented a petition, stating their reluctance to separate the honors of this princely patrimony from the estates bequeathed to them by their ancestors; but throwing themselves, with dutiful submission, on the pleasure of their sovereign and the disposal of parliament, they merely requested such a compensation as the justice of the case might seem to demand. They were also heard by council in support of their claims; and when it was determined that the island, with all its jurisdictions, interests, and dependences, should be revested in the crown, the sum of £70,000 was awarded to the petitioners; to whom also were reserved their landed property, and their rights in and over the soil as lords of the manor, together with the patronage of the bishopric, and other ecclesiastical benefices.

CHAP.  
VII.1765.  
Instability  
of the cabi-  
net.

But though the approbation of parliament followed the measures of Mr. Grenville, and seemed to promise stability to his administration, several causes were at this time in action that tended to weaken and dissolve it. The threats of the Americans, which they were beginning to put in execution, of abstaining from the use of British goods, began to alarm our ship-owners, merchants, and manufacturers, as well as various classes of artisans and laborers whom they employed; while the complaints of these latter were heightened by a scarcity of bread and the high price of provisions, which were ascribed, however unjustly, to the misconduct of ministers: but the popular discontents might have been disregarded or suppressed, had not Mr. Grenville given deep offence to a royal personage, against whose resentment at this time no minister could have stood. In the early part of the year his majesty had been attacked by a severe illness; and reflecting, after his recovery, on the long minority that must have ensued if his complaint had proved fatal, he consulted parliament on the expediency of vesting in him the power of appointing, from time to time, the queen, or any other member of his family usually residing in Great Britain, to be guardian of his heir and regent of the kingdom; subject however to the restrictions of a regency act passed in the reign of his predecessor. In consequence of this suggestion, a bill was introduced into the house of lords, framed according to the terms proposed by his majesty: but in the commons a motion was made requiring the king to name those persons whom he would trust with so important a charge; since it appeared to be contrary, not only to precedent, but to the principles of the constitution, that any one should be appointed to it, who had not been particularly specified and approved by parliament. This motion being negatived, a question was next raised about the construction of the words, 'any other of the royal family;' to which the answer given by ministers was, that they meant 'the de-

scendants of George II. : ' but as this interpretation would have excluded the princess dowager from all share in the public counsels, an amendment was moved at the next reading, to insert her name next to that of the queen : and this was carried by a large majority ; though not until the party feelings of the day, and the jealousy of her influence entertained by a portion of the cabinet, had become very apparent.<sup>13</sup>

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

<sup>13</sup> The following account of this affair, which soon led to a change of ministry, is given by Mr. Nicholls on such authority, that it would be unpardonable to omit it :—' About the beginning of the year 1765 the king fell ill ; I know it has been said that his illness was a mental derangement ; but I do not believe it. On his recovery, it occurred to Mr. Grenville and the other ministers, that if the king had died, there would have been considerable difficulty in appointing a regent ; and as the prince of Wales was then only two years and a half old, a regency, and for a long continuance, would have been necessary : they therefore determined to bring into parliament a bill, enabling the king to appoint a regent by his will : but Mr. Grenville did not choose that the princess dowager of Wales should be the regent ; and he probably thought that the princess dowager would be the person whom the king would be most disposed to select ; for during the princess dowager's life, the queen does not appear to have had much influence over the king : he therefore suggested to the king, that his power of appointment must be confined to the queen and the descendants of George II. The king resisted this, as he saw that by such a limitation he should be precluded from nominating the princess dowager : Mr. Grenville persevered ; telling the king, that he could not undertake to carry the bill through the house of commons, except his majesty's power were thus limited. The king at length yielded ; and as the bill was already in the house of lords, he consented that the earl of Halifax, secretary of state, should be sent down to the house of lords with a message to the earl of Northington, at that time chancellor, signifying that it was the king's pleasure that his power of appointment should be confined to the queen and the descendants of George II. I have been told, and from good authority, that the earl of Northington replied,—' Your lordship astonishes me ; I should not have given credit to such a message if it had not been brought to me by one of his majesty's secretaries of state.' But the bill was framed agreeably to this message, and sent down in that shape to the house of commons. After the bill had thus passed the lords, the earl of Northington waited on the king to inform him what had been done ; adding, that in obedience to the message which he had received through the earl of Halifax, his majesty would not have the power of appointing the princess dowager of Wales. The king replied, ' Mr. Grenville tells me, that if my power of appointment had been extended to the princess dowager, he could not have undertaken to carry the bill through the house of commons.'—' Would your majesty have wished to have had the power of appointing the princess dowager ? '—' Most certainly, provided the introduction of such a power would not have provoked a debate painful to the princess dowager herself.' The earl of Northington said no more ; but on his retirement from the king's closet, sent for Mr. John Morton, member for Abingdon. To Mr. Morton he gave these instructions :—' When the bill in your house is in a committee, jump up, and move to insert the name of the princess dowager of Wales, and in the mean time keep the design to yourself.' Mr. Morton followed the earl of Northington's directions. The opposition, not expecting such an amendment, was not prepared to oppose it : it would have been indecent in the minister to have opposed it, and the amendment was adopted without one dissenting voice. Mr. Morton was an intimate friend of my father, and related this anecdote to him.'

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.  
Depression  
of trade.

On the fifteenth of May, when the king went in person to give his assent to this bill, a large mob of silk-weavers, reinforced by various trades immediately depending on that branch, conceiving themselves injured by the general use of foreign silks, assembled, together with their wives and children, to the amount of many thousands, and marched with black flags and beat of drum to St. James's palace : from thence they proceeded to the two houses of parliament, obstructing all communication between them, insulting many of the members, and creating serious apprehensions for the public tranquillity : these tumultuous proceedings were repeated on the two following days ; the mansion of a nobleman suspected of favoring French goods was beset, and the windows of many shops which sold them were broken ; but at length the tumult was repressed by the civil power, with military aid ; and some of the most guilty were brought to punishment : after this a subscription was opened for the relief of the more necessitous, and the principal silk mercers agreed to recall the orders which they had given for foreign articles ; though it was well known that the cause of the distress was more owing to a want of the usual call for the work of their looms in the British colonies, than to any extraordinary importation of foreign silks.

In the beginning of the year absurd petitions had been presented to his majesty by deputations from other trades,<sup>14</sup> complaining of great distress, and accusing foreigners of engrossing the profits of their business : these, being unaccompanied with violence, were graciously received by the king, who declared in his answer, ' that he had nothing dearer to his heart than the happiness of his people ; and that they might be assured he should at all times use his endeavors to promote their welfare : ' to prove the sincerity of this declaration, both he and the queen exerted all their influence in opposing that preference

<sup>14</sup> From the hair-dressers and hatters.

which was given to foreign manufactures over our own among the nobility and gentry. Her majesty both by precept and example excited the ladies to wear home-made silks; and the king not only caused his birthday to be celebrated with more than usual magnificence, but ordered it to be announced, that he expected all who attended the court to appear in clothes of British manufacture.

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

The disgust which the king felt against the present administration, on account of the affront offered to his mother, was heightened by the refractory disposition of the duke of Bedford, who not only interfered with his majesty's just rights in the exercise of his patronage; but, during some conferences which the sovereign held with his ministers, respecting their continuance in office, is said to have used very strong language respecting that system of duplicity and secret influence by which the nominal cabinet thought themselves aggrieved: as the rest of the members adhered to their president, it was resolved to dismiss them.

Attempts  
to form a  
new admin-  
istration.

In consequence of this determination, his majesty applied to his uncle, the duke of Cumberland, for assistance; who instantly sought a conference with lord Temple and Mr. Pitt, in which he mentioned the earl of Northumberland as a proper leader for a new administration: this proposal, however, was unacceptable to lord Temple, whom nothing would content except a ministry composed intirely of his own friends, and thus rendered inaccessible to that secret influence which might obstruct his measures for the public welfare: whatever Mr. Pitt's thoughts may have been, his expressions were more complaisant; but in a second conference, when he was requested to name the conditions on which he would accept office, his reply is said to have been, 'that he was ready to go to St. James's provided he might carry with him the constitution.' In fact, a total change of men, measures, and counsels was demanded on one side; but, on the other, it was considered indispensable that 'the king's friends,' as

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

they were called, should continue in their official situations. The premiership was next offered to lord Lyttleton; who, before he gave in his answer, desired to confer with lord Temple and Mr. Pitt: but the duke, feeling convinced that no advantageous result could proceed from negotiations in that quarter, retracted his proposal, and advised his majesty to retain his present ministers.

In consequence of this recommendation, they were requested to name the conditions of their continuance in office; and at a meeting of the principal members of the cabinet, Mr. Grenville was commissioned to wait on his majesty with the following terms:—1. that lord Bute should not interfere directly or indirectly in the affairs of government: 2. that Mr. Stuart Mackenzie, lord Bute's brother, should be dismissed from the office of keeper of the privy seal in Scotland: 3. that lord Holland should be deprived of the paymastership of the forces, which might then be given to a member of the house of commons: 4. that the marquis of Granby should be placed at the head of the army: and, 5. that the government of Ireland should be left to the discretionary arrangement of the ministry.<sup>15</sup>

These were very hard terms for the king, who now found himself in the same predicament as that in which his grandfather had been placed by the duke of Newcastle; but his chagrin was considerably augmented, by knowing that he was brought into it by the very instruments he had selected to keep him clear of such an inconvenience: the difficulties however which had already obstructed the formation of a new cabinet rendered a partial compliance necessary. Mr. Mackenzie, much against his majesty's inclination, was dismissed from his office; Charles Townshend was made paymaster of the forces; and lord Weymouth appointed to the government in Ireland: but so much dissatisfaction remained on both sides, that the truce was necessarily hollow, and the

<sup>15</sup> From private information given to Mr. Adolphus, the sources of which are in general very correct: vol. i. p. 170.

arrangement could not long subsist: accordingly, the king himself very soon requested to see Mr. Pitt at Buckingham-house; in consequence of which interview, he and lord Temple had a joint conference with his majesty, who condescended to lay before them certain propositions for their acceptance: Mr. Pitt at first appeared inclined to receive them favorably; but lord Temple was intractable, and found means to draw his friend over to his opinion. Under these circumstances, recourse was again had to the duke of Cumberland, who finally made overtures to the old whig party, with which he had retained an unbroken and honorable connexion, and of which the marquis of Rockingham, a nobleman of upright principles and amiable character, was acknowledged as the leader. He was now placed at the head of the treasury; the duke of Grafton and general Conway were appointed secretaries of state, the management of the house of commons being committed to the latter; Mr. Dowdeswell was the new chancellor of the exchequer; and the duke of Newcastle, whose age and eccentricities unfitted him for any active employment, was gratified by the honorable office of privy seal: lord Weymouth, who had been lately appointed to the government of Ireland, was superseded by general Conway's brother, the earl of Hertford; and the president's chair, vacated by the duke of Bedford, was given to lord Winchelsea; while the earl of Northington still kept his place on the woolsack. These were the chief alterations; though every department of the state experienced, more or less, the effects of change: but it must not be forgotten, that at this period the celebrated Edmund Burke rose like a bright star on the political horizon. He was engaged as private secretary by lord Rockingham, who gladly availed himself of the services of a man already distinguished for high literary excellence and official capacity: indeed, 'the British dominions,' as an eminent writer of the time observes, 'could not have furnished a more able and fit person for that important and confidential situa-

Formation  
of the  
Rocking-  
ham minis-  
try.

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

tion : the only man since the days of Cicero who has united the talents of speaking and writing with irresistible force and energy :’ but if we take into account the political wisdom, the various knowlege, and above all, the deep comprehensive philosophy which distinguished this extraordinary man, where shall we find his parallel ?

The high character of the duke of Cumberland, founded on his generous disposition and undoubted patriotism, promised a success to the new ministry, which one of its first acts, that of raising the popular chief justice of the common pleas to the peerage, was well calculated to promote : but it soon received a severe shock in the death of its royal patron ; who expired suddenly on the thirty-first of October, regretted not more by the administration than by the people at large, among whom he enjoyed a very high degree of popularity. The blow was more severely felt, because there was from the first a want of union in this cabinet : nor was its leader, though a man who commanded universal respect by his known integrity, capable of collecting the scattered energies of party, and bringing them into a system. Relying too much on personal rank for official dignity, and for public confidence on hereditary prejudices, for which there was no longer room in the new system that was springing up, he soon found himself in the rear of public opinion : his ministerial capacities were subjected to very disadvantageous comparisons ; and the city of London, as well as some other large corporate bodies, began to clamor against the long detention of Mr. Pitt from office : besides, while the present ministers were not favorites at court, because they held some principles at variance with those of the king’s friends, the public thought that they had in some degree compromised their character, by consenting to act under the influence of that secret cabinet, which was the object of so much invective.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>16</sup> In order to show that these suspicions were incorrect, the following is given in a work of considerable merit :—‘ That the king’s firmness and good sense saved him from such degradation, is clear from an anecdote, recorded on good



If we suppose the introduction of stamp duties into the American colonies to have been a measure both expedient and just, still the late minister committed a great fault, in deferring it so long after his intentions had been made known; for in that period full scope was given to faction for making arrangements to oppose the law. The first party which distinguished itself by a refractory disposition was that of the presbyterians, who availed themselves of the rising discontents to execute their long contemplated plan of forming a general synod. In consequence of a circular letter addressed to the southern provinces from Philadelphia, an annual assembly was established in that city, where the different congregations were represented by their respective ministers and elders, and where the general affairs of religion and policy were discussed and decided. Soon afterwards, the discontented in New England recommended a union of the congregational and presbyterian interests throughout the colonies: a negotiation took place; and a permanent committee was appointed at Philadelphia, with powers to unite and consult, on all occasions, with a similar committee of the congregational churches in New England: thus the presbyterians of the south, who, when separate, were peaceable and harmless citizens, became, by their connexion with the fierce spirits of the north, adverse and dangerous to the general policy of church and state.

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.  
Opposition  
to the  
stamp du-  
ties in A-  
merica.

authority, of a check which the youthful monarch gave to a palpable attempt on the part of the ex-minister to obtrude on his confidence. It states that the princess dowager of Wales was anxious for lord Bute's return to office, a wish in which that nobleman joined: in consequence, a plan was laid to take the king by surprise; so that lord Bute should, as if by chance, obtain permission to see the first despatches received by his majesty while at Carlton-house; it being frequently the custom for the secretary of state to transmit them at those periods. No sooner did the green box, with letters and papers, make its appearance, than the king, as usual, rose up to retire into another apartment in order to peruse them in retirement; but lord Bute officiously took up two candles, and preceded the sovereign, as if going to his closet, in the hope that the king would desire him to remain in the room, and acquaint him with the contents; by which means he might slide into political business without any formality. But the young monarch was on his guard; and, stopping at the door of the apartment, took the candles himself, bowed dismissal to the candidate, and shut the door;—a hint fully understood, and considered as a final rejection.'—George III. his Court and Family, vol. i. p. 289.

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

By this union a large party was prepared to display their power of resistance: but not relying solely on their own strength, they were unceasing in their endeavors to make converts among all sets of men where discontent prevailed: nor were their efforts unattended with success. To this party the stamp law presented itself as a favorable object against which they might direct their hostilities; and the ill-humor which pervaded all ranks tended to promote their designs. As soon as the act arrived at Boston, terrible commotions arose; the ships in harbor hoisted their colors half-mast high, and the bells were rung muffled: at New York the statute itself was reprinted with the mark of a death's head, and cried about the streets, under the title of 'England's Folly and America's Ruin;' while at Philadelphia, the guns in the fortifications and barracks were spiked by offenders who remained undiscovered. The flame of discontent now spread rapidly over the provinces, and every where the bitterest sarcasms and most violent reproaches were levelled at the act and its advisers.

In accounting for these proceedings, it may be observed, that the higher classes had for some time been led to believe that the commercial prosperity of England mainly depended on her American colonies, and they assumed a tone corresponding with this idea: emigrations unexampled in extent had taught them to calculate on a vast accession to their population; and this was likely to be augmented by desertions from the British army, for which the provincials had so many inducements to offer. While these considerations were calculated to inspire them with a desire of independence, a strong motive for submission was taken away, in the cession of Canada and the Floridas, which removed a powerful enemy from their frontiers, and rendered English assistance less necessary for their defence: besides, the violence of factions in Great Britain itself, and the tone in which the cause of America was taken up by men of high rank and talent, added

combustibles to the flame which was breaking out in that country.

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

It happened too that many of the governors and other public functionaries had been raised to their stations, not so much by merit, as by private favor and parliamentary interest: in general therefore they were found unequal to the trying circumstances in which they suddenly found themselves: the provincial assemblies declined to give them advice, or to strengthen their hands by any legislative authority;<sup>18</sup> openly avowing hostility against the act, and establishing committees of correspondence among themselves to oppose it.

The assembly of Virginia, which heretofore had been pre-eminent in loyalty, was now the first to set an example of disobedience: although the law was not to commence its operations before the first of November, the subject was immediately introduced into their debates, if a series of the most violent harangues and denunciations can be so denominated: the tone of these corresponded to the sentiments expressed by a member of the lower house, named Patrick Henry, in a resolution, which he brought forward against the stamp act. 'Cæsar,' said he, at the conclusion of his speech, 'had his Brutus, Charles I. his Cromwell, and George III.—' at this point the speaker interrupted him by the exclamation of 'treason,' which was echoed back by a party in the house: Henry for a moment faltered; but quickly recovering his self-possession, while his eyes flashed with a spirit of defiance, he continued—'may profit by that example: if this be treason, make the most of it.' When tranquillity was restored, the house proceeded to frame a set of resolutions

<sup>18</sup> When governor Bernard dissolved the legislative assembly at Boston this year, he complained much of the injustice that had been done to him as an individual. 'What,' he asked, 'have I done to deserve this?' He told them, 'it was his misfortune to be governor of the province at a time when parliament had thought proper to tax the colonies; and this imposed on him a necessary duty. This was his offence; but really it was the offence of his office; and against that, and not against his person, should the public resentment be directed.'

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

declaratory of their own rights, particularly the exclusive one of taxing themselves in their own representative assemblies; and boldly asserting that every attempt to vest it in any other power tended to destroy the independence both of England and America. The governor, when he was informed of these proceedings, immediately dissolved the assembly; but it was too late: its resolutions sanctioned opposition throughout Virginia, and formed a precedent for other colonies. Those of New England disdained to appeal to charters, or to consider themselves in the light of British subjects; but determined to resist the authority of the mother country in all matters of legislation, and resolutely to assert their rights as independent men. At the suggestion of the house of representatives in Boston, most of the provincial assemblies appointed deputies to a general congress at New York,<sup>19</sup> which met on the seventh of October, and after several days of debate drew up fourteen resolutions on the principles adopted by Virginia, with a petition to the king, another to the house of commons, and a memorial to the house of lords; in which, among other things, they professed allegiance to the crown, and a due subordination to the two houses; but denied the authority of a British parliament to tax those who were not represented in it: their representatives were their colonial legislatures, by which alone taxes had been, or could be constitutionally imposed: as for the duties which they now resisted, these were declared to be grievous exactions, and the payment impracticable, as the profits of their commerce centred in Great Britain; so that in fact they already contributed largely to its supplies: but the effect of these parliamentary measures would be to prevent them from purchasing

<sup>19</sup> The colonies not represented at this congress were, New Hampshire, Virginia, North Carolina, and Georgia: the last three, because the letters arrived during the recess of their assemblies, which were not permitted to meet till after the first of October. The assembly of New Hampshire, though it approved the plan, and promised to sign any petition agreed on by the other provinces, did not think fit to appoint deputies.—Stedman, vol. i. p. 39.

British manufactures, and thus destroy that mutual intercourse which was found so beneficial to both countries.

By this congress, which excited little alarm from the decorous manner adopted in its proceedings, a very important point was gained to the Americans; for a closer connexion was thereby established among the leading men of the different provinces, and a way prepared for a still more general and extensive combination, if circumstances should render it necessary or expedient.

In the mean time great exertions were made to increase the public irritation; and many persons of the higher classes gradually mixed with the populace, stimulating them to acts of violence; so that when the distributors of stamps arrived from England, some were forced publicly to renounce, on oath, all concern with them; and others thought it their best policy to return without delay: the agents of the law generally resolved to forego the practice of their profession rather than make use of stamps; and ships bringing stamped mercantile or custom-house papers, were obliged to part with them, to be stuck up in derision, and then publicly committed to the flames.

By the first of November, the time when the act came into operation, not a sheet of stamped paper was to be procured in the colonies; so that all business, which could not be legally carried on without it, was at once brought to a stand; the courts of justice were closed, and the ports shut up. When the consequences of this stagnation began to press severely on the people, many arts of elusion were employed; and the governors of some provinces, though bound by the act, under heavy penalties, to see it observed, considered the total stoppage of public business so injurious in its consequences, as to render lawful their non-compliance with such injunctions: and grounding the dispensation which they allowed to themselves on the absolute impossibility of procuring stamps, they granted certificates

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

of that impossibility to outward-bound vessels, which might protect them from the penalties of the act in other parts of his majesty's dominions.

But the colonial proceedings, which were most sensibly felt in England, remain to be described. The merchants of all those provinces which ventured openly to oppose the act, entered into solemn engagements with each other, not to order any more goods from England, whatever might be the consequences; and to recall the orders they had already given, if not obeyed by the first of January, 1766; also not to dispose of any British goods sent to them on commission, which were not shipped before that time; and if they consented to any relaxation of these engagements, it was not to take place till the stamp act, and even the sugar and paper money acts, were repealed: other resolutions of a similar tendency were also determined on.

In the mean time they omitted no methods to render the importation of British manufactures unnecessary. A society for the promotion of arts and commerce was instituted at New York, and markets were opened for the sale of home-made goods; by which it appeared that neither the natives, nor the artisans whom they had invited over from Great Britain by large bounties, had been idle: linens, woollens, paper hangings, coarse kinds of iron ware, and many other such articles, were approved by the society, and, when brought to market, eagerly bought up: besides, lest the new woollen manufactories should fail from want of materials, many persons entered into a resolution to forbear eating lamb; people of the highest fashion set an example of wearing home-spun or old clothes, instead of purchasing those made in Great Britain, of which they used to be absurdly fond: and these measures being generally adopted, taught the colonists, what till very lately had been thought impossible, that they would soon be able to supply themselves with all the necessaries of life. It might be imagined that they could hardly go to greater lengths against the mo-

ther country, avoiding direct hostilities; but resolutions began to be circulated of stopping exports as well as imports, and preventing the tobacco of Virginia and South Carolina from finding its way to British markets;—a measure, which, considering the quantity of that article exported again from Great Britain, and the large sums raised by her own consumption of it, would have materially affected her trade and revenue.

Such were the measures taken by the greatest and most important American provinces, New England, New York, New Jersey, Philadelphia, Virginia, the two Carolinas, and Maryland, in consequence of the stamp act: the others, probably from a sense of weakness rather than of duty, submitted to it, though not all with equal grace. The West Indian plantations received it with that readiness which their insular condition demanded, the islands of St. Christopher and Nevis alone excepted; the populace of the former not only burning all the stamps in their own country, and obliging the distributors to renounce their office, but going over in a body to assist their friends of Nevis in the same violent proceedings.

Embarrassment of ministers.

If the members of the Rockingham administration were conscious that injustice was committed against the colonies, or were convinced that the emancipation of America could not long be deferred, they did not meet the crisis with honor or with prudence: if they concurred in the measures of their predecessors, or felt persuaded that Great Britain had it in her power to retain those colonies in dependence, their conduct was still culpable in tolerating the proceedings above described. It may indeed be alleged, that they were embarrassed with the difficulties of their situation, arising from the determination of the sovereign to vindicate the supposed rights of his crown, and from the clamors of the mercantile classes, whose increasing distress was attributed to the stagnation of American trade. This however is no sufficient excuse: they should not

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

have accepted or retained office under circumstances, which hindered them from making an immediate and dignified concession, or an equally quick and determined resistance.

The Virginian resolutions being laid before the board of trade, were declared to be a dangerous attack on the British constitution; and an opinion was given that orders should be immediately sent out to enforce the stamp act, and exact a proper obedience to the laws: but the council did not meet for some time after this recommendation, as if they supposed that the progress of events would wait their leisure, or that the affairs of America were not more important than those of an English parish: general Conway indeed wrote a letter to the governor of Virginia, expressing his hopes that another assembly would rescind the offensive resolutions, and advising him to make an appeal to the more wise and prudent among the people; but as the matter was before the privy council, he declined giving him any farther instructions. When the council met, its members seemed to be infected with a spirit of timidity and irresolution; declining all vigorous measures, and recommending his majesty to ask the advice of parliament in a matter of such importance: but although this was in the month of October, parliament was not called together till the seventeenth of December; and then it separated for the Christmas recess, after issuing some writs to fill up vacant seats; nor were any other means adopted for appeasing the storm that was now rising in our transatlantic dominions, except the transmission of a circular letter from general Conway to the American governors, in terms somewhat more decisive than the former, but still not sufficiently clear and energetic.

During the recess of parliament, the following appears to have been the result of ministerial deliberations. 'A meeting was held at the house of the marquis of Rockingham for the purpose of arranging measures against the opening of the session, and



particularly with respect to the late transactions in America. Among the persons present, were the marquis of Rockingham, lord Egmont, general Conway, Mr. Dowdeswell, the earl of Dartmouth, and Mr. Yorke. The most effective and dignified advice was to declare, by an act of parliament, the legislative power of Great Britain over America, and inflict penalties of high treason on those who should impeach that authority either by speaking or writing: the supremacy of the parent country being thus ascertained, it was recommended to bring in a bill to explain, alter, and amend the stamp act, in such a manner as would render the operation easy, and its provisions unexceptionable. The principal alterations were, that duties should be paid in currency instead of sterling money; offences against the act tried in courts of record, instead of the court of vice-admiralty; and the merchants relieved, by taking off, or greatly reducing, the stamps on cockets and clearances: but this firm and manly advice did not prevail; the opinions previously delivered by some members of administration were incompatible with such measures; and although Mr. Dowdeswell, chancellor of the exchequer, produced letters from New York, importing that the money collected from the duty on molasses had been detained in the colony by the threats and orders of the mob, yet no vigorous measure was resolved on: in fact, nothing was decided, except the terms in which the king's speech should be comprised; and the ministry formed no regular or consistent plan of operation and mutual support.<sup>20</sup>

On the 21st of August, the queen was delivered of a third son, our present gracious sovereign; and on the twenty-sixth of December his royal highness the prince of Wales was invested with the insignia of the garter, at the early age of three years: two days after this ceremony, his majesty's youngest brother, prince Frederic, died in his

Domestic  
occurrences.

<sup>20</sup> From Mr. Adolphus's private information, vol. i. p. 186.

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

sixteenth year; and a few days previously, France lost her dauphin, father of the unfortunate Louis XVI.: in the same month also died at Rome, the old pretender, in the seventy-eighth year of his age, having seen, since his birth, six monarchs successively on that throne which his bigoted father lost for a mass: he left two sons; the celebrated Charles Edward, and Henry, a Romish priest, who had been raised to the dignity of the purple, in 1747, by the title of cardinal York.

In July the new pavement from Charing-cross to Temple-bar was finished, and the communication for carriages re-opened: the improvements made by this alteration, by the taking down of signs, and by the fixing up of lights in a regular manner, added to those in St. James's-street which preceded them, called forth the admiration of that age as largely as our own has been excited by the remodelling of nearly half the metropolis on a scale of magnitude and grandeur unexampled in modern times.

On the 16th of April, lord Byron was tried by his peers in Westminster-hall for killing Mr. Chaworth in a duel, and found guilty of manslaughter: but as peers are, in all cases where benefit of clergy is allowed, to be dismissed without burning in the hand, loss of inheritance, or corruption of blood, his lordship was immediately liberated on paying his fees.

Some opinion of the temper exhibited by the populace against what was called the court party, may be formed from the following circumstances. Mr. John Williams, bookseller, who had been adjudged by the court of king's bench to fine, imprisonment, and the pillory, for republishing the North Briton, underwent the last part of his sentence, in New Palace-yard, on the fourteenth of February. A few minutes after twelve he mounted the scaffold, amid the repeated acclamations of more than 10,000 persons, who never ceased shouting till his hour was expired. Opposite to the pillory were erected four ladders, with cords running from one to another, on which were hung a jack-boot, an axe, and a bonnet,

to the last of which was attached a label inscribed 'Scotch bonnet:' both boot and bonnet were committed to the flames, after the tops of the former had been chopped off: in the mean time, a gentleman with a purple purse, ornamented with orange ribbons, began a collection in favor of Mr. Williams, by putting in a guinea; and then carrying it round, gave an opportunity to every one of contributing according to his inclination; by which means he procured upwards of £200, one gentleman putting in fifty. Mr. Williams, at going into the pillory and getting out, bowed to the spectators; and held a sprig of laurel in his hand during the time of his exposure: the same coach that brought him, carried him back; and the master of it refused to take any money for its hire.<sup>1</sup>

CHAP.  
VII.

1765.

---

<sup>1</sup> See Annual Register, 1765, p. 65.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1766.

Gloomy aspect of affairs at the opening of the session of parliament—King's speech—Petitions against the stamp duty—Debates on the address, which turn on American politics—Views of different parties regarding the right and expediency of taxing the colonies—Conference between ministers and Franklin—Opinions of the latter respecting the restoration of harmony between England and America—Repeal of the stamp act preceded by a declaratory bill, upholding the right of the British legislature to tax its colonies—Act of indemnity—Popular measures carried by the ministry regarding foreign trade and redress of domestic grievances—Question of general warrants—Tottering state of the cabinet, and reasons of it—Duke of Grafton resigns office—Sentiments of the Americans on the repeal of the stamp act—Those of Washington—Spirit of dissatisfaction still exhibited in the colonies, particularly those of New England—Disputes of the assembly at Boston with governor Bernard respecting the election of members of council—Compensation to the sufferers in the late riots—Provisions of the mutiny act—Same spirit shown at New York and other places—Intrigues of lord Northington—Negotiations with Mr. Pitt and lord Temple—Quarrel of these two statesmen—Mr. Pitt, after several attempts, forms an administration—Distribution of the cabinet offices—Decline of lord Chatham's popularity and influence—Writings of Burke regarding the present changes—Ineffectual attempt of lord Chatham to establish a grand northern confederacy—Accurate information obtained by the king of Prussia regarding our administration—Alarming scarcity of provisions—Tumults in the country—Measures taken to remedy the evil—Embargo laid on vessels laden with wheat by royal authority—Altercation on this subject in parliament—Dispensing power of the crown vindicated by lords Chatham and Camden—Opposed by lord Mansfield and others—Act of indemnity passed—Signs of the cabinet's breaking up—Attempts of lord Chatham to support it—His bad state of health—Affairs of the East India proprietors—Interference of parliament in their concerns—Birth of the princess-royal—Marriage of the princess Caroline Matilda—Transactions in different states of Europe.

WHEN the new ministry opened the session of parliament on the fourteenth of January, the aspect of affairs both at home and abroad was gloomy in the extreme: in England provisions were extremely dear; thousands were out of employment; trade and commerce languished; and they who depended on them were incensed at those restrictions which had caused, and were still increasing the evil. The country gentlemen eagerly desired a productive revenue, which might fill the exchequer, and relieve them from the burdens of the late war; but the colonists vehemently opposed the scheme of extracting such a revenue from their pockets. In America scenes of anarchy and confusion were already begun; for the passions of the people were let loose by a relaxation of the laws, and profligate men assumed the name of patriots in order to commit those excesses to which they are always prone. Though resentment sustained the spirit of the colonists; yet a people almost in a state of infancy, the resources of whose immense territories were scarcely known, could not but feel very sensibly a stagnation of trade, and the consequent privation of those comforts with which they had been liberally supplied by the industry of the parent state.

Under these circumstances, the king's speech, as was naturally to be expected, pointed out America to parliament as the principal object of deliberation. He lamented the disorders which had broken out in that country; but expressed a hope that the judgment and moderation of the two houses would conciliate the colonists, without compromising the rights of the British legislature. At the same time, numerous petitions from the great trading and manufacturing towns of the kingdom, setting forth the present ruin of large classes, with the prospective derangement of the national finances, seemed to declare that the time was now arrived when some determined measures must be taken. Petitions also were received from the colonies of Virginia and Georgia, through their agents, representing their utter inability to pay

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

Gloomy  
aspect of  
affairs.

Petitions  
against the  
stamp duty.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

the stamp duty : one also from Jamaica set forth the bad effects of such a tax, which had been laid on that island by its own assembly ; and suggested the probability of similar inconveniences arising from the measure, if persisted in, with regard to our continental colonies.

In the debate which followed the king's speech, his majesty's recommendation was duly attended to, and the affairs of America were discussed at large. The partisans of the last administration were unmoved by petitions, which they affected to consider as the result of ministerial artifice : even granting them genuine, they argued that it was better to submit to a temporary inconvenience, than free the colonies from their dependency on the mother country, which would infallibly be the consequence of repealing the stamp act : much as the country needed pecuniary assistance, they still contended that the right of taxation was of greater value than the produce of the tax. A less numerous but more eloquent party, with Mr. Pitt at its head, not only recommended a repeal, but utterly disclaimed the right of Great Britain to impose direct taxes on her unrepresented colonists. Ministers themselves generally were inclined to take a middle course, by repealing the act, but accompanying its repeal with a declaration of right : they accordingly made their stand on the inexpediency of the measure, as one totally unsuited to the present circumstances of Great Britain and America.

Debates on  
America.

The debate was opened in the house of commons by Mr. Nugent, who strongly condemned the opposition made by the colonists to what he considered a reasonable and easy tax : still he would agree to abandon it, provided they would solicit the repeal as a favor, and acknowledge the right of the British legislature to impose it : with him 'a pepper-corn, as an acknowledgement of a right, was of more value than millions without that concession.' Mr. Burke seized the opportunity of taking a part in this discussion, and showed the value of his accession to his

party : but little more is known of this first display of his parliamentary oratory, than that he astonished the house by the force and fancy of his eloquence, and that he was highly complimented on the occasion by Mr. Pitt, who immediately followed him : 'the young member,' said that statesman, 'has proved a very able advocate : I had myself intended to enter at length into details ; but have been anticipated with so much ingenuity and eloquence, that there is little left for me to say : I congratulate him on his success, and his friends on the value of the acquisition they have made.' To the new ministry Mr. Pitt was not so liberal of his applause ; being at once mortified by the rejection of his own services, and jealous of a cabinet which he had not the merit of arranging. While he strongly condemned those daring measures adopted by the late administration, he blamed the indecision and tardy efforts of their successors : against their character indeed, as men, he had nothing to allege ; but still he saw reasons for denying to them his confidence. 'Pardon me, gentlemen,' said he, bowing to those on the treasury bench ; 'but confidence is a plant of slow growth in an aged bosom ; youth is the season of credulity : by comparing events with each other, and reasoning from effects to causes, methinks I plainly discover traces of an over-ruling influence. I have had the honor to serve the crown ; and if I could have submitted to influence, I might have continued to serve ; but I would not be responsible for others. I have no local attachments : it is indifferent to me whether a man was rocked in his cradle on this side or that side of the Tweed : I sought for merit wherever it was to be found : it is my boast that I was the first minister who looked for it, and found it in the mountains of the north : I called it forth, and drew into your service a hardy and intrepid race of men—men who, when left by your jealousy, became a prey to the artifices of your enemies, and had gone nigh to overturn the state in the war before the last : these men, in the last war, were brought to combat

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

on your side; they served with fidelity, as they fought with valor, and conquered for you in every part of the world: detested be the national reflections against them! they are unjust, groundless, illiberal, unmanly. When I ceased to serve his majesty as a minister, it was not the country of the man by which I was moved; but the man of that country wanted wisdom, and held principles incompatible with freedom.'

Mr. Pitt proceeded to observe, that when the resolution of taxing America was first taken, he was confined by sickness; but so great was the agitation of his mind, caused by that momentous question, that if he could have endured to be moved in his bed, he would have solicited the kind assistance of his friends, to carry him to the floor of the house, in order to give his testimony against the measure. He then expressed his hope that a day might soon be appointed, in which the subject would be discussed fully, but with temper and impartiality; for a more important measure had not engaged the attention of the commons, since they debated, near a century since, whether they themselves were to be bondmen or free. Having reprobated the argument of Mr. Nugent, which had a tendency to rest on a point of honor, he declared his opinion, that Great Britain had no right to lay a tax on the colonies, though at the same time he asserted her sovereignty over them in all cases of legislation. 'The colonists,' said he, 'are subjects of this kingdom, equally intitled with yourselves to all the natural rights of mankind, and the peculiar privileges of Englishmen; equally bound by its laws, and equally participating in its free constitution: taxation is no part of the governing or legislative power: taxes are the voluntary gift and grant of the commons alone. In legislation, the three estates of the realm are alike concerned; but the concurrence of the peers and the crown to a tax is only necessary to clothe it with the form of a law; the gift and grant is of the commons alone.' After showing how the great bulk



of the land had passed into the hands of the commons, he went on to say; 'When therefore in this house we give and grant, we give and grant what is our own: but in an American tax, what do we do? We your majesty's commons of Great Britain give and grant to your majesty, what? our own property?—no: we give and grant the property of your majesty's commons of America. It is an absurdity in terms. The distinction between legislation and taxation is essentially necessary to liberty. The crown, the peers, are equally legislative powers with the commons: if taxation be a part of simple legislation, the crown and the peers have rights in taxation as well as yourselves; rights which they will claim, which they will exercise, whenever the principle can be supported by power.' He then went on to combat the arguments of those who asserted that an American was represented in the British parliament. After asking in which of the counties, that respectable part of the representation, he was so represented, he put the same question regarding the boroughs;—'and this,' says he, 'is called the rotten part of the constitution: it cannot last a century; if it does not drop, it must be amputated. The idea of a virtual representation of America in this house is the most contemptible that ever entered into the head of a man: it does not deserve a serious refutation. The commoners of America, represented in their several assemblies, have ever been in possession of this, their constitutional right, of giving and granting their own money: they would have been slaves if they had not enjoyed it: at the same time, this kingdom, as the supreme governing and legislative power, has always bound the colonies by her laws, by her regulations and restrictions, in trade, in navigation, in manufactures; in every thing except that of taking their money out of their pockets without their consent.'

After a considerable pause, general Conway rose to declare that his sentiments on this great constitutional question coincided with those which had

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

been so eloquently enforced by Mr. Pitt. 'But,' said the honorable secretary, 'with regard to that over-ruling influence which has been hinted at, I see nothing of it; I feel nothing of it: I disclaim it for myself; and, as far as my discernment can reach, for all the rest of his majesty's ministers.'

Mr. Grenville, however, to whom Mr. Pitt's pointed and energetic remarks were more immediately directed, made an able and spirited reply in defence of himself and of his measures. After censuring the new ministry severely, for not giving earlier notice to parliament respecting the disturbances in America, and for allowing those disturbances, which at first were only common occurrences, to grow into tumults bordering on rebellion, and which, if the doctrine lately broached was confirmed, would end in revolution;—he declared that he could not understand the difference between external and internal taxes; the same in effect, and differing only in name. Taxation, he contended, is a part of sovereign power, and one branch of legislation; nay, it had been constantly exercised over those who were never represented. He instanced this in the case of the East India company, the merchants of London, the proprietors of the public funds, and especially the palatinates of Chester and Durham, before they sent members to parliament; appealing for proof to the preambles of the acts which gave them representatives.<sup>2</sup> Mr. Grenville then desired that these acts might be read; which having been done, he continued:—'When I proposed to tax America, I repeatedly asked the house, if any objection could be made to the right: but no one attempted to deny it. Protection and obedience are reciprocal: Great Britain protects America; America is bound to yield obedience: if not, tell me when the Americans were emancipated? When they want the protection of this kingdom, they are always ready to ask it; and that protection has been always afforded them in the most full and

<sup>2</sup> The one in the reign of Henry VIII., the other in that of Charles II.

ample manner. The nation has run itself into an immense debt to give them protection; and now, when they are called on to contribute a small share toward the public expense,—an expense arising from themselves,—they renounce your authority, insult your officers, and break out, I might say, into open rebellion. The seditious spirit of the colonies owes its birth to the factions in this house: gentlemen are careless of the consequences of what they say, provided it answers the purposes of opposition. We were told, that we trod on tender ground; we were bid to expect disobedience: what was this, but telling the Americans to resist the law,—to encourage their obstinacy with the expectation of support from hence? Let us only persevere for a short time, they would say; our friends will soon be in power. Ungrateful people of America! what bounties have been extended to them! When I had the honor of serving the crown, while you yourselves were loaded with an enormous debt, you gave bounties on their lumber, their iron, their hemp, and many other articles: you relaxed in their favor the act of navigation, that palladium of British commerce: and yet I have been abused in all the public papers as an enemy to the trade of America. I have been particularly charged with giving orders and instructions to prevent the Spanish trade, and thereby stopping the channel by which alone North America used to be supplied with cash for remittances to this country. I defy any man to produce any such orders or instructions: I discouraged no trade but what was illicit, and was prohibited by act of parliament: I was above giving an answer to anonymous calumnies, but in this place it becomes me to wipe off the aspersion.'

After Mr. Grenville had ceased speaking, several members rose, and Mr. Pitt amongst the number; but the rest gave way to him, at the clamorous call of the house. Resuming his subject, he declared that he only meant to have thrown out a few hints on the right of taxation; but since Mr. Gren-

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

ville had gone into the justice, policy, and expediency of the stamp act, he would follow him through the whole field, and combat all his arguments. An objection here being started on the point of order, it was decided in Mr. Pitt's favor; and, by desire of the house, he thus proceeded:—'I have been charged with giving birth to sedition in America. Sorry I am to hear liberty of speech in this house imputed to any one as a crime; but the imputation shall not discourage me: it is a liberty I mean to exercise: no one ought to be afraid to exercise it: it is a liberty by which the gentleman who calumniates it might have profited; he ought to have profited; and he ought to have desisted from his project. The gentleman tells us America is obstinate; America is almost in open rebellion. I rejoice that America has resisted: three millions of people, so dead to all the feelings of liberty as voluntarily to submit to be slaves, would have been fit instruments to make slaves of the rest. I come not here armed at all points with law cases and acts of parliament, with the statute-book doubled down in dogs-ears, to defend the cause of liberty: if I had, I myself would have cited the two cases of Chester and Durham; I would have cited them to show, that even under arbitrary reigns, parliaments were ashamed of taxing a people without their consent, and allowed them representatives. Why did the gentleman confine himself to Chester and Durham? He might have taken a higher example in Wales—Wales, that never was taxed by parliament until it was incorporated.' Mr. Pitt then deprecated a consideration of the question as a mere point of law, for which he acknowledged his inability; but wished that it might be discussed on a constitutional principle; that being a ground on which he stood firm, and could boldly meet any man. He distinguished between the Americans who were not, and could not be represented in parliament; and the merchants, stockholders, and manufacturers, who were represented, or might be

if they would. He recapitulated the names and characters of the chief ministers since the revolution; none of whom, he said, ever thought or dreamed of robbing the colonies of their constitutional rights. There were not wanting some who had endeavored to persuade him, when minister, to burn his fingers with an American stamp act; and perhaps, under their circumstances at that time, they might have submitted; but it would have been taking an unjust and ungenerous advantage of them.

‘I am no courtier of America,’ he said: ‘I stand up for this kingdom: I maintain that parliament has a right to bind and to restrain America. Our legislative power over the colonies is sovereign and supreme: when it ceases to be sovereign and supreme, I would advise every gentleman to sell his lands, if he can, and embark for that country. When two countries are connected together, like England and her colonies, without being incorporated, the one must necessarily govern; the greater must rule the less; but so rule it, as not to contradict the fundamental principles that are common to both. There is a plain distinction between taxes levied for the purposes of raising a revenue, and duties imposed for the regulation of trade, for the accommodation of the subject; although, in the consequences, some revenue might incidentally arise from the latter. The gentleman asks, when were the colonies emancipated? I desire to know when they were made slaves? But I dwell not on words.’ Mr. Pitt then asserted that the profits to Great Britain from the trade of her colonies, through all its branches, were two millions a year. ‘This,’ said he, ‘was the fund which carried us triumphantly through the last war; this is the price America pays for protection: and shall a miserable financier come with a boast, that he can fetch a pepper-corn into the exchequer by the loss of millions to the nation? I am convinced,’ he added, ‘the whole commercial

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

system of America may be altered to advantage: you have prohibited where you ought to have encouraged, and you have encouraged where you ought to have prohibited: improper restraints have been laid on the continent in favor of the islands. Let the acts of parliament in consequence of treaties remain; but let not an English minister become a custom-house officer for Spain, or for any foreign power. Much is wrong; much may be amended for the general good of the whole. The gentleman must not wonder that he was not contradicted, when, as minister, he asserted the right of parliament to tax America. I know not how it is, but there is a modesty in this house which does not choose to contradict a minister: even your chair, sir, looks too often towards St. James's. I wish gentlemen would think better of this modesty; if they do not, perhaps the collective body may begin to abate of its respect for the representative. A great deal has been said without doors of the power, of the strength of America: it is a topic that ought to be cautiously meddled with. In a good cause, on a sound bottom, the force of this country can crush America to atoms; but on this ground, on the stamp act, when so many here will think it a crying injustice, I am one who will lift up my hands against it; in such a cause your success would be hazardous. America, if she fell, would fall like the strong man; she would embrace the pillars of the state, and pull down the constitution along with her.' The orator then, deprecating too much severity in judging the conduct of the Americans, said; 'I acknowledge they have not acted in all things with prudence and temper: they have been wronged; they have been driven to madness by injustice. Will you punish them for the madness you have occasioned? Rather let prudence and temper come first from this side: I will undertake for America, that she will follow the example. There are two lines in a ballad of Prior, on a man's behavior to his wife, so ap-

plicable to you and your colonies, that I cannot help repeating them;—

CHAP.  
VIII.

Be to her faults a little blind;  
Be to her virtues very kind.'

1766.

In conclusion, he gave it as his opinion, that the stamp act should be repealed absolutely, totally, and immediately; and the reason assigned, that it was founded on an erroneous principle. 'At the same time,' he added, 'let the sovereign authority of this country over the colonies be asserted in as strong terms as can be devised, and be made to extend to every point of legislation; that we may bind their trade, confine their manufactures, and exercise every power, except that of taking their money without their consent.'

Though the urgency of this important question occasioned the house to pursue it with unwearied application, yet the nature of the inquiries, the number of petitions received, and the multitude of papers and witnesses to be examined, occasioned long and unavoidable delays. In the mean time continual debates took place, in which the partisans of the late administration made strenuous efforts to enforce the act. Those who contended for the repeal were divided in opinion; the more numerous body, supporting the present ministry in its views of expediency, still insisted on the right of the British legislature to tax the colonies; while that party which agreed with Mr. Pitt in denying the right of taxation, was not so numerous, though it contained several eminent and popular characters.

The advocates for this right labored hard to show that Mr. Pitt's distinction between external and internal taxes was false and groundless. It is granted, said they, that restrictions on trade, and duties at the ports are legal; while internal taxes are declared to be illegal: yet what real difference is there between them? A tax laid any where is like a pebble dropped into a lake, making circle after circle, till the whole surface from centre to circum-

Views of  
different  
parties.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

ference is agitated: for nothing is more evident, than that a tax laid on tobacco, either in the ports of England or Virginia, is as much a duty laid on the inland plantations of the latter, as if it were collected 100 miles up the country, on the spot where the tobacco grows. It was also strongly urged, that protection was the only true ground on which the right of taxation could be founded; though it does not seem to have struck those who held this opinion, that it might have been turned into an irresistible argument against themselves: for had it been allowed, the Americans needed only to have said, we have no want of your protection, we are both able and willing to defend ourselves; and then all plea for taxing them would have been at an end: England must either have withdrawn her protecting force, and left them independent; or she must have argued from the right of the stronger, and taxed them on the principles of despotism.

Dr. Frank-  
lin.

Among the many witnesses examined on this occasion, in order to ascertain the real sentiments of the American people, was the celebrated Benjamin Franklin, who had visited most of the colonies, and was well acquainted with the leading men in each. Being highly esteemed by the Americans for his talent, honesty, and shrewd sense, he had been chosen agent for Massachusetts, and sent over in that capacity to exert himself in defeating the measures complained of. His statements had been totally disregarded by the preceding administration, whose leader had taken up the question on principles which no representation, no argument could move; but he met with a different reception from the present ministers, who were taught by him to believe that the colonists were well affected toward the parent state, and anxious to prevent a separation, which would be injurious to both parties. Theirs, he said, was the affection of British subjects, desirous only to maintain their constitutional rights, and determined only to oppose the violation of them. He declared it to be his opinion, that a conciliatory



system, commencing with a repeal of the stamp act, would be sufficient to re-establish harmony; and though he felt assured that the assemblies would never be induced to rescind their resolutions, yet they would be satisfied with the repeal, even if it should be accompanied by an act asserting the right of parliament to impose taxes on them at pleasure. In giving this opinion, it has been thought and confidently affirmed, that Franklin, having the independence of his country greatly at heart, and knowing well the temper and disposition of its inhabitants, wilfully misled the British ministry: certain it is, that circumstances had occurred in the American provinces,<sup>3</sup> long before any actual collision took place, with which Franklin could not have been unacquainted, and which indicated a very ardent spirit of independence in the colonists. He must have known that nothing less than a disavowal of the right of taxation would have satisfied the Americans, even for the present; nor could it have escaped so penetrating a mind as his, that nothing short of actual freedom would have long sufficed to keep the colonies on a friendly footing with Great Britain. Still it must be acknowledged that some of the most acute and patriotic men among our transatlantic brethren, of whom Washington was one, thought that the repeal of the stamp act, and the removal of a few inconvenient regulations of commerce, would have effected that desirable end.

Whatever may have been the differences of opinion, either in or out of the house, on this important case, the whole resolved itself into the two following propositions;—whether Great Britain had a right to tax her American colonies; and whether the stamp act was an expedient measure: on the first, ministers decided in the affirmative; on the second, they held a contrary opinion; while the late administration supported them on the question of right, but opposed the repeal with considerable strength both

Declara-  
tory bill.

<sup>3</sup> See Preliminary Essay.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

of argument and numbers : notwithstanding all their efforts, it passed, on a division, by a majority of 275 to 167 ; having been preceded by a declaratory bill, reprobating the tumultuous proceedings of the colonists, and claiming a legislative right for Great Britain in all cases. When this previous bill was sent to the upper house, lord Camden strenuously opposed it, asserting, like his friend Mr. Pitt below, that in his opinion taxation and representation are inseparable, and that such a connexion is coeval with the constitution. 'There is not,' said he, 'a blade of grass growing in the most obscure corner of this kingdom, which is not, which was not ever represented, since the beginning of the constitution ; there is not a blade of grass, which, when taxed, was not taxed by the consent of the proprietor.' He defended his opinion by Locke's principle, that the supreme power cannot take from a man any part of his property without his own consent ; and refused his assent to any bill asserting our right to tax the colonies, while they remained unrepresented.

Repeal of  
the stamp  
act.

The repealing act met with a still more determined opposition : at the second reading, an interesting debate ensued ; and, on a division, the non-contents were 71 against 105, while thirty-three peers entered a long and able protest against it : the third reading provoked a similar debate, and a protest signed by twenty-eight, in which many of the former objections were enforced and new added : with regard to the declaratory act, the dissenting lords looked on it as delusive and nugatory. In addition to these two bills, another was passed to indemnify those who had incurred penalties by transacting business with unstamped writings.

During the late debates, ministers had held frequent conferences with American and West Indian merchants ; from whom they acquired a knowledge of the trade and the manner of conducting it : in consequence of which, and of petitions from some great commercial towns, they passed a bill, this

session, for opening free ports, under certain restrictions, in the islands of Dominica and Jamaica ; while several new and important regulations were made in the commercial system of the colonies, and some burdensome restrictions taken off. They also promoted the extension of trade in general by a commercial treaty with Russia, for which they received the unanimous thanks of the Russian company : nor did they omit to obtain from France a liquidation of those bills which had been left unsettled since the cession of Canada, or to put the Manilla ransom in a train of adjustment.

To show that they were also ready to redress grievances at home, they proposed and carried a repeal of the obnoxious cider tax, as far as related to private individuals ; laying on a different duty, and altering the mode of collecting it : they also passed an act for restraining the importation of foreign silks, to the great joy of English manufacturers ; and having abolished the old duties on houses and windows, they settled the rates with more equity toward the middle and lower classes.

The question of general warrants was also taken up by this ministry ; when, after several debates, it was resolved, that ‘ a general warrant for seizing and apprehending any person or persons, being illegal, except in cases provided for by act of parliament, is, if executed on a member of the house of commons, a breach of privilege.’ A bill for restraining the issuing of warrants to seize papers, except in cases of treason or felony, under certain regulations, went through the lower house, but was thrown out by the lords.

But though many of these legislative acts were important in themselves, and well calculated to insure popularity, the administration itself was tottering to its fall. By a large and influential portion of the community the present ministers were considered as intruders, who kept Mr. Pitt out of office : the confidence of their royal master was lost to them, when they repealed the stamp act ; but his

Imbecility  
of the cabinet.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

resentment was excited by their omission, through inattention or embarrassment, to procure from parliament a provision for his younger brothers till the committee of supply was closed. Sensible therefore of an approaching dissolution of the cabinet, the duke of Grafton resigned his office; pleading, in justification of this measure, that the ministry was deficient in strength to guide the helm of state with success: he had no objection to the character of the men who composed it, or to their measures; but in his opinion Mr. Pitt alone could give vigor and solidity to an administration: under him he professed himself 'willing to serve in any capacity, not exclusively as a superior officer, but as a pioneer with spade and mattock.' The seals which he resigned, were given to the duke of Richmond, having been refused by lord Hardwicke; who nevertheless accepted a seat in the cabinet, and lent his aid to government.

Sentiments  
of the A-  
mericans.

The manner in which the repeal of the stamp duties was received in America, even though accompanied with the declaratory act, seemed at first to justify the measure. To the great mass of people, the mere assertion of an abstract right, which was considered only as a salvo to the dignity of parliament, created very little alarm: the intention of taxing America was abandoned, and that was sufficient. Many persons among the higher classes, of honest minds and upright sentiments, thought that all cause for apprehension was at an end; and the opinion of Washington on the subject is thus recorded in his correspondence:—'Unseasonable as it may be to take any notice of the repeal of the stamp act at this time, yet I cannot help observing, that a contrary measure would have produced very unhappy consequences: those, therefore, who wisely foresaw such an event, and were instrumental in procuring a repeal of the act, are in my opinion deservedly intitled to the thanks of all well-wishers to Great Britain and her colonies; and they must reflect with pleasure, that through their means many

scènes of confusion and distress have been prevented. Mine they accordingly have, and always shall have, for their opposition; and that act could be looked on in no other light by every person, who would view it in its proper colors.\* Washington's mind however was very different in its constitution from those fierce republican spirits of New England, who now viewed the declaratory act with a satisfaction proportionate to the hatred which they bore toward the mother country. As soon as the first burst of popular joy was over, this became a ready subject for their declamatory anger, and a convenient stimulus to popular excitement. Though the courts resumed their sittings, and the merchants their dealings, yet public writers were employed to prevent a return of cordial affection: the people were exhorted not to rely implicitly on what was extorted through fear; and they were encouraged to breed cattle and sheep; to cultivate hemp, cotton and flax; and to set up manufactories of coarse but useful articles, such as they would probably want, in case of future quarrels with Great Britain. While addresses of thanks were voted by the colonial assemblies to the king, especial care was taken to avoid confessing the slightest obligation to parliament: but even this show of gratitude soon vanished, and signs of a refractory and rebellious disposition re-appeared.

In the northern commercial districts the acts of trade were considered hardly less obnoxious than the stamp act: accordingly, in the assembly of Massachusetts, which was convened at the end of May, the same temper was found to prevail which had hitherto marked their proceedings. The controversy did not commence here with the stamp act, and was not likely to terminate with it: a regular system had been adopted; the dispute had been conducted on principles so general, had extended itself over so wide a surface, and had so engaged the feelings of the people, that harmony could not be restored by

Opposition  
to govern-  
ment in  
New Eng-  
land.

\* Writings of Washington, &c. by Jared Sparks, vol. ii. p. 344.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

the abandonment of a single measure, however interesting it had been for the time. The first symptom of hostilities exhibited itself in a dispute between governor Bernard and the legislative assembly. The house had made choice of Mr. James Otis for their speaker; and as he was rejected by the governor, when the election of counsellors came on, four, who had been at the board several years,<sup>5</sup> were omitted by the assembly; in consequence of which, the governor negatived six of the gentlemen who were chosen: but this exclusion of the friends of government from the council gave deep offence to the governor, and in his speeches to the house he animadverted on it with great severity. ‘When,’ said he, ‘the government is attacked in form, when there is a professed intention to deprive it of its best and most able servants, whose only crime is their fidelity to the crown, I cannot be indifferent; but find myself obliged to exercise every legal and constitutional power to maintain the king’s authority against such ill-judged and ill-timed oppugnation of it.’—‘It must and will be understood, that these gentlemen are turned out for their deference to acts of the British legislature.’—‘It is impossible to give any tolerable coloring to this proceeding.’

Governor Bernard was a man of considerable talent, but hardly equal to the delicate and difficult situation in which he was placed: he undertook the government of Massachusetts with flattering prospects of a peaceful and popular administration: but by birth an Englishman, and strongly attached to the principle of prerogative, he sometimes lost his equanimity of temper in dealing with republican spirits, and came unfortunately into collision with men superior to himself in ability, who could at any time lash him into irritation, and then take advantage of his attempts to retaliate.

The house, in answer to the governor’s speeches, coolly observed, that ‘the integrity and uprightness

<sup>5</sup> T. Hutchinson, A. Oliver, P. Oliver, and E. Trowbridge.

of their intentions and conduct was such, that no 'coloring' was requisite: they were wholly at a loss to conceive how a full, free, and fair election could be called 'a formal attack on the government;' 'a professed intention to deprive it of its best and most able servants;' 'an ill-judged and ill-timed oppugnation of the king's authority.' They were summoned and convened to give their free suffrages at the general election, and had done so according to the dictates of their consciences and best light of their understanding: had his excellency, they observed, 'favored them with his opinion of the candidates before the election, and with a list and positive orders whom to choose; then they would, on his principles, have been without excuse: but even the most abject slaves are not to be blamed for disobeying their masters' will, when it is wholly unknown to them.'

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

But the question most important at this time related to grants of compensation to sufferers by the late riots. Governor Bernard had already advised this measure; and he now laid before the assembly a letter from the secretary of state, conveying a recommendation of it from the British legislature: in the vote of parliament the word 'recommend' had, after a long debate, been substituted for some other, which would probably have been more offensive: this circumstance, together with the advice of their agent in England, a wish not to disgust their friends in the British parliament, their own disapprobation of the conduct of the rioters, and representations made by many of their constituents, determined the members of assembly to depart from their original determination on this point, though not without considerable reluctance and hesitation. To the governor's communication they sent a reply, expressing pity for the sufferers, and condemning the conduct of the rioters; but added, that as compensation was an act of generosity, not of justice, they were unwilling to burden their constituents with the expense of it until they had an opportunity of con-

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

sulting them ; and therefore had postponed the subject till the next session.

After an ineffectual attempt to bring them to a decision, he prorogued the assembly ; but convened it again, after a short time, for the purpose of obtaining a definite answer to the recommendation : the house then framed a bill for granting compensation to the sufferers, but accompanied it with a clause of general pardon and indemnity to the offenders ; who were thus taught to consider themselves meritorious objects of attention to the legislators of their country. As if it were possible that their opinions could yet be mistaken, they at the same time passed the following resolution :—

‘ That this house, in passing the bill, were influenced by a loyal and grateful regard to his majesty’s most mild and gracious recommendation ; by a deference to the opinions of the illustrious patrons of the colonies in Great Britain ; and by the interests of internal peace and order ; without regard to any interpretation of his majesty’s recommendation into a requisition, precluding all debate and controversy ; and a full persuasion that the sufferers had no just claim or demand on the province ; and that this compliance might be drawn hereafter into a precedent.’<sup>6</sup>

The manner in which the governor had constantly spoken of the vote of parliament, as a requisition, urging compliance with it as a necessary expiation of the sins of the province, gave some color of excuse to their resentment on this occasion ; but they had no reason to fear lest they should have been thought to have humbled themselves too much in England : on the contrary, the bill of indemnity was there considered as an extraordinary instance of colonial presumption.

Another incident occurred about this time, which brought the governor and the assembly again into collision, and showed the determined spirit of the

<sup>6</sup> Massachusetts State Papers, p. 100.



New Englanders in maintaining this contest of rights with the parent state. Two companies of artillery had been driven into the harbor of Boston by stress of weather, and were lodged in the castle ; being supplied with fuel and candles by order of the governor and council, and at the expense of the provincial treasury. When the legislature met in January 1767, the house very soon sent a message, to inquire what provision had been made for these troops, and by whom : the governor in reply sent them a copy of the minutes of council, by which provision had been made in pursuance of a late act of parliament, commonly called the mutiny act, which had been passed, or rather amended, in the last session, and required the colonists to supply the British soldiers with salt, vinegar, beer, and a few other necessaries : but this justification appeared worse to the eyes of the house than the offence itself ; and in their answer they complained bitterly that an act of parliament should be in existence, which as grievously deprived them of their unalienable right of voluntary taxation as the stamp act itself had done ; and also that the governor and council should have unwarrantably and unconstitutionally subjected the people to such an expense, without consulting the house, and giving them an opportunity of granting a free aid to his majesty for the public service. A subsequent attempt to enforce this act was productive of a still more resolute opposition : it also met with the same spirit of resistance at New York, the assembly of which province presumed to pass an act on their own authority which remodelled or repealed some of its regulations.

In other provinces similar obstinacy appeared ; and in Duchesse county, the military, having been called in to assist the civil power, and fired on by the mob, were compelled in self-defence to return the fire : in New York, some soldiers having attempted to cut down a tree of liberty, the populace resisted them ; and nothing but the moderation of

CHAP.  
VIII.  
1766.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

Intrigues of  
lord North-  
ington.

the commanding officer, and the interposition of the magistrates, prevented the shedding of blood.

While thus the healing measures of the British ministry produced only a momentary conciliation, its own existence was drawing to a close. The secret causes operating to produce its fall have already been alluded to: its immediate dissolution was accelerated by the chancellor, lord Northington. This nobleman had now held the great seal during three successive administrations; and his health had become so much impaired by frequent attacks of the gout, that on several occasions he had been incapacitated from performing the duties of his office: he therefore began to desire an honorable and quiet retreat; and the feeble state of the Rockingham ministry gave him a good opportunity of promoting a change by which an agreeable retirement might be secured: he had never been cordially attached to its members; while his ancient obligations to Mr. Pitt, and his personal friendship for lord Camden, convinced him, it is said, that those statesmen alone were able to form a solid and permanent administration. The first token of his defection appeared in the strong dissatisfaction he exhibited on account of the commercial treaty with Russia, though this measure had elicited thanks from the merchants connected with that country: the next was a violent ebullition of indignation, at the council-board, against a report drawn up and submitted to the cabinet by the attorney and solicitor-general, for the government of Canada; the principal feature of which was, to preserve the ancient rights of property, or its civil laws, and to improve its criminal code by the more equitable and mild system of English jurisprudence; the whole scheme however was denounced by his lordship as theoretical, visionary, and unworthy of practical statesmen; and he demanded that a complete copy of the Canadian laws should be procured

7 This reason is assigned by lord Henley, in a late memoir of his ancestor.

before any legislation took place : at the same time, he complained of several instances of neglect which he had experienced from his colleagues ; and the meeting broke up without coming to any definite resolution. Before another could be convened, he declared his intention to attend no more ; and having demanded an audience of the king, he informed his majesty that the present ministry was unable to carry on the government, refused to hold the great seal under them, and strongly advised that an application should be made to Mr. Pitt. In consequence of these suggestions, lord Northington received the royal command to confer with that statesman ; to whom, on the twelfth of July, he offered a *carte blanche* for the formation of a cabinet ; general Conway, who was to retain his office, assisting at the negotiation.

When the list for a new ministry was completed, an invitation was sent to lord Temple at Stowe ; and on the fifteenth that nobleman had an interview with the king, at which the chancellor was present : next day, his lordship saw Mr. Pitt, and found, to his great astonishment, that he himself was to be placed at the head of the treasury, without being allowed to nominate a single member of the cabinet : after remonstrating against this unhandsome treatment, he exerted every effort to effect an accommodation ; he conceded that his brother Mr. Grenville should support the ministry without holding any post ; and proposed earl Gower and lord Lyttleton for official situations : but Mr. Pitt, supposing that he possessed the entire confidence of his sovereign, and urged on by his own ardent and decisive temper, appeared on this occasion divested of that lustre, which his transcendent genius and patriotic spirit generally spread around his character : he rejected all the offers of lord Temple, spurning every notion of equality, and determining to be sole dictator : he thus sacrificed to personal vanity a friendship of long standing, which had been cemented by private affection, and dignified by a par-

Disputes of  
Mr. Pitt  
and lord  
Temple.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

icipation of public honors. On the evening of the seventeenth, a last interview took place between lord Temple and the chancellor, when the former told him, 'that the farce was at an end; that he need not have sent for him out of the country, as there could have been no serious intention of employing him.'

With all the splendid endowments which fitted him for command, Mr. Pitt was deficient in that quality which makes allowance for the feelings and weaknesses of others, and which is absolutely necessary to a statesman in a free country. In his own powers he had unlimited confidence; and under a despotic government he might have been minister for life, wielding the destinies of Great Britain, and with them those of Europe: but the period for such a display of bold and vigorous ambition was passed away; and mighty schemes of independent government could no longer be effected. It was necessary for a minister now to make compromises and concessions, to build up the structure of his power by means of associates whom he might not deign to acknowledge as equals, and even then to feel that it rested on public opinion.

Difficulties  
of Mr. Pitt.

Mr. Pitt soon experienced the mortifying effects of his arrogant assumption of authority, when unassisted by his former ally and powerful coadjutor. Fancying that the splendor of his name alone was sufficient to induce any man in the realm to enlist under his banner, he made offers to different persons of weight and consideration, with a view of detaching them from their friends: he tampered with the duke of Portland, who still held the office of lord chamberlain; with Mr. Dowdeswell, the late chancellor of the exchequer; and even with lord Gower, whom he had himself rejected when proposed by lord Temple: meeting however with no success in those quarters, he was infatuated enough to go to the marquis of Rockingham, who refused to see him; when irritated and rendered desperate by these rebuffs, he hastily formed that motley administration, which Mr. Burke ingeniously compared to a

cabinet variously inlaid, or to a tessellated pavement without cement: 'here a bit of black stone, and there a bit of white; patriots and courtiers; king's friends and republicans; whigs and tories; treacherous friends and open enemies: so that it was indeed a very curious show, but utterly unsafe to touch, and unsure to stand on.'

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

When the arrangements were completed, the duke of Grafton discovered that the sacrifice he had made for his friend was rewarded, not by degradation to the condition of a pioneer, but by elevation to the rank of a general officer; for he was placed at the head of the treasury bench; a station which Mr. Pitt's health did not permit him to occupy: he therefore selected for himself the office of privy seal, which he thought would leave him leisure to direct the state puppets according to his inclinations:<sup>\*</sup> his ambition was gratified by the titles of viscount Pynsent and earl of Chatham. To Charles Townshend, whose eloquence had gained him a high reputation in the house of commons, was committed the task of leading that house as chancellor of the exchequer: general Conway was continued in the office of secretary of state, with the earl of Shelburne for his colleague; Sir Charles Saunders being made first lord of the admiralty, and the marquis of Granby commander of the forces. The great seal was given to lord Camden; and the earl of Northington's reward was the president's chair, with a pension of £2000 per annum, in addition to the salary: an increase of that pension to £4000 was secured to him on his resignation of the office; and the reversion of the hanaper for two lives after the demise of the duke of Chandos: thus, as his biographer curiously observes, 'as far as this ministerial arrangement regarded lord Northington, his desired retirement was provided for on gratifying and honorable terms.' Of all changes however none excited so

New minis-  
try.

<sup>\*</sup> 'In July, 1766, Mr. Pitt was created earl of Chatham, and appointed lord privy seal, holding with that office the situation of prime minister.'—Lord Barrington's Memoir, p. 111.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

much surprise, as that which restored the privy seal of Scotland to lord Bute's brother, Mr. Stuart Mackenzie: but no sooner had the great commoner formed this heterogeneous cabinet, and removed into the house of lords, than, as Mr. Burke observed, 'he was no longer minister.' By his acceptance of a peerage he greatly diminished his popularity; and as he had let into the administration many persons who were not sincerely attached either to his person or to his political doctrines, it happened that when ill health detained him from the council-board, plans were not unfrequently adopted which were discordant with his views.<sup>9</sup> His influence in the city received a considerable shock by two clever publications from the pen of Burke; in the first of which he gave 'a short account of the late short administration, which,' says he, 'came into employment under the mediation of the duke of Cumberland, on the tenth of July, 1765; and was removed, on a plan settled by the earl of Chatham, on the thirtieth day of July, 1766:' and a few days after, when this plain, impressive vindication of his friends had produced its effect, a humorous and ironical reply appeared from the same hand, in which the disingenuous conduct of their successors was ably exposed. Speaking of lord Chatham's arrangement of the cabinet, he says; 'on the whole, it is next to *scandalum magnatum*, to allege that the earl of Chatham did any thing less than dictate the late changes. He has, once more, deigned to take the reins of government in his own hand; and will, no doubt, drive with his wonted speed, and raise a deal of dust around him: his horses are all matched to his mind; but as some of them are young and skittish, it is said he has adopted the new contrivance lately exhibited by Sir Francis Delaval on Westminster-bridge: when-

<sup>9</sup> Mr. Nicholls observes, that 'when the earl of Chatham fell ill, the derelict mind of the duke of Grafton was instantly seized by the first occupant: Charles Townshend was that occupant; and as C. Townshend had no fixed principles, it was not surprising that the minister, under his guidance, sometimes proposed one measure, and in a short time after another, its reverse.'—*Recollections*, vol. ii. p. 83.

ever they begin to snort, and toss up their heads, he touches the spring, throws them loose, and away they go, leaving his lordship safe and snug, and as much at ease as if he sat on a woolpack.' He next attacked the patents and reversions granted to lord Northington, lord Camden, and Mr. Stuart Mackenzie, 'brother german to lord Bute, and brother in office to lord Chatham; *par nobile fratrum*, whichever way you take it.' To this ingenious paper he affixed the signature of Whittington; and it is said that the great original and his cat, in their day, could scarcely have made more noise and attracted more attention than his supposed descendant and namesake. Even Mr. Beckford, with all his wealth and influence, shared in the unpopularity of his friend; and both these patriots soon afterwards sank still lower in the estimation of all real friends of the constitution, in consequence of their efforts, at the next meeting of parliament, to vindicate the dispensing power of the crown.

One of the first diplomatic attempts of lord Chatham was to establish a powerful northern confederacy, principally between England, Russia, and Prussia,<sup>10</sup> to counterbalance that formidable alliance framed by the house of Bourbon, on the basis of its family compact: with this view he procured his friend Mr. Stanley to be appointed ambassador extraordinary to the court of Petersburg, with credentials also for the Prussian monarch: but before he sent this gentleman on so important a mission, he sounded Frederic's sentiments on the subject, by means of Sir Andrew Mitchell, who had been many years resident at Berlin, and who enjoyed the full confidence of the king. 'This,' says lord Chatham,<sup>11</sup> 'is a step of such decision and consequence on the part of his Britannic majesty, as cannot fail to make deep impressions on the mind of that clear-sighted

<sup>10</sup> Provision was to be made for inviting the accession of Denmark, Sweden, the States-General, and such of the German and other powers, as the original contracting parties might agree on, and as were not engaged in the family compact.

<sup>11</sup> Ellis's Original Letters, second series, vol. iv. p. 496.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

monarch, the king of Prussia, 'if he be the least inclined toward this great work; and if he meets, on his part, the king's favorable dispositions, I see before us a happy prospect of durable tranquillity: my own heart is in this arduous business.' The answer of Sir Andrew states, that he found the king of Prussia very averse to forming new and stricter connexions with England, as well on account of the usage he met with toward the end of the late war, as of the unsettled and fluctuating state of the British government since the peace. When our envoy pressed on his majesty the consideration, that lord Chatham had now taken a share in the administration, as a reason for abandoning his distrust, Frederic's reply was, 'I fear my friend has hurt himself by accepting of a peerage at this time.' He received all advances with great coldness, observing, 'that the times were not proper;' and intimating his acquaintance with some matters of discussion between England and France, likely, one time or other, to be the occasion of a new war; in which the natural interests of Prussia might not lead her to take a part. In a subsequent conference which Sir Andrew had with the king on this subject, not in quality of a minister, but a private friend, the monarch owned 'that it was not easy to forget the ill usage and injustice he had experienced from our nation at the time of making the last peace;' and he entered into an enumeration of particulars. To this it was replied, that in candor he ought not to impute to the nation faults of individuals who were then unhappily ministers; that there was now a fixed and settled administration, whose way of thinking and acting was very different from that of their predecessors; that while lord Chatham was at its head, his Prussian majesty could not have any real cause for diffidence; that the proposed alliance was a measure which his lordship had much at heart, in order to preserve the public tranquillity, and unite the interests of England and Prussia. The king answered, that he had a very high opinion of lord



Chatham, and also great confidence in him: but what assurances could be given that he had power, and would continue in office?—‘The assurance that his lordship is now the darling of the king and people.’—‘That,’ said Frederic, ‘does not agree with my accounts from England.’ Sir Andrew then observed, ‘that such accounts were merely reports raised by his lordship’s enemies.’ To this he replied, —‘that he wished it might be so; but till he saw more stability in our administration, he did not choose to draw his connexions with us closer.’ Thus the negotiation went off, but without any suspicion being raised of Frederic having views to other alliances. ‘If he is cool,’ says Sir Andrew Mitchell, ‘to our nation, he holds the French in abhorrence and contempt; of which he makes no secret.’

The information however which this great monarch possessed respecting lord Chatham’s declining popularity was more accurate than that of his diplomatic friend. That influence of the earl of Bute, to which it was supposed his lordship now condescended to submit, blighted his fair fame; and he who had proudly boasted that he would never be responsible for measures which he could not guide, was taunted as a willing agent of men whom he did not even esteem: his acceptance of a peerage was a never-failing source of invective; his quarrel with lord Temple, and all its disparaging circumstances, were unsparingly discussed; innumerable pamphlets appeared against him; and the city of London, where he had lately reigned paramount, repeatedly declined the proposal of presenting him with an address on his appointment.

Decline of  
lord Chat-  
ham’s po-  
pularity.

It was also a very unfortunate circumstance, as regarded lord Chatham’s administration, that at this time an alarming scarcity of provisions prevailed, owing to a deficiency in last year’s harvest; and, as distress existed on the continent, great apprehension was entertained, lest combinations of monopolists, for the purpose of exportation, might involve the country in all the horrors of famine. In consequence

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

of such fears, and the increasing price of provisions, tumultuous riots occurred in various parts of the kingdom, and the populace took on themselves to regulate the markets, and to punish supposed delinquents: a lamentable loss of life in many instances followed these violent proceedings; on which, special commissions were sent down to try the offenders; many of whom were brought to condign punishment, although as much lenity was shown as the strong necessity of the case would permit. On the eleventh of September a proclamation appeared for enforcing the law against forestallers and regraters: but as the price of all articles continued to rise, and the city of London made a representation to the throne respecting large orders for wheat which had been received from the continent, a second was issued on the twenty-sixth, prohibiting the exportation of grain; and as parliament was at this time prorogued, an embargo, by royal authority, was laid on all outward-bound vessels laden with corn.

Meeting of  
parliament.

When the houses met on the eleventh of November, the scarcity and high price of provisions formed a principal topic of the king's speech; which recommended farther measures, if necessary, for allaying or remedying the evil. The address was opposed in both houses, amendments being moved which reflected strongly on the late conduct of the privy council; and although these were ultimately rejected, yet it was thought right to pass a bill of indemnity, in favor of those who had acted in obedience to the council with regard to the embargo. When this bill was brought in by one of the principal members of the cabinet, a remark was made, that although it provided for the security of the inferior officers, who had acted under the proclamation, it passed over those who advised the same; neither had it a preamble sufficiently indicating the illegality of the measure. Hence arose much altercation and debate, especially among the lords; where some, who had long been notorious as the advocates of

popular rights, and among them lords Chatham and Camden, were found eager to vindicate the present exertion of prerogative, on the plea, not of necessity, but of right; arguing that a dispensing power was inherent in the crown, to be exerted indeed only in urgent cases, during the recess of parliament, and expiring whenever parliament re-assembled: in support of his opinion, lord Chatham recited several passages from the work of Locke on Government; while lord Camden in his argument observed, that the necessity of a measure rendered it legal; and that as the crown is the sole executive power, it is entrusted by the constitution with liberty to execute what the safety of the state may require, during a recess of parliament: 'and this,' said he, 'at most is but a forty days' tyranny.'

These sentiments were strongly opposed by lords Temple, Lyttleton, and Mansfield; the latter of whom, having long been looked on as an instrument of court influence, now, to the surprise of all men, stood forth an intrepid champion of the constitution; 'on which occasion,' observes Mr. Nicholls, 'he rode the great horse Liberty with much applause.' If, said these orators, the plea of necessity were admitted, and the crown allowed to be the sole judge of that necessity, its power would be unlimited: the wisdom therefore of the legislature has deprived the crown of all discretionary power over positive laws, and has freed acts of parliament from the royal prerogative. The power of suspension, which is but another word for temporary repeal, resides in the legislature only, which is the supreme authority of the realm. The recess of parliament is a distinction unknown to the constitution; for the parliament is always in being; its acts never sleep; nor are they to be evaded, even by the plea of necessity. The law is above the king; he and his subjects are bound by it at all times; but if he has the power of suspending or breaking through one law, he must have an equal right to break through all. No real distinction, it was said, can be made between this

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

regal power of suspending the laws, and of raising money without the consent of parliament; and if it were once admitted, the revolution could be called nothing but a successful rebellion, or a lawless and wicked invasion of the rights of the crown; the bill of rights would be but a false libel; and James II. could not be said to have abdicated or forfeited a crown of which he was robbed.

These and other such arguments in favor of constitutional principles could not be answered: however ministers might be justified by the irresistible argument of necessity in the step they took, parliament determined that an act of indemnity was necessary to protect them in a violation of the law: the amended bill was accordingly passed; but the propriety of their conduct was recognised by an address to the king, requesting him to continue and to extend the embargo. The members of the late administration took no conspicuous part in these debates, lest their zeal might be imputed to disappointment and personal enmity; or, perhaps, foreseeing a dissolution of the present cabinet, they deemed it prudent not to throw any obstacles in the way of their return to office.

No long time elapsed, before it was seen that the surmises of the wily king of Prussia were founded on just observation: lord Chatham lost much of his popularity without doors, and of his influence within, by many parts of his conduct, but more especially by defending the exercise of the dispensing prerogative on unconstitutional grounds: besides, the estrangement of lord Temple deprived him of many adherents; and a powerful coalition of parties was forming against him. Anxious therefore to break this combination, and to prop up his sinking cabinet, he made overtures to the duke of Bedford, with whom he held a satisfactory conference at Bath, preparatory to ulterior arrangements; in consequence of which, his grace's adherents took very little share in the parliamentary debates: still the force of opposition was so strongly felt, and the

contrast of his present situation with his triumphant career in a former reign so harassed the minister, that he sought anxiously for means to weaken the force of his antagonists : in order to effect this, he endeavored to create a breach between the duke of Newcastle's adherents and those of lord Rockingham, ungraciously dismissing lord Edgumbe from his office of treasurer of the household, with a view to gratify the duke of Newcastle, by giving it to Sir John Shelly, a near relation of his grace : but this stratagem had an effect directly contrary to what he anticipated ; for instead of dividing these two parties, it rather cemented their union, while it provoked their resentment : even his own associates began to desert the minister ; for the duke of Portland, lord high chamberlain, the earls of Besborough and Scarborough, with lord Monson, withdrew their support ; and Sir Charles Saunders, with his colleagues Sir William Meredith and admiral Keppel, resigned their places at the board of admiralty.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

In this state of embarrassment, lord Chatham renewed his negotiations with the duke of Bedford, offering the place of first lord of the admiralty to lord Gower, who took a journey to Woburn for the express purpose of consulting his grace on the subject : in his absence, however, the minister, as if infatuated, gave the office to Sir Edward Hawke, filling up the other seats at the board with Sir Percy Brett and Mr. Jenkinson ; while lords Hillsborough and Le Despenser were appointed joint postmasters. Thus the Bedford party were totally alienated from the administration ; nor were even those who accepted office thoroughly conciliated ; and this once glorious minister, who had yoked both the people and the sovereign to his chariot wheels, finding himself deprived of the affection and respect of his colleagues, opposed by violent parties in the house, and daily losing his popularity with all classes, became a prey to grief, disappointment, and vexation. With a mind ill at ease, a constitution

Ministerial  
embarrass-  
ments.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

Affairs of  
the East  
India com-  
pany.

broken by cares, and a body tortured by the gout, he sank at times into the lowest state of despondency, became incapable of attending to official business, and left the cabinet to make its own arrangements, and adopt its own measures.

Before the meeting of parliament, some important debates and resolutions took place at the India-house. In consequence of the success of their arms and negotiations in the east, the proprietors naturally expected a corresponding increase of profit: in their opinion, a small dividend, for the sole advantage of their successors, ill agreed with the great prosperity of the company and its anticipated stability. These inclinations however of the proprietors did not coincide intirely with the views of the directors; the former party considering only the successes of the company, while the latter took also into account its expenses and its heavy debts: two factions therefore arose; the one anxious to increase the dividends, the other to keep them at the same rate; and it was determined by the former, if the directors did not themselves declare an augmentation, to make an appeal to a general court. During great part of the summer and autumn, this contest was carried on with much animosity, and various publications on the subject brought the secret affairs of the company before the public eye; so that its opulence as a corporate body, and its utility to the state, became matters of general inquiry and speculation. A compromise, offered by the directors, to raise the dividends, now standing at six per cent., to eight, had already been rejected: but at the Michaelmas meeting, when the parties came to a trial of strength, letters from lord Clive and the select committee at Bengal were read, in which the present and future prospects of the company were dilated on in terms which far exceeded the expectations even of the most sanguine: the directors, however, still opposed the desired increase; nevertheless, a motion for augmenting the dividends to ten per cent. was carried against them

by a large majority ; though some of the proprietors themselves thought this success a poor compensation for the publicity which the contest had given to their affairs : indeed, a message from the first lord of the treasury was read at this very meeting, declaring the intention of government to take the concerns of the company into consideration ; for which purpose a committee was appointed on the twenty-fifth of November, and orders were issued for the production of copies of charters, treaties with native powers, correspondence with public servants, and accounts both of revenue and expensés : but in consequence of a petition from the court of directors, representing the evils that might ensue from a publication of private correspondence, it was agreed that this should not be printed.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

On the twenty-fourth of September the queen was safely delivered of a daughter, princess-royal of England, and afterwards queen of Wirtemberg : on the twenty-first of the following month the court was enlivened by the marriage of the ill-fated Caroline Matilda, to her cousin Christian VII., king of Denmark. This victim of state policy was no less remarkable for the beauty and elegance of her person, than for a vivacity of disposition, a variety of attainments, and a sweetness of temper, which irresistibly engaged the affections of all around her : the alliance was expected to benefit this country by strengthening its connexion with one of those northern powers, to which, during the existence of the family compact, our attention was strongly drawn ; while Denmark was satisfied with the pecuniary emolument of £40,000, given to the princess for a dowry. It is stated, that the unhappy bride, worthy of a better fate than a union with a royal idiot, fell into a deep melancholy as soon as the treaty was definitively settled : after the ceremony, she quitted her native shores with great regret ; and in little more than five years her worst anticipations were realised.

CHAP.  
VIII.1766.  
Foreign  
transac-  
tions.

Many other countries, as well as England, experienced internal commotions this year: in the month of March the parliament of Rouen sent a remonstrance to the French king respecting his treatment of the parliament of Britany, whose members he had banished; and having taken the extraordinary liberty to remind him of his coronation oath, in terms which implied a contract between the sovereign and his people, the despot indignantly repelled this interpretation, and declared in reply, 'that the oath which he had taken was not to the nation,' as they asserted; 'but to God alone.' In Britany itself the spirit of resistance, upheld by public opinion, continued unabated, and the counsellors of parliament refused to resume their functions at the king's command: for this act of contumacy they were punished by the insertion of their names in the lists for militia service; and those on whom the lot fell were obliged to join their battalions, while the rest acted as city guards.

Madrid also was the scene of commotions very unexpected by its arbitrary rulers: the king, addicted more to Neapolitan than to Spanish customs, had brought with him from Italy a number of favorites; one of whom, the marquis of Squillace, had been appointed to the post of prime minister: under his guidance, the weak prince was persuaded to undertake the task of remodelling the national habits: he accordingly issued a severe edict against the large flapped hats and long cloaks, which had been for ages the favorite costume of the Spanish people; and the consequences of this proceeding were riots and tumults, which led to the shedding of blood, and ended in the expulsion of the obnoxious minister, with his Italian train.

The greatest dissensions however occurred in the ill-constituted state of Poland: the dissidents, having undergone many grievous oppressions, made application to the courts of Petersburg, Berlin, England, and Denmark, as guarantees of the treaty



of Oliva, requesting their interposition with the king and the Polish diet: the ministers of those powers, however, found that they had very little influence with the bigoted catholics, until a strong Russian force advanced toward Warsaw, and terrible commotions took place throughout the country: the troops were then stopped on their march, and the episcopal college consented to sign nine articles, by which the dissidents were allowed the free exercise of their worship in churches, wherever they had been permitted to erect them; and in private houses, where no churches existed. Still they were subjected to many restrictions, which denoted a very imperfect toleration.

CHAP.  
VIII.

1766.

In Sweden the public tranquillity was for a time disturbed by an insurrection of the peasants, resenting the exclusion of one of their body who was elected a member of the diet; but it was soon suppressed, and the ringleaders suffered condign punishment: the diet made several useful regulations for relieving the financial distresses of the state. On the eighth of March, the prince of Orange, having arrived at the age required by law, assumed the administration of the United Provinces, amidst the acclamations of the people.

## CHAPTER IX.

## GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1756-1766.

Affairs of India—Retrospect of them as relating to the deposition of Mir Jaffier Ali Khan—Elevation of his son-in-law Cossim Ali Khan—His conduct—His interests clash with those of the company—Unjust usurpation of trade by individuals in the company's service—Attempts of president Vansittart to adjust matters with the subahdar—Interview between them—Regulations agreed on—Cossim's determination to throw open the trade if these should fail of success—Mr. Vansittart's agreement disavowed by the council—Injurious steps taken by the company's servants—Retaliation by the subahdar—Conduct of Mr. Ellis at Patna—Death of Mr. Amyatt—Recapture of Patna—Mr. Ellis and other English made prisoners—Cossim deposed, and Mir Jaffier again raised to the musnud—He grants the trade to private individuals, and other advantages to the company—Operations of the war between the company and Cossim—Battle of Geriah—Farther operations, and capture of Monghir—Murder of Mr. Ellis and other English prisoners—Patna taken by major Adams—Cossim takes refuge with Sujah Dowla, nabob of Oude—Alliance between him and the emperor to restore Cossim—Major Carnac takes the command of the army—Operations of the war—Major Munro assumes the command—Subdues the rebellious spirit of the army—Battle of Buxar—The emperor deserts the confederacy—Unsuccessful attack on fort Chandageer—Negotiations—Oppressive conduct of the company towards Mir Jaffier—His death—His son Najim u Dowla appointed to succeed him—Arrangements made with him—Steps taken by the directors to abate the oppressive conduct of their servants in the east—Lord Clive appointed governor in India, with a select committee—His sentiments and conduct on his arrival—His account of the proceedings of the company's servants—Lord Clive's progress up the country, and arrangements made with the subahdar—Military operations after the battle of Buxar—Sujah Dowla throws himself on the generosity of the English—Terms made with him and the emperor—Dewanee granted to the company—Disappointed expectations of the directors—Trans-

actions of the select committee respecting the inland trade—  
Arrangement concerning military expenses—Double pay  
stopped—Conspiracy of the officers in consequence—Sup-  
pressed by the prudence and decision of lord Clive—Treaty  
of mutual defence between the company and native powers—  
Najim u Dowla dies—Succeeded by his brother Syeff—  
Affairs of the inland trade—Taken from the company's  
servants—Departure of lord Clive from India.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

It is now time to take a brief view of the affairs of India; as we are arrived at that memorable epoch, when a company of merchants, whose leading object was gain, and whose principal ambition was the collection of revenue, adopted a line of policy which led them to the empire of the east; an empire far more powerful than had ever been established by the greatest conquerors in those fertile regions.

Affairs of  
India.

It may be recollected that, after the deposition and death of Surajah Dowla, nabob of Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa, Mir Jaffier Ali Khan had been raised to that dignity through British influence: the character of this prince was weak, treacherous, and cruel; but for some time he continued to exhibit sentiments of gratitude and friendship toward those to whom he owed his elevation: his treasury however soon became exhausted, and his best revenues were mortgaged to supply the vast sums which he had engaged to pay; and as he had granted to his new allies so many commercial advantages, that he was almost deprived of resources, and driven to the most oppressive measures for raising money; these alienated from him the hearts of his subjects, and his own from the English, whom he began to regard as grievous oppressors; which feeling of hostility was increased by the representations of his son Miran, a weak, voluptuous youth; who, having formed projects for breaking the English connexion, irritated his father by taunting him with his dependent state and nominal powers of government.

CHAP.  
IX.1756-66.  
Deposition of Mir  
Jaffier.

This jealousy of the English soon prompted Mir Jaffier to enter into negotiations with native powers, and even with the Dutch, against them; while the evident injury done to his finances by some of the privileges he had granted to his allies, obliged him in a manner to infringe them: as age advanced, his luxury, licentiousness, and tyranny became insupportable; though his feebleness was such, that his tributary rajahs retained the revenues, and if pressed to account for them, vindicated their contumacy by rebellion. Besides, the English, who fought his battles, were unrewarded as well as hated: their money and effects were considerably exhausted; and Jaffier, far from aiding, impeded all their efforts to obtain supplies, and secretly intrigued with their enemies.

Elevation  
of Mir Cossim.

For these reasons the council at Calcutta meditated a change in the administration of affairs; and as Mir Jaffier's son Miran had been killed by a stroke of lightning, which pierced him as he lay in his tent, they sent for Cossim Ali Khan, his son-in-law, a prince of acknowledged talents, who had frequently professed an attachment to the company, and promised large compensations, if through their exertions he should be promoted to the dewanee,<sup>13</sup> which had been enjoyed by his deceased brother-in-law. A higher field of action now lay open to him: at first it was determined to leave the empty title of sovereignty to Mir Jaffier, after investing his son-in-law with all real power, as guardian of the realm: but to this arrangement the old viceroy obstinately refused his consent, until the British troops entered his capital, and threatened to storm his palace: then it was, that fearing to live under the protection of Cossim, he abdicated the throne, on condition of an asylum being granted to him at Calcutta.

His successor, beside largely recompensing private individuals,<sup>14</sup> engaged to indemnify the com-

<sup>13</sup> That is, the office of collecting the revenue.<sup>14</sup> Mr. Summer received £28,000, Mr. Holwell £30,937, Mr. M'Guire

pany for their expenses in his exaltation, and in maintaining forces for his security: he also promised to liquidate the balance due from Mir Jaffier, and to fulfil all that prince's engagements: at the same time, he ceded to them the districts of Burdwan, Midnapore, and Chittagong. To the inhabitants of those countries that were situated on the western bank of the Hoogly this was a happy change; for after having been long harassed by the predatory excursions of Mahratta freebooters, they at length obtained that tranquillity, which, under the company's protection, they have ever since enjoyed.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

For some time Cossim carried on his administration with extraordinary conduct and success: he punctually performed his engagements with the company, and availed himself of their assistance to drive the emperor Shah Allum from the frontiers of his province, as well as to reduce the rebellious rajahs and zemindars to obedience: by the money too, which he extorted from them, added to strict economy and vigilance in collecting his revenue, he satisfied his troops, and was enabled to remodel a considerable portion of his army according to the European system. Peace however could not long subsist between him and the company: the great object of an eastern despot is to extract the largest possible revenue from his subjects, for the purpose of expending it in his own sensual gratifications: that of the company's servants, at this period, was to obtain in the shortest possible time the means of returning home with riches sufficient to support that splendor to which they had been accustomed in the east. Cossim therefore soon found that the interests of the two parties clashed: accordingly, having put his civil and military affairs in the best train he could, he determined to remove farther from his protectors: having left Moorshedabad, he fixed his re-

Disputes  
with the  
company.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

sidence at Monghir, a strong place about 200 miles higher up the Ganges; but he soon found that no distance could secure him from the effects of commercial rapacity. Though the revenue was on much better footing than before his elevation, it still fell vastly short of its former extent; for the servants of the company, presuming on the services rendered to Mir Cossim, took this opportunity of following up a system of commercial usurpations, which they had begun under the reign of his predecessor, breaking through all the restrictions of former subahdars, and engaging largely in the interior trade of the country. Employing the company's dustuck, or exemption from transit duties, in their own private speculations, they were now getting all the trade of the province into their own hands, annihilating the subahdar's customs, and draining up the main sources of his revenue. On representations of this evil being made to governor Vansittart, he endeavored to redress it by gentle means, soothing the indignation of the subahdar, cautioning the individuals complained of, and lending his authority to assist the native officers in checking the illegal traffic: but the mischief still went on increasing; the collectors of the revenue were not only resisted, but often punished on the spot; and the utmost violence was used by those who affected to consider all opposition to their rapacious schemes as a daring violation of the company's rights, and a sign of the subahdar's intention of expelling the English from his territories. 'At the present time,' says Mr. Mill, 'it is difficult to believe, even after the most undeniable proof, that it became a common practice to force the unhappy natives to buy the goods of the company's servants, and of all those who procured the use of their name, at a greater, and to sell to the company's servants the goods which they desired to purchase, at a less than the market price: the native judges and magistrates were resisted in the discharge of their duties, and even their functions were usurped: the

whole frame of government was relaxed; and in many places the zemindars and other collectors refused to be answerable for the revenues.

‘The president, aware of the prejudices which were fostered by a majority of the board against both the nabob and himself, submitted not to their deliberation these disorders and disputes, till he found his own authority inadequate to redress them. The representations, presented to them, of the enormities to which the private trade gave birth in the country, were treated by the majority of the council as the effect of a weak or interested subservience to the views of the nabob; while they received the complaints of their servants and agents against the native officers, more often in fault, according to Hastings and Vansittart, from laxity than tyranny, as proofs of injustice demanding immediate punishment; and of hostile designs, against which effectual securities could not be too speedily taken. Of the council, a great proportion were deriving vast emoluments from abuses, the existence of which they denied; and the president obtained support from Mr. Hastings alone, in his endeavors to check enormities, which a few years afterwards, the court of directors, the president, the servants of the company themselves, and the whole world, joined in reprobating with every term of condemnation and abhorrence.’<sup>15</sup>

Observing the progress of this provocation on one side and resentment on the other, knowing also the strong interest which Mir Cossim had in maintaining his connexion with the English, Mr. Vansittart determined to have an interview with the subahdar; hoping that by explanations and mutual concessions some arrangement might be made, which should remove the cause both of injury and of complaint. Accordingly, he set out, with Mr. Hastings as his coadjutor; and on the twentieth of November, 1762, arrived at Monghir, where he was received by the

<sup>15</sup> Mill's British India, vol. iii. p. 293.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

subahdar with every mark of cordiality and friendship. In the conference that ensued, the nabob asserted, that if the servants of the company were permitted to carry on the traffic of which he complained, and to draw all the revenue into their own hands, it would be much more for his interest to throw the trade intirely open, and to collect no customs on any kind of merchandise: 'for this,' said he, 'would draw merchants into the country, and increase my revenues by encouraging the cultivation and manufacture of goods for sale; at the same time it would cut off the principal subject of disputes which have disturbed the good understanding between myself and the English; an object, which, more than any other, I have at heart.'

Regulations  
adopted.

It was impossible not to be struck with the force and justice of the subahdar's observations: but Mr. Vansittart, though he knew, as he himself declares, the interior trade, grasped by the company's servants, to be a usurpation, was yet, he says, 'unwilling to give up an advantage which had been enjoyed by them, in a greater or less degree, for the last five or six years.' A still stronger reason probably was, that he knew himself unable to make them 'give it up;' and therefore limited his endeavors to place it on such a foundation as appeared best calculated for the exclusion of abuse. He proposed that the interior trade should be open to the servants of the company, but that they should pay the same duties as other merchants; and that, for the prevention of all disputes, a fixed and accurate rate of imposts should be established. To this arrangement the nabob, who saw but little security against a repetition of preceding evils in the assignment of duties, which, as before, the servants of the company might refuse to pay, manifested extreme aversion: at last, with great difficulty, he was induced to comply; but declared his resolution, if this experiment should fail, to abolish all duties on the interior commerce, and in this way at least place his own subjects on a level with strangers. To prevent the inconvenience of repeated stoppages, it was



agreed that nine per cent., a rate immensely below that of other traders, should be paid on the prime cost of the goods at the place of purchase, and that no farther duties should be imposed ;<sup>16</sup> Mr. Vansittart returned to Calcutta on the sixteenth of January, 1763, thinking that he had entered into the above arrangement with the good wishes of his colleagues, and anticipating their approbation of his conduct : but he was not aware of their rapacious desires ; for long before his arrival his measures had been condemned, and a determination taken to disavow the treaty which he had concluded, not only as made without authority, but as being dishonorable to the British name, and pernicious to the company's interests : and when accounts were received, that the subahdar's officers had acted on their master's instructions, and had in some instances retaliated on the company's officers, who in ignorance of the late convention resisted their authority, instructions were sent to the agents of the several factories, ordering them not only to trade as before, but to seize and imprison any native officer who should dare to oppose them. It was also determined in a full council, by all its members except the president and Mr. Hastings, that, according to the imperial firmaun, the company's servants had a right to the internal trade of the country ; that the duties which they paid were a matter of compliment only ; and that for the future none should be levied on any article except salt, for which only two and a half, instead of nine per cent., should be paid : at the same time, the adjustment of all disputes was vested in the hands of factors and residents ; the very persons who were drawing enormous profits from the abuses that were complained of.

The subahdar was returning from an unsuccessful expedition against Nepaul, when his chagrin was heightened by intelligence respecting these acts of council, and the imprisonment of some native officers :

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

Oppress-  
ions of the  
company's  
servants.

<sup>16</sup> Mill's British India, vol. iii. p. 297.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

accordingly, in the first burst of his indignation, he executed his previous resolution of abolishing the transit duties, and throwing open the trade throughout his dominions. Then was exhibited an instance of that shameless tyranny which is too often connected with a commercial spirit of government : for the company, not content with insisting that their own goods should be exempt from duty, now demanded that those of all other traders should be made subject to it ; accusing the subahdar of a breach of peace with the British nation, because he had abolished it : finally, they deputed two of their members, Messrs. Hay and Amyatt, not merely to remonstrate with the nabob, but to enforce on him their conditions, under the pretext of obtaining them by negotiation.

Retaliation  
of the  
subahdar.

In the mean-time, between the violence committed by the company's officers on the one side, and that of the subahdar on the other, much animosity was engendered, and commerce suffered great interruptions : but at Patna the flames of discord first broke out, where Mr. Ellis, the company's resident, a man of impetuous temper, had employed the sepoys to act in large bodies against the natives, and had gone to the length of spilling blood. Before the middle of April, war was seen to be inevitable ; and the nabob, conscious of inferior strength, and apprised of the council's intentions, applied for assistance to the emperor, and to Sujah Dowla, nabob of Oude.

On the twenty-fifth of May, some boats laden with arms, and proceeding up the river to Patna, gave intimation to the subahdar that the English were preparing for the last appeal : he accordingly stopped them at Monghir ; but declared himself willing to release them, if Mr. Ellis were removed from his station at Patna, and replaced by another resident : the council however resolved to treat this action as one of great atrocity, and sent orders that the deputation should return instantly to Calcutta, unless the arms were allowed to proceed. In the mean time, Mr. Ellis, at his own especial request,

had been furnished with unlimited powers; and had employed them in preparations to attack the city of Patna: intelligence of this having reached the ears of Mir Cossim, he at once seized on the arms; and though he permitted Mr. Amyatt to depart, he retained Mr. Hay as an hostage for the safety of one of his own officers imprisoned by the English. News of Mr. Amyatt's departure being made known to Mr. Ellis on the twenty-fourth of June, that very night he surprised the garrison and captured the city; a proceeding, which roused the violent passions of the Indian chief to such a pitch, that he sent a force to arrest Mr. Amyatt on his passage down the Ganges: but that unfortunate gentleman, refusing to submit, and firing on the nabob's people, was killed with many others in the conflict. Both parties now engaged openly in war, the fortune of which seemed at first to turn against the English; for although they had obtained possession of Patna, yet despising the enemy too much, they had neglected every precaution, while they dispersed themselves on all sides to pillage that opulent city. The Indian governor, informed of this disorder, and reinforced by a detachment from Monghir, attacked his scattered enemies, destroyed many of them, and compelled the rest to take refuge in the fort: finding themselves however unable to make a defence, they abandoned it by night, and endeavored to make their escape; but were surrounded, taken prisoners, and sent off to Monghir.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

When these transactions were made known at Calcutta, the council, who had previously determined on the measure, solemnly deposed Cossim Ali Khan, and again set up Mir Jaffier, whose eagerness to enjoy a luxurious though degraded throne, induced him to promise compliance with any conditions. 'Beside confirming the grant obtained from Mir Cossim, of the revenues of Burdwan, Midnapore, and Chittagong, for defraying the expense of the English troops employed in defence of the country, the new subahdar granted exemption to the trade of

Restoration  
of Mir  
Jaffier.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

the company's servants from all duties, except two and a half per cent., which these servants themselves, out of their own liberality, agreed to pay on the single article of salt: he consented also to rescind the ordinance of Mir Cossim for the general remission of commercial imposts, and to exact the ancient duties from all, except English dealers: he engaged to maintain 12,000 horse, and 12,000 foot; to pay to the company thirty lacs of rupees, on account of their losses and the expense of the war; to reimburse the personal losses of individuals; and to permit no Europeans, except the English, to erect fortresses in the country.<sup>17</sup> Thus not only was the secret discovered of ruling under others, but the practicability of keeping a competitor for the musnud, to be set up and taken down as it might suit the interests of these Tyrian princes.

On the second of July, major Adams took the command of the British troops, consisting of 650 Europeans and 1200 sepoy, exclusive of the Indian cavalry; and this was afterwards augmented by 100 Europeans and a battalion of sepoy from Midnapore: the new subahdar also proceeded to the army, which he joined on the seventeenth.

Battle of  
Geriah.

The first movement of Mir Cossim was to send three of his generals, with their respective divisions, to protect the city of Moorshedabad, the ancient capital of Bengal. On the nineteenth they were attacked and totally defeated; on which they retreated toward Geriah, where they had received orders to take up a position, and were reinforced by a large detachment from Mir Cossim's army; that division of it, which was disciplined after the European manner, being commanded by one Sumroo, a German adventurer, who had come to India as a sergeant in the French service. On the twenty-third, the English army advanced, and next day stormed the lines at Mootejil, which success gave them possession of Moorshedabad. On the second of August

<sup>17</sup> Mill's *British India*, vol. iii, p. 305.

they reached the plain of Geriah, where the enemy waited to give them battle : it was the severest conflict they had hitherto sustained, lasting four hours ; during which time the British line was once broken, the eighty-fourth regiment was attacked both in front and rear, and two guns were captured : but the steady valor and discipline of English soldiers having exhausted the impetuosity of their assailants, they were driven back with great slaughter, and retreated toward the Oodwa, a small river on which Mir Cossim had formed a strong intrenchment, defended by a numerous train of artillery, with a deep ditch more than fifty feet in breadth, and full of water. At this period, the subahdar himself, having sent his family and treasures to the stronghold of Rotas, and put to death the rajah Ramnorain with several other chiefs and persons of distinction, left Monghir, and advanced toward the Oodwa ; but halting at a safe distance, he contented himself with sending forward a detachment of his troops. On the eleventh of August the English army approached the intrenchment, which occupied the whole of a narrow space, extending from the river to the foot of the hills ; the ground in front being swampy, and offering no approach except a narrow space on the bank of the river. This formidable post detained the British troops nearly a month, during which time they were exposed to harassing attacks of cavalry ; but on the fourth of September major Adams had recourse to a stratagem : observing that the enemy's forces trusted to the natural strength of their position, and were negligent on the side of the mountains, he made a feint of attacking them where their principal strength lay, while a body of his troops marched in the night to the opposite quarter, which was less guarded, and at daybreak easily mastered it : the Indians, being astonished at this unexpected movement, and thrown into inextricable confusion, abandoned their intrenchment with precipitation, and made no farther stand till they came to Monghir, whither the subahdar had fled before them. Here however Mir Cossim re-

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

Capture of  
Monghir.

mained only a few days, to secure some of his effects, and to refresh his troops : he then proceeded toward Patna, carrying with him the English prisoners, and killing by the way the two Seets, great Hindu bankers, whom, during his disputes with the company, he had seized and brought from Moorshedabad.

The British army now advanced to the attack of Monghir, which after a siege of nine days capitulated ; and nothing then remained to complete the reduction of the province but the capture of Patna : this last hold of the subahdar's waning power he had taken great precautions to strengthen ; throwing into it a garrison of 10,000 troops, and protecting the suburbs with large bodies of cavalry : irritated however by the progress of the English, and unable to check them in the field, he took a terrible revenge in the massacre of his prisoners. The foreign general Sumroo was selected for the perpetration of this bloody deed ; and on the day intended to put it into execution, Mr. Ellis, with about forty of his companions, was invited to a grand entertainment in Sumroo's tent ; but in the midst of their conviviality, while they supposed themselves protected by the laws of hospitality as well as of war, the barbarian gave orders to his Indian troops to cut their throats : even to these men however the task was so revolting, that they hesitated to obey, and with true gallantry demanded that the prisoners should be supplied with arms to make their own defence : this of course was rejected ; and the soldiers were compelled by menaces and blows to complete the horrid butchery, while the rest of the captives were murdered in private : so complete was this dreadful catastrophe, that even an infant child of Mr. Ellis was included in it. Mr. Fullerton, a surgeon, who, in the exercise of his professional skill, had acquired the esteem of the subahdar, was the only person spared.

The dreadful crime however was not long unrevenge : on the sixth of November, after a siege of eight days, during which the enemy made several

gallant sallies, major Adams took Patna by storm ; and thus became the first European conqueror of Bengal. In four months he had gained four decisive battles ; forced the strongest intrenchments of the country ; taken two regularly fortified places, as well as large quantities of arms and stores ; and subdued, with a comparatively small army, the most resolute, skilful, and powerful enemy which Great Britain had yet encountered in the east.

CHAP.  
IX.

---

1756-66.

Mir Cossim now took refuge in the dominions of Sujah Dowla, nabob of Oude, who in a former treaty had bound himself by a solemn oath on the Koran to support him in case of need : at first however he refused to admit his troops ; and appearing as if unwilling to embroil himself with so formidable a power as that of the English, declared his wish for the continuance of peace : still he could not help regarding the advances of such neighbors with a suspicious eye ; and it was not long before an alliance was concluded between himself and the emperor Shah Allum, for the restoration of Mir Cossim, who, encouraged by the assistance of these powers, was not long in drawing together a considerable force : in this resolution the confederates were encouraged, not more by the death of major Adams, whose name had become very formidable, than by a spirit of mutiny and disaffection now prevailing among the British troops, disappointed in the rewards they had expected for their great and successful services ; so that in the month of March, 1764, when major Carnac arrived to take the command, he was unable to push the war into Sujah Dowla's dominions, though strongly urged to it by the government and council ; and in April, when the enemy advanced, with 50,000 men, supported by a suitable train of artillery, he found himself under the necessity of retreating before them, and encamping under the walls of Patna, to prevent being cut off : even in this position they were attacked on the fifth of May ; Sumroo, with the choicest infantry and cavalry, assailing them in

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

front, while the main body took them in the rear : the battle was long, and severely contested ; but before sun-set the enemy was in full retreat, though the English were too fatigued to pursue them.

During the remainder of this month the native troops hovered round the British camp, keeping it in constant anxiety, but never attempting to bring on a general engagement : in the mean time, the crafty nabob of Oude opened a correspondence with Mir Jaffier, under the hope of obtaining possession of some portion of Cossim's territories : the English however would listen to no proposals, without the previous surrender of Mir Cossim and his general Sumroo : to this act of treachery Sujah Dowla refused his consent ; and as the rainy season advanced, and his treasury became exhausted, he determined to retire into his own country : at this time also, the emperor Shah Allum, uneasy under the treatment which he met with from the rapacious Sujah Dowla, opened a communication with the English general ; who rejected his terms of reconciliation, and despatched a considerable force to hasten Sujah Dowla's retreat.

Resolute  
conduct of  
major  
Munro.

Soon afterwards, major Hector Munro arrived from Bombay, with a considerable body of English troops, to assume the command of the army, which he found very generally infected with a spirit of mutiny : this he determined to repress by immediate measures of severity ; and being informed that a battalion of sepoys had just gone off to join the enemy, he gave instant orders that they should be pursued and brought back : this being done, he received the fugitives with all the troops drawn out under arms, and then ordered their officers to bring forward fifty of the most daring and depraved characters from among them ; of these twenty-four of the worst were again selected, and subjected to a court-martial of native officers, by whom they were found guilty, and condemned to suffer death, as the commander in chief might direct : his order was immediately given, that four of them should be tied



to as many pieces of artillery, and blown into the air;—a mode of execution, as merciful to the sufferers as it was appalling to the spectators: on this, four grenadiers sent a petition, that as the post of honor was usually assigned to them, they might suffer first; in which request they were indulged: but after the execution of these men, the European officers of the sepoys then in the field, came to the major, and informed him, that the native troops would not permit any more to be put to death: on hearing which determination, he ordered the artillery to load their field-pieces with grape-shot; and having drawn up the European troops with the guns between the ranks, he commanded the native battalions to ground their arms; assuring them, that if they attempted to move, he would give instant orders to fire. All obeyed; sixteen more of the culprits were blown from the guns; and the remaining four sent to another cantonment, where they suffered the same fate. This timely severity put an end to the mutiny; and on the fifteenth of September, the whole army, consisting of 1500 Europeans and 7500 native troops, was ordered to move: on the twenty-second of October they came up with that of the confederates, defended by an intrenchment, with the Ganges on their left, and the fortress of Buxar in their rear; while before them lay a morass judiciously lined with cannon, and which could neither be passed nor doubled without extreme danger: the major, perceiving their position to be very strong, deferred an attack till he had well explored it; keeping himself however prepared, lest they should anticipate his intentions: nor was his precaution unnecessary; for on the following day the Indians advanced toward his camp, and began a regular and galling fire, against which it was impossible to press forward for the space of two hours: at length, after several skilful manœuvres, executed with great intrepidity, the British troops were enabled to pass the morass on the left, and bring their adversaries to close

Battle of  
Buxar.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

combat ; when the latter suffered a complete defeat, leaving 6000 dead on the field of battle, and blowing up their ammunition before they began their retreat : they however stopped pursuit, by destroying a bridge of boats on a stream which they passed, about two miles from the place of conflict.

This important battle gave a decisive blow to the power of Sujah Dowla : the next day brought an application from the emperor to the British commander, who instantly wrote to the presidency for instructions, and received authority to conclude a treaty ; but before the order arrived, Shah Allum, complaining of being kept like a state prisoner by the nabob, separated his troops from the confederacy ; and marching with the English army, encamped close to it every night. The indefatigable Munro determined to follow up his victory by an attempt on a strong fort belonging to the nabob, called Chandageer, situated on a lofty and almost inaccessible rock. A practicable breach being effected, a storming party was sent by night to the attack ; but while they were attempting to climb up the steep ascent, the Indians, with equal vigilance and activity, overwhelmed them with torrents of stones, and buried multitudes under the rubbish. On the following night the assault was renewed, but with no better success ; when major Munro desisted from all farther attempts, and encamped in the neighborhood of Benares, an almost open and opulent city, which it was advisable to defend against the enemy's incursions : here the nabob's minister presented himself with overtures of peace from his master, promising twenty-five lacs of rupees to the company, twenty-five to the army, and eight to the commander ; but the surrender of Mir Cossim and Sumroo being, as before, demanded, Sujah Dowla, though he had so far broken the laws of hospitality toward the expatriated subahdar, as to arrest him in his tent, and seize on his treasures, still dreaded the infamy of delivering up a fugitive : he offered however to let him escape, if that would satisfy the

English : as for Sumroo, he proposed to invite that murderer to an entertainment, and to have him despatched in the presence of any witnesses whom they might approve : but this expedient being rejected, as not according with British ideas of morality, the negotiation was broken off; that however with the emperor continued, by which he proposed to make over to the English the territory of Bulwart Sing, late zemindar of Benares, in return for their aid in establishing him in Allahabad and the rest of Sujah Dowla's dominions : he also promised to reimburse them out of the imperial treasury for all the expenses that might be incurred in this service.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

Meanwhile, in consequence of the exhausted state of the treasury at Calcutta, Mir Jaffier was sent for, and every effort used to procure from him more abundant supplies : in addition to the sums for which he had contracted in the recent treaty, a promise was drawn from him to pay five lacs of rupees a month, toward the expenses of the war, so long as it should last : the payments also promised to individuals, and stipulated for under the title of compensation for losses, were swelled to a very oppressive amount. When this article was first inserted in the treaty, it was told him that the sum could not exceed ten lacs ; but it was soon after stated at twenty, then at thirty, at forty, and at last fixed at fifty-three lacs : although the company, as lord Clive declared, had taken possession of at least half his revenues ; ‘ and though allowed,’ says the same authority, ‘ to collect the other half for himself, he was no more than a banker for the company’s servants, who could draw on him for presents, as often, and to as great an amount, as they pleased.’<sup>18</sup> To all other causes of embarrassment in Mir Jaffier’s finances, were added the abuses perpetuated by the company’s servants in their private trade ; which not only disturbed the collection of the revenues,

Oppres-  
sions of the  
company.

<sup>18</sup> Lord Clive’s Speech, March 30th, 1772, in Almon’s Debates, vol. x. page 14.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

but impeded the industry of the whole country. In such circumstances, it was useless to harass the subahdar by demands for larger payments: the importunities to which, with great want of delicacy, he was subjected, conspiring with the infirmities of age, and a constitution worn out by sensuality, soon hurried him to his grave. After languishing some weeks at Calcutta, he returned to Moorshedabad, and died in January, 1765.

Death of  
Mir Jaffier.

Then came on the very agreeable ceremony of creating a nabob, or subahdar; for on such an occasion the servants of the company were in the custom of receiving presents of immense value. Mir Jaffier, a short time before his death, had nominated his second son, Najim u Dowla, who was then about twenty years old, to be his successor, in preference to Miran, the heir of his eldest son; and the council, knowing the moderate talents of the youth, determined to support him in the succession, after previously stipulating the terms of their protection. The right of nomination, in fact, belonged to the Mogul emperor; and he would willingly have bestowed on the company itself the viceroyalty of these rich provinces,<sup>19</sup> the dewanee of which he had repeatedly offered to them: but their modesty as yet drew back from the ostensible assumption of dominion; well knowing that they should possess all its essentials by the instrumentality of that very shadow which was about to be set up: besides, it was the interest of the company's official servants to keep things in their present state: the elevation of a subahdar was an event which made their fortunes by the presents that he distributed: <sup>20</sup> from the company they could expect nothing but the demand of an accurate account of revenue received and sums expended.

<sup>19</sup> Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa.

<sup>20</sup> These were, on the present occasion, as follow:—To Mr. Spencer £23,333, to Messrs. Playdell, Burdett, and Gray, (one lac of rupees each) £35,000, to Mr. Johnstone, £27,650, to Mr. Leycester £13,125, to Mr. Senior £20,125, to Mr. Middleton £14,291, to Mr. Gideon Johnstone £5833.—Mill's *British India*, vol. iii. p. 328.

In the treaty concluded with the new subahdar, it was resolved by the English to take the military affairs intirely into their own hands, allowing the nabob a few troops only for the purposes of state ceremony: by this arrangement no inconvenience could arise from his power; a better provision would be made for the defence of the country; and a still greater share of the revenue would pass through their hands: they also bound him to nominate a deputy, or guardian, for conducting the affairs of government, who was not to be removed without their consent. The young nabob was very desirous of employing in this office one of the principal ministers of his late father, named Nuncomar, a deceitful and dangerous person, strongly suspected of carrying on a treacherous correspondence with Sujah Dowla, and of having been an instigator of Mir Jaffier in his endeavors to throw off the British yoke. This inclination therefore of Najim was firmly opposed, and the appointment fell on Mahomed Rhiza Khan; against which nothing perhaps could be alleged, beyond the exaction of about twenty lacs of rupees, as a gratification to those who made it. The other conditions of the treaty were nearly the same as those which had been made with the old subahdar. Beside the revenues of Burdwan, Midnapore, and Chittagong, the five lacs of rupees per month were to be continued during the war, and as long after it as the state of the country might require: also the grand privilege accorded to the company's servants, of trading within the country without paying those dues to which other traders were subjected, was carefully preserved.

For a long time the court of directors in England had been very inactive controllers of their affairs in the east, deceived by false representations of things at a distance, and buoyed up by unlimited expectations of a golden harvest: but when it was discovered that their revenues were nearly exhausted by destructive wars; and continual reports arrived of rapacity and mismanagement, of risings

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

in the country, of mutiny among the troops, and massacres of their servants, they began to rouse themselves to a sense of their danger and their duty.

In a letter to the governor and council, dated the eighth of February, 1764, they severely condemned the rapacious and unwarranted proceedings of their servants; rightly attributing one grand source of the disputes and difficulties which had occurred with the native governments, to that unwarrantable and licentious mode in which the private trade was carried on: to remedy these disorders, a positive order was given,—‘that from the receipt of this letter a final and effectual end be forthwith put to the inland trade in salt, beetel-nut, tobacco, and all other articles whatsoever, produced and consumed in the country.’

In the following May, however, this order was partially revoked or modified; for at a general meeting of proprietors, it was strongly urged, to the conviction of a majority present, that the servants of the company ought not to be suddenly deprived of advantages, which had hitherto enabled them to revisit their native land after as short a period, and with as independent a fortune, as they had a fair right to expect: the court therefore in a subsequent letter, dated the first of June, contented itself with directing the governor and council to take the inland trade into consideration; and after ‘consulting the nabob, to form a proper and equitable plan for carrying it on.’ Attention also was called to the disgraceful practice of extorting presents;—a practice, which not only brought the ruling powers of the country under endless and unlimited oppression, but prepared the way to continual perfidy in the company’s servants with regard to their employers: for not those plans of policy which were calculated to produce beneficial effects to the company’s interests, but such as were best calculated to multiply occasions for enriching its servants, were recommended and enforced. The court therefore resolved that

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

this benefit should at least be transferred to other quarters ; and accordingly ordained, that new covenants, dated May, 1764, should be executed by all their servants, civil and military, binding them to pay to the company the amount of every present received from the natives, in case it exceeded 4000 rupees ; and not to accept of any gift, if amounting to 1000, but with the consent of the president and council. An unlimited power of receiving or extorting gifts was indeed reserved to the company itself : but it was thought, and justly too, that its servants would not be so rapacious for their masters as they had been for themselves. Enough, however, must have already appeared in the history of the company, to prove the urgent necessity for a strict and frequent interference of the legislature, to correct excesses by which the national character was compromised. ' Few of the individuals, by whom this corporation was either governed or served, were alive to those feelings which impel the mind to great and good acts : they recognised scarcely any other motive, but the desire of enriching themselves, their relations, and dependents. Their strength as a community, which was the consequence of this system, increased with their means of corruption and oppression : but such was the venality of the times, that hardly any, however high their station, escaped the contamination.' <sup>1</sup>

Lord Clive  
appointed  
governor.

At this period lord Clive was selected, after a violent opposition, as the only person capable of retrieving affairs in India : he was accordingly appointed governor, commander in chief, and president of the council of Bengal ; and in addition to the high powers which these offices conferred on him, he was instructed to form a select committee, of himself and four gentlemen named by the court, who might act on their own authority, whenever they should deem it expedient, without even consulting the council.

<sup>1</sup> Sir J. Malcolm's History of India, vol. i. p. 30.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

Arrives in  
India.

Accordingly, his lordship, accompanied by Messrs. Sumner and Sykes, two of the gentlemen appointed to form the select committee, sailed from England on the fourth of June, 1764, and landed at Madras on the tenth of April, 1765: there he learned that the great dangers which had brought him to India were already past; that the troops were submissive; that Cossim Ali was expelled; the mogul under English protection; and Mir Jaffier dead. The sentiments and line of conduct adopted by this celebrated man, which are so important to a right knowledge of Indian affairs, may be learned from the following letter to Mr. Rous, dated seven days after his arrival:—

‘We have at last arrived at that critical period which I have long foreseen; I mean that which renders it necessary for us to determine whether we can or shall take the whole to ourselves: Jaffier Ali Khan is dead, and his natural son is a minor; but I know not whether he is yet declared successor: Sujah Dowla is beat from his dominions; we are in possession of them; and it is scarcely an hyperbole to say, to-morrow the whole Mogul empire is in our power: the inhabitants of the country, we know by long experience, have no attachment to any obligation; their forces are neither disciplined, commanded, nor paid as ours are: can it then be doubted that a large army of Europeans will effectually preserve us as sovereigns; not only by holding in awe the attempts of any country prince; but by rendering us so truly formidable, that no French, Dutch, or other enemy will presume to molest us? You will, I am sure, imagine with me, that after the length we have run, the princes of Hindostan must conclude our views to be boundless; they have such instances of our ambition, that they cannot suppose us capable of moderation: the very nabobs whom we might support would be either covetous of our possessions or jealous of our power: ambition, fear, avarice, would be daily watching to destroy us: a victory would be but a temporary relief to us; for the dethroning



of the first nabob would be followed by setting up another, who from the same principles, would, when his treasure admitted of keeping up an army, pursue the very path of his predecessor. We must indeed become nabobs ourselves in fact, if not in name;—perhaps totally so without disguise; but on this subject I cannot be certain until my arrival in Bengal.’ With such views of the bold and splendid measures which it was now time to pursue, and anticipating the important effects which those dazzling transactions would have on the price of the company’s stock;—this great man forgot not to deliberate how they might be directed so as to bear on his own pecuniary interests: he wrote on the very same day to his private agent in London as follows:—‘I have desired Mr. Rous to furnish you with a copy of my letter to him of this day’s date, likewise with the cipher, that you may be enabled to understand what follows: the contents are of so great importance, that I would not have them transpire. Whatever money I have in the public funds, or any where else, and as much as can be borrowed in my name, I desire may be, without loss of a minute, invested in East India stock: you will speak to my attorneys on this point: let them know I am anxious to have my money so disposed of, and press them to hasten the affair as much as possible.’ The letter to Mr. Rous, says Mr. Mill, and the short period which intervened between lord Clive’s arrival in Bengal and his assuming the dewanee, would leave no doubt that he commanded all the money which he possessed, or which he could borrow, to be invested in India stock, contemplating the rise of price which that measure was calculated to produce; had he not, when examined on the subject of this letter by the committee of the house of commons, declared absolutely, that he had not, while at Madras, formed the resolution to seize the dewanee.<sup>2</sup>

Early in May, and only four days after his arrival

<sup>2</sup> British India, vol. iii. pp. 332, 333.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

at Calcutta, lord Clive instituted the select committee, although two of its members were absent from the presidency, major Carnac with the army, and Mr. Verelst at a distant settlement: his plea was the corruption found to prevail in the government, of which he drew the most frightful picture: 'but I was determined,' says he, 'to do my duty to the public, although I should incur the odium of the whole settlement.' Mr. Mill very justly remarks,<sup>3</sup> that it was the interest of the committee to make out a strong case for their assumption of extraordinary powers; and that one would scarcely reckon four days an ample space for collecting a satisfactory body of evidence on so extensive a field: also that the language in which lord Clive describes the conduct of the company's servants ought to be received with caution, and doubtless with considerable deductions; though in the light of an historical document it is singularly curious and important: as such, it cannot be omitted with propriety in a detail of Indian transactions.

'On my arrival,' he tells the directors, 'I am sorry to say I found your affairs in a condition so nearly desperate, as would have alarmed any set of men, whose sense of honor and duty to their employers had not been estranged by the too eager pursuit of their own immediate advantages. The sudden, and among many, the unwarrantable acquisition of riches, had introduced luxury in every shape and in its most pernicious excess: these two enormous evils went hand in hand together through the whole presidency, infecting almost every member of each department: every inferior seemed to have grasped at wealth, that he might be enabled to assume that spirit of profusion, which was now the only distinction between him and his superior: thus all distinction ceased; and every rank became, in a manner, on an equality. Nor was this the end of the mischief; for a contest of such a nature among

<sup>3</sup> British India, vol. iii. pp. 351. 353.

our servants necessarily destroyed all proportion between their wants and the honest means of satisfying them. In a country where money is plentiful, where fear is the principle of government, and where your arms are ever victorious, it is no wonder that the lust of riches should readily embrace the proffered means of its gratification; or that the instruments of your power should avail themselves of their authority, and proceed even to extortion in those cases where simple corruption could not keep pace with their rapacity. Examples of this sort, set by superiors, could not fail of being followed in a proportionable degree by inferiors: the evil was contagious, and spread among the civil and military, down to the writer, the ensign, and the free merchant.' The language of the directors held pace with that of the governor: in their answer to the letter, from which this extract is taken, they say, —'We have the strongest sense of the deplorable state to which our affairs were on the point of being reduced, from the corruption and rapacity of our servants, and the universal depravity of manners throughout the settlement. The general relaxation of discipline and obedience, both military and civil, was hastily tending to a dissolution of all government. Our letter to the select committee expresses our sentiments of what has been obtained by way of donations; and to that we must add, that we think the vast fortunes acquired in the inland trade have been gained by a scene of the most tyrannic and oppressive conduct that ever was known in any age or country.'

That the delegation of extraordinary powers to some agent or other had become indispensable at this time there can be little doubt; for although the letters of the directors respecting trade and the extortion of presents, had been duly received previously to the arrangement made with Najim u Dowla;—not only had enormous gifts been exacted with unabated rapacity; but the unlimited exercise of inland trade, with an exemption from duties to

CHAP. IX. which others were subject, had been made a leading article in the treaty with the new subahdar.

1756-66.

Lord Clive's arrangement with the subahdar.

After settling some disputes at the presidency, and executing covenants respecting presents, according to the order of the directors, lord Clive set out on a progress up the country, for the double purpose of forming a new arrangement with the subahdar respecting the government of the province, and of concluding a treaty of peace with the nabob of Oude. As to the first, it was an easy task, where one party had only to command and the other to obey: the principal alterations made, were the addition of two associates to the office of naib subah, or guardian, held by Mahomed Rhiza Khan, for the superintendence of all state affairs; and the employment of an English president, whose vigilance might control the native powers, and preserve harmony: the subahdar himself was required to resign his whole revenue, and the management of it, to the company; receiving from them an annual payment of fifty lacs of rupees, subject however to the superintendence of the naib subah and his two associates. Before we proceed to the second object of the governor's journey, it will be necessary to give a concise account of the military operations which took place after the battle of Buxar, and the unsuccessful attack on the fortress of Chandageer.

Major Munro having been at this time recalled to England, the temporary command of the army devolved on Sir Robert Fletcher; who, being desirous of distinguishing himself, like his predecessors, resolved to attempt some arduous enterprise before the arrival of general Carnac, who had been appointed to supersede him: with this view he broke up his camp before Benares on the fourteenth of January, 1765, at midnight, and marched in quest of the enemy, who retired with precipitation before him: he then turned his attention to another attack on Chandageer; which, as it was made in the same manner as before, would probably have been equally unsuccessful, had not great discontent prevailed in

the garrison, in consequence of their having received no pay for the last six months. Three breaches being made in the walls, and the troops prepared for an assault, the soldiers within the fortress broke out into open mutiny, and obliged the governor to capitulate. That brave soldier, on delivering up the keys to Sir Robert, expressed with tears his extreme regret that he was unable to make a better defence. 'I have endeavored,' said he, 'to act like a soldier; but deserted by my prince, and threatened by a mutinous garrison, what could I do?' then laying his hand on the Koran, and pointing to the soldiers, he added;—'God and you are witnesses, that I yield through necessity; and that to the faith of the English I trust my life and fortune.'

The English commander now met with little resistance in the conquest of Allahabad, a large and strong city, near the confluence of the Jumna and the Ganges, which seemed to complete the ruin of Sujah Dowla. After this exploit, general Carnac, taking the command, made the best dispositions in his power for securing the late conquests, and for restoring order and government in the country. Sujah Dowla, during his negotiations with the English, had endeavored to obtain assistance from the Rohilla chiefs, and a body of Mahrattas, at that time under Mulhar Row, in the vicinity of Gwalior: the latter of these had in reality joined him, but the former only amused him with deceitful promises: he had also been abandoned by Sumroo, who with a body of about 300 Europeans and a few thousand sepoys, was negotiating for service with the Jaats. Determined however to make a last effort for the recovery of his power, he meditated a desperate attack on a separate division of the British army under Sir Robert Fletcher: but general Carnac having received timely notice of this intention, effected by forced marches a junction with that officer, and met the enemy on the third of May in the neighborhood of Corah. The nabob's troops, still intimidated by the remembrance of Buxar,

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

made but a slight resistance: the Mahrattas, on whom he chiefly depended, were soon dispersed by the English artillery, and fled with precipitation toward the Jumna, across which they were driven; and being then dislodged from their post on the opposite side, were finally obliged to retire into the mountains.

Surrender  
of Sujah  
Dowla.

In this desperate state of his affairs, Sujah Dowla took the only prudent step which was yet in his power; resolving to throw himself intirely on the generosity of his foes, and place his person in their hands: accordingly, on the nineteenth of May, he signified to the British commander that he was on his way to meet him. General Carnac received the fallen chief with every mark of distinction, and all parties recommended a delicate and liberal treatment; but the final adjustment of terms was reserved for the arrival of the governor.

Conditions  
of peace.

As it was found that the defence of Oude would cost the company more than its revenue was worth, and as lord Clive was instructed by the directors to conciliate the native powers by disclaiming all desire of conquest or extension of territorial possessions; it was determined to restore to the nabob the whole of his dominions, after reserving Corah and Allahabad for the Mogul emperor; and this, without occupying any of his strongholds, or imposing conditions which might irritate his high spirit, and imply a suspicion of his integrity. At the first conference, on the second of August, he expressed his gratitude for these advantageous terms, agreeing readily to pay fifty lacs of rupees on account of the expenses of the war, and engaging not to molest the rajah Bulwart Sing, an ally of the English, who held the zemindaries of Benares and Gauzeepore, dependent on the province of Oude.

Harder terms than these were imposed on the emperor, which called forth expressions of his resentment; but the humbled descendant of the great mogul was in no condition to contend with a company of British merchants. An income of twenty

lacs of rupees, formerly granted from the revenues of Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa, was continued to him, and he was put into possession of the two cities above mentioned; but all debts due to him from the revenue were cancelled, as well as the proceeds of a jaghire amounting to the annual sum of five lacs and a half. The most important article however in the treaty, was that which conferred on the company the dewanee of the three provinces, constituting it in reality sovereign of that large and fertile territory: together also with the dewanee, the emperor was required to confirm to the company all their possessions throughout the nominal extent of the Mogul empire. Amongst these confirmations, a jaghire belonging to lord Clive himself was not forgotten; the dispute about which he had compromised before his departure from England, by agreeing to yield its revenue to the company, after ten years' enjoyment, if he should live so long.<sup>4</sup> All expectations however that the riches of the company would increase in proportion to its acquisitions were soon found to be fallacious; for a clashing of interests existed between the directors in England and their functionaries in the east: the former were anxious to augment the commercial dividends by that territorial income which they now possessed; but their agents in India were bent on converting the surplus to their own advantage.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

On the seventh of September lord Clive resumed his seat in the select committee, whose interference was demanded by the pressing question of the inland trade. At a meeting on the seventeenth of October, it was resolved that some respect should be paid to the orders of the directors, by giving up the trade in tobacco, and other articles from which very little advantage was derived; while that profitable portion which included the beetel-nut and salt was retained for the exclusive profit of the company's agents: at the same time, the natives were liberated from the

<sup>4</sup> Mill's British India, vol. iii. p. 363.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

arbitrary injunctions which obliged them both to buy and to sell at prices fixed according to the will and pleasure of those functionaries. Some vague and ambiguous expressions in the company's letter of the first of June enabled their servants to give that interpretation to it which pleased them; and that which suited their own interests was naturally to be expected: even the governor himself and the members of the select committee<sup>5</sup> formed a partnership for buying up large quantities of salt, on which in the course of nine months they cleared a profit of forty-five per cent. For lord Clive an apology was made, that he engaged in this transaction for the purpose of advancing the fortunes of some gentlemen whom he had brought out with him to India: but, says Mr. Mill very justly, 'if a proceeding is in its own nature shameful, there is but little saved, when the emolument is only made to go into the pocket of a connexion.'<sup>6</sup> On the tenth of August, after these purchases had been for some time completed, it was resolved in the select committee, though two only of its members were present,<sup>7</sup> that a monopoly should be formed of the trade in salt, beetel-nut, and tobacco, to be carried on exclusively for the benefit of the company's superior servants; and a regular table of the shares apportioned to each functionary was drawn up; a duty being made payable to the company, which was expected to produce an income of £100,000 a year: agents also were appointed at different stations to make the contracts, and to sell out the goods to native merchants and retailers at fixed prices. In defence of this scheme, it was alleged, that by the late regulations of the company, and especially by the prohibition of presents, the pay of their servants was barely sufficient for their decent maintenance; and it was absurd to suppose that men in these circumstances, deprived of the means of enriching themselves by lawful means,

<sup>5</sup> With the exception of general Carnac, who was with the army.

<sup>6</sup> British India, vol. iii. p. 366. <sup>7</sup> Messrs. Sumner and Verelst.



would long abstain from those that were illegal. At this time however, it must be observed, the committee had not the shelter of an ambiguous expression; for the directors had, in clear and positive terms, prohibited such a trade, by a letter dated the fifteenth of February, 1765.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

Several measures for the company's advantage were at this period put into operation by the governor; but the reduction of military expenses, which were rapidly absorbing the whole revenue of the country, particularly engaged his attention. As long as the troops were employed by Mir Jaffier and Cossim Ali, these potentates, in order to cherish the good will of the officers, allowed them double pay; and at that time the directors had no motive for altering an arrangement, which gratified their servants, and was a burden only to the nabob. but when territorial assignments were allotted for the maintenance of troops, it was soon perceived that what could be withdrawn from them would be so much added to the company's resources; and repeated orders had been issued for stopping the double pay: the dangers of the country however rendered the services of the army so necessary, that the local government had not yet dared to put those orders into execution; but when peace was concluded with Sujah Dowla, the select committee thought the proper season had arrived for obeying injunctions on this point: accordingly the double pay was stopped; but as the order was issued and enforced without due preparation or care to watch its effects, a dangerous combination was set on foot to resist it; almost every officer in the army engaging to throw up his commission at a given time. Beside a solemn oath of secrecy, they bound themselves, by a similar obligation, to preserve the life of any officer condemned by a court martial, at the hazard of their own; and each individual executed a bond, under a penalty of £500, not to receive back his commission, without the restoration of double pay. To increase the danger, this conspiracy was

Conspiracy  
of officers  
suppressed  
by lord  
Clive.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

formed at a time when a force of more than 50,000 Mahrattas were hovering round the frontiers, in the neighborhood of Corah and Allahabad ; having been drawn thither at the instigation of the Mogul emperor, desirous of their assistance to regain possession of his ancient capital : he had exhausted every art of persuasion to induce the English to reinstate him there ; but this scheme of ambition did not suit their policy, and the presence of the Mahratta troops was by no means agreeable to them.

On occasions of great emergency, like the present, no man could be more fitted to act than lord Clive, whose political sagacity was only equalled by his undaunted courage and quick decision. When informed of the extent of this combination, he took the most prompt and vigorous steps to subdue it : directions were sent to the commanding officers of all the divisions, to find if possible the leaders ; to arrest those who appeared most dangerous ; and above all things, to secure the obedience of the sepoys and native commanders : letters were despatched to Calcutta and Madras, ordering the utmost exertions to be made for a supply of officers ; and the governor himself hastened toward Monghir. On the road he received a letter from colonel Smith, who commanded at Allahabad, informing him that the Mahrattas were in motion ; and that officer was instructed, that, if reduced to extremity, but not before, he might promise compliance with the demands which were made.

The disaffected officers, however, expecting no disclosure, had not concerted any ulterior plans ; nor had they seduced the soldiers from their allegiance : besides, the sepoys were steady, and the commanders of all the brigades felt confident of being able to put every European to death in case of open mutiny ; the appearance of which had been quickly suppressed by the sepoys at Monghir : so that the officers at this station submitted quietly to be sent down to Calcutta, and the greater part of those belonging to the other brigades retracted their adherence

to the conspiracy. Thus a combination, which, if it had been carried on with a longer view by the confederates, or met with less vigor and decision by the governor, might have caused a complete revolution in India, produced, by its ineffectual resistance, a more complete subjection on the part of the disaffected. Some of the offenders were allowed to resume their service, on profession of repentance; but others were tried by a court martial and cashiered: among the latter was Sir Robert Fletcher; who, though he had been one of the most active in subduing the conspiracy, was found to have known and encouraged its formation.

After the suppression of this dangerous plot, the governor proceeded to Choppah, where he was met by deputies from the Mahratta chiefs, by a minister from the emperor, and also by Sujah Dowla, who continued to express great satisfaction at his treaty with the company, and cheerfully advanced the remainder of the sum due to them according to the terms of it. The connexion between the shah and the Mahrattas was dissolved; and the formation of a league for mutual defence, including them, as well as the Jaat and Rohilla chiefs, was left to be conducted by Sujah Dowla.

During these transactions, the subahdar Najim u Dowla expired, a few days after the governor had left him at Moorshedabad. His brother, Syeff u Dowla, a youth of sixteen, was elevated to the vacant musnud; but a change in this nominal office was now considered much less important than the removal of a British resident.

On the return of lord Clive to the presidency, the affairs of private trade, so dear to individuals, still demanded his attention. The native merchants, to whom salt, so necessary an article in India, had been disposed of by the society, had retailed it at prices which the committee deemed highly extravagant: instead, however, of endeavoring to establish a freer competition, they took the easier method of fining the offenders to the extent of their profits, and

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

despotically ordering the commodity to be retailed in future at a fixed price. On the third of September, the business of this inland-trade society was arranged for another year, though the court of directors had declared it to be 'an express breach and violation of their orders,' and had directed that every offender should be sent to England, as guilty of a breach of covenant. The committee, however, proceeded to a renewal of the monopoly, as if the orders of the directors were not worth a moment's regard; lord Clive turning them carelessly aside, and observing, that when they were sent, 'the company could not have the least idea of that favorable change in the affairs of the provinces, whereby the interest of the nabob, with regard to salt, was no longer immediately concerned;' a remark, observes Mr. Mill, which merits attention, as a reason against lodging the government of India in hands at the distance of half the circumference of the globe: for the disobedience of servants to their employers, it was no justification at all; because, extended as far as it is applicable, it rendered the servants of the company independent, and constituted them masters of India.<sup>a</sup>

One important change was made in the regulations of the preceding year: the salt, instead of being conveyed into the interior, was to be sold at Calcutta, and the several places of manufacture; which saved the expense of transportation by the society's agents: a maximum price was also fixed: and no sooner was this arrangement completed, than a proposition of lord Clive was brought forward and passed by the committee, prohibiting any future president or governor from engaging in the concerns of trade; in lieu of which he was to be allowed a commission of one and one-eighth per cent. on the public revenues. Why the members of the select committee and council should not have been subjected to the same restrictions, it is difficult to conceive.

<sup>a</sup> British India, vol. iii. p. 380.

On the eighth of December, 1766, letters arrived from the court of directors, condemning the inland-trade society altogether, commanding its dissolution, and throwing open the trade to the natives, free from European competition. As there was no longer any plea for misconception, this order was obeyed; but on account of existing contracts, the dissolution of the society was deferred till September, 1768. On the sixteenth of January, 1767, lord Clive signified his intention of returning to England on account of his health; and as the abolition or confirmation of the select committee was left to his discretion, he declared for its continuance; naming as members Mr. Verelst, Mr. Cartier, colonel Smith, Mr. Sykes, and Mr. Beecher. He departed in the Britannia; and on the seventeenth of February Mr. Verelst succeeded him in the president's chair.

CHAP.  
IX.

1756-66.

Departure  
of lord  
Clive from  
India.

## CHAPTER X.

## GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1767.

Ministers defeated in a question regarding the land-tax—Parliamentary investigation of the affairs of the East India company—Bills relating to them brought in and passed—Question of supplies and the right of taxing America revived—Revenue bill, imposing duties on glass, tea, &c.—Bill for suspending the legislative assembly of New York—His majesty prorogues the parliament—Death of the duke of York, and birth of prince Edward—Death of Charles Townshend—Changes in the ministry, which takes the name of the Grafton administration—State of parties—Lord Townshend appointed lord lieutenant of Ireland—Meeting of parliament—High price of provisions—Measures regarding it—Adjournment—Expulsion of the jesuits from Spain; also from Naples, Sicily, and Parma—Origin of the measure—Danger and evils of the sudden abolition of the order—Affairs of Corsica—Parliament re-assembles—Supplies—East India company's act renewed—*Nullum tempus* bill—Arts used regarding the approaching election—Mayor and other members of the corporation of Oxford committed to Newgate—Parliament dissolved—Character of it—Proceedings in America in consequence of the revenue act.

Defeat of  
ministers.

AMONG the affairs that came before parliament this session, was one which seemed to forbode a dissolution of the ministry. The taxes laid on the necessities of life in consequence of the late war, were so grievously felt by the laboring and manufacturing classes, that it had been thought right to continue the land-tax at four shillings in the pound, rather than add to the distresses of the people by increasing those imposts which pressed more immediately on them: this was a new measure; for heretofore the practice had been, to take off, at the return of peace, any addition that had been made to the land-tax in time of war: but as this custom had been

discontinued for some years, the augmented land-tax began to be considered as a settled portion of the national revenue : to the surprise therefore and disappointment of ministers, a resolution now passed the house, supported by a considerable majority, reducing the land-tax for the present year to three shillings in the pound. In the language of the day, it was said, 'that the country gentlemen had bribed themselves with a shilling in the pound of their own land tax : ' but as this was the first money-bill in which any minister had been disappointed since the revolution, it was viewed as a fatal symptom of weakness in the administration.

CHAP.  
X.

1767.

The great business of the session was that of the East India company. We have already seen that a committee was appointed in November for investigating the nature of its charters, treaties, and grants ; and for calculating all the expenses, civil, naval, and military, which had been incurred on its account by government. In the course of this scrutiny, many important questions arose and were discussed : amongst others, the company's right to any territorial acquisition, as also to a monopoly of trade, was boldly questioned. Whilst it was argued on one side, that from the costly protection afforded to the company, government had an equitable claim to the revenues of all territory acquired by conquest ; it was denied, on the other, that the crown had made any reservation of this kind in its charters, which had been fairly purchased, and could not be violated with safety to the general rights of property and to public faith. The power of the house of commons also was questioned as an interpreter of the laws, or a decider of legal rights ; and as the chancellor of the exchequer's opinion leaned towards a denial of such power, he strongly recommended an amicable agreement to be made with the company : accordingly, a large party of proprietors, strenuous in supporting their claims, but equally disposed to prevent litigation, drew up proposals for an adjustment, which were agreed to by the directors ; but

East India  
question.

CHAP.  
X.

1767.

when these were exhibited to the ministers, their want of union and cordiality created fresh embarrassments : none would undertake the management of the business ; but they shifted the proposals from one to another, and would come to no determination, what to accept, or what to reject : wherefore, as a last resource, a petition was presented to parliament, containing two sets of proposals for a temporary agreement, to last three years.

The second of these appearing most reasonable to the house, a bill was founded on them, and a compromise effected, binding the company to pay to government the sum of £400,000, for two years, in half-yearly payments ; and to indemnify the nation, if any loss should be sustained, by reason of certain inland duties imposed, and some drawbacks granted at their request : but while the subject was under parliamentary discussion, a general court of proprietors had been held, at which the extraordinary step was taken of increasing the dividends to twelve and a half per cent., in consequence of anticipated advantages : as this was done against the express advice of ministers, who considered it a dangerous and delusive measure, calculated to create speculation in India stock and other securities, two bills were immediately brought into parliament ; one for regulating the qualifications of voters in trading companies ; the other for restraining the powers of the East India company in declaring dividends ; which not only rescinded their last resolution, but tied them down from raising any dividend above ten per cent. before the next meeting of parliament : this bill met with considerable opposition ; and the company, alarmed at such an encroachment on their privileges, petitioned the house to withdraw it ; in which case they engaged to bind themselves not to raise their dividends above ten per cent. during the two years following. Their petition however and proposal were equally ineffectual : the bill was carried in spite of a powerful opposition ; one of the secretaries of state and the chancellor of the exchequer being left in a minority in the house of com-



mons, whilst a long argumentative protest was signed against it by nineteen of the peers. CHAP. X.

Among various expedients proposed by the chancellor of the exchequer this year for raising the supplies, which amounted to about £8,500,000, was one which tended to revive the question regarding the right of the British parliament to tax America. The unfixed and vacillating principles of Mr. Charles Townshend had led him to advocate the stamp-act in 1765, and to approve of its repeal in the following year.<sup>1</sup> The very next session, when the repeal began to be in as bad odor as the act itself had been, and when a conformity with the general sentiment on this subject was sure to be relished in the highest quarters; he declared his opinion that a revenue ought to be extracted from America. ‘Instantly,’ says Mr. Burke, ‘he was tied down to his engagements; and the whole body of courtiers drove him onward.’<sup>2</sup> The scheme proposed was to lay certain duties on glass, tea, paper, and painters’ colors, imported from Great Britain into America;—a very unfortunate one at this particular time, when the ill humor caused by previous interference with the colonies was far from being allayed. The bill met with little opposition in the British legislature; but it was considered by the Americans as a deceptive measure, similar in its object to the stamp-act; and it tended to revive a question which ought to have been studiously consigned to oblivion. 1767. American taxation.

This imprudent act was followed by one more justifiable with reference to the assembly of New York, which had refused to comply with the statute requiring a grant of additional rations to the troops stationed in that province. The refractory disposition shown on this occasion by the colonists made it evident that their intention was to deny the jurisdiction of England altogether; so that when the

<sup>1</sup> He was prevented from voting by illness.

<sup>2</sup> ‘I will not,’ says Mr. Nicholls, ‘use so strong an expression as to say that he was treacherous to this administration; but he certainly saw that the earl of Chatham’s greatness was on the decline; and that he should most readily increase his own importance by acquiescing in the wishes of the king.’—*Recollections*, vol. i. page 27.

CHAP. matter came before the house, it occasioned several  
 X. warm debates, with proposals for the adoption of  
 1767. rigorous measures to subdue this rebellious spirit. The general opinion however appeared to be, that they should be brought to a sense of duty by firm but moderate proceedings; and a bill was passed, to suspend the legislative power of the assembly until it should comply with the terms of the requisition.

On the second of July his majesty prorogued parliament with a speech, in which he observed, that his particular acknowledgements were due to the commons for the liberal provision they had made for his family; alluding to three annuities of £8000 each, which had been settled on his brothers, the dukes of York, Gloucester, and Cumberland, in addition to what they received from the civil list. It was remarkable, that on the second reading of this bill in the house of lords, a protest was entered against it, with the solitary signature of lord Temple. The duke of York, whose affable manners and generous disposition had endeared him to all ranks of people, unfortunately lived but a short time to enjoy this liberality of parliament: he died on his travels at Monaco on the seventeenth of November; and on the very day when his remains, which had been brought over to England, were interred in Henry VII.'s chapel, her majesty was safely delivered of her fourth son, prince Edward.

Ministerial  
 changes.

During the recess another event occurred, which appeared to threaten a total overthrow of the tottering cabinet, now no longer benefited by the advice, or supported by the popularity of lord Chatham. Charles Townshend, 'that prodigy,' as Mr. Burke denominated him, who was expected to surpass even the earl of Chatham in parliamentary eloquence, expired on the fourth of September; prevented only by his premature death from forming a new administration which he was then projecting, and from being handed down to posterity as the author of the American war. Soon afterwards several necessary changes took place among the great

officers of state. On the first of December, lord North became chancellor of the exchequer, and Mr. T. Townshend succeeded him as paymaster of the forces. The Bedford party having been gained over, earl Gower accepted the president's chair, which was resigned to him by lord Northington: lord Weymouth was soon after nominated secretary for the northern department, in room of general Conway; and the earl of Hillsborough was appointed to the new office of secretary of state for the colonies: Mr. Charles Jenkinson also at this time made his entrance into public life as a lord of the treasury: during a long portion of his political career he was unpopular, on account of a generally-received opinion, countenanced by Mr. Burke, that he was the secret adviser of his sovereign, or leader of the king's friends: but he outlived this unpopularity, and became esteemed in parliament as a very respectable debater, a skilful politician, and an able expositor of international law. The ministry, thus remodelled, took the name of its leader, the duke of Grafton; 'a submissive administration,' as Junius calls it, 'gradually collected from deserters of all parties, interests, and connexions.' Inefficient, and without character, it began its inauspicious career with a failing revenue; with convulsions in the whole mercantile system; with a populace at home prepared for the most violent excesses; and with the colonists already in an uproar, disputing the rights of the mother country, and defying her authority. Two parties in opposition were ready to seize every opportunity of attack; the one headed by the cool and cautious Grenville, the other led on and inspired by the vivid eloquence of Burke: differing among themselves on most points of policy, they were only kept together by their hostility to the feeble, fluctuating cabinet, whose overthrow they meditated. Without admitting the truth of those scurrilous charges and virulent invectives so unsparingly put forth against the duke of Grafton, it may be affirmed, that neither by force of moral

CHAP.  
X.

1767.

character, nor depth of political wisdom, was he qualified to take the reins of government in such trying circumstances: in fact, he became minister almost by accident; nor did he ever possess the confidence either of the sovereign or the people.

: On the twentieth of October, viscount Townshend, who had been appointed to the high office of lord lieutenant of Ireland, met the parliament of that country; and his speech appeared to give great satisfaction to its members. In their addresses to the king, they acknowledged his goodness in sending a chief governor so well qualified to represent his majesty in that assembly; and to his lordship himself they expressed the most flattering assurances of confidence in the appointment of a nobleman, who, being descended from ancestors distinguished by their inviolable attachment to the cause of liberty, and its great support, the succession of the house of Hanover, inherited the same principles, and steadily adhered to the same sentiments.

Meeting of  
parliament.

When the British parliament met on the twenty-fourth of November, the principal point recommended to its attention from the throne was the relief of the people from the distress still existing on account of the high price of provisions; and general Conway concluded his speech in support of an address of thanks, with a warm eulogy on the late chancellor of the exchequer, whose fertility in resources and soundness of judgment were particularly to be regretted in this juncture of affairs. 'His much lamented friend,' he said, 'had engaged to prepare a plan for the effectual relief of the poor in the article of provisions; and he had no doubt, if that great man had lived, but he would have been able to perform his promise: unfortunately for the public, his plan was lost with him; and though it was easy to find a successor to his place, it was impossible to find a successor to his abilities, or one equal to the execution of his designs.' Petitions from the city of London and other places were received on this subject; all the provision bills of

last session, with regard to importation and exportation, were continued, and some of them amended: a new bill also was brought in for the importation of wheat and flour from America. With the exception of these expedients for lowering the price of food, very little business of importance was transacted; and on the twenty-first of December the house of lords adjourned to the twentieth, and the commons to the fourteenth of January.

CHAP.  
X.

---

1767.

The principal event which occurred on the continent was the expulsion of the jesuits from Spain. This order of men, which had so long ruled the cabinets and guided the consciences of monarchs; which had been the principal support of the papal authority, and had extended its influence into every quarter of the globe, now saw its ruin approaching. The marquis Pombal struck the first blow at its power even in the place where it seemed most firmly established: but though discarded from Portugal and France, it still lingered in Spain: yet in the early part of the present year the cabinet of Madrid took the resolution of precipitating its downfall. The real motives for this expulsion were not declared; since the king, in his decree of banishment, spoke only in general terms of keeping his people in a state of due subordination, tranquillity, and justice; though he professed other just, urgent, and necessary causes, which he kept within his own breast: the secrecy however with which this stroke of state policy was prepared and executed, is very remarkable. The measure being once resolved on by the king, the conde d'Aranda and three other confidants were commissioned to concert the means of carrying it into effect: they met for this purpose in an old ruined house, at a distance from every other habitation; and the manner of the affair being settled, his majesty and the count took on themselves the execution of it. The orders to be sent into the four quarters of the world were all minuted, transcribed, and despatched by d'Aranda, signed by the king, and countersigned by himself as president

Expulsion  
of jesuits  
from Spain,  
Naples, &c.

CHAP.

X.

1767.

of the council of Castile ; so that, notwithstanding their extensive correspondence, connexions, and usual means of good intelligence, every member of the fraternity was surprised in his bed, without the least time to avert the danger, or the slightest warning of the impending blow.

Between eleven and twelve at night, the six different houses of jesuits in Madrid were surrounded by large detachments of troops ; who, having procured means of entrance, secured the bells, and placed a sentry at the door of each cell : the brethren were then ordered to rise ; and being assembled, they were made acquainted with the king's orders, and assisted in packing up such things as might be necessary for their voyage : in the mean time, all the hired coaches and chaises in the city, as well as several waggons, had been secured and distributed in proper places ; so that they began their journey to Carthagená very early in the morning, escorted by a numerous guard ; and all this was effected without the least noise or disturbance ; the inhabitants of Madrid being in their beds, and knowing nothing of the matter till next morning. On the third day following, the jesuits' college at Barcelona was invested by the civil and military powers ; its members were sent off guarded for transportation, like those at Madrid ; and their effects seized and sealed up : the same measures were put into execution at the same hour in every part of Spain : the strictest watch was kept at all the sea-ports, to prevent any of the fraternity from escaping in disguise to the Spanish Indies ; and ships having been provided, the prisoners were, by different embarkations, conveyed to Italy ; after which the king published a royal ordinance, for the expulsion of the order.

The news of this event was received at Rome with the greatest astonishment ; and before it could in any degree subside, fourteen transports, convoyed by three Spanish men of war, arrived at Civita Vecchia, with 970 brethren on board ; but were

not permitted to land them : his holiness rightly observed, that if all the catholic states should think proper to expatriate their jesuits, and consign them to his disposal ; not only the states of the church, but all Italy would be too small to support its new inhabitants.

In the mean time, the convoy, after lying some time in harbor, was ordered to proceed to Corsica, where it was detained, until it was joined by three other convoys, which had taken the same route from different parts of Spain : during three months the brethren had been closely kept in crowded vessels, in the hottest season of the year ; men of all ages, unaccustomed to hardships, with constitutions impaired by sedentary habits, afflicted also by grief, anxiety, and horror on account of this cruel separation from their native land and all human ties that are dear to mankind. The consequences were what might have been expected : they died in great numbers and great misery ; but at length, when arrangements were completed with the republic of Genoa for their reception, the transports were disburdened of their unhappy freight, and the survivors landed, to the number of about 2300.

As if to complete the sum of their misfortunes, the parliament of Paris at this time published an *arrêt* against them, in which they were declared enemies to sovereigns and to the public tranquillity of states ; while all who had been indulged with the liberty of staying in the kingdom by the edict of November, 1764, were ordered to quit it for ever in fifteen days, under pain of criminal prosecution. Besides, the Spanish monarch's orders were executed in the colonies as they had been at home : 700 were suddenly arrested in Mexico alone, and secured till ships could be provided ; so that cargoes of these miserable men were continually arriving in the ports of Spain. In the mean time, most of the catholic powers had published edicts, to forbid, under severe penalties, the reception of the expelled jesuits in any part of their dominions ; so that there

CHAP. is scarcely an instance in history of any body of  
X. men so intirely cut off and separated from the rest  
of mankind.

1767.

When affairs were settled in Spain, the storm, which had been for some time expected, fell on the order in Naples and Sicily; where they were suddenly seized, and their effects confiscated: the prisoners, in this case, without ceremony, or leave being asked, were conveyed into the pope's dominions; the vicinity of which made every plan of opposition useless. His holiness indeed complained bitterly of the outrage, and presented memorials to all the foreign ministers resident at Rome; but these produced the same effect which the remonstrances of weak princes made to their powerful neighbors generally produce: they were carelessly answered, and no farther notice was taken of them. To increase the evil, there were at this time 800 of the Portuguese jesuits still alive at Rome, where a scarcity of corn had for some years existed; and it was only with great care and difficulty that the horrors of a famine could be warded off: the present inundation from Naples brought 1500 additional mouths, exclusive of those that were transported from Sicily. Parma soon followed the example set her, and expelled the jesuits from her dominions: but the vengeance of the princes, whose resentment they had provoked by their conspiracies, or whose cupidity they had excited by their wealth, was not satisfied: the most urgent applications for the intire abolition of the society were made to pope Clement XIII. who, in consequence of his refusal, involved himself in disputes which terminated only with his life. In 1773 the order was suppressed by Clement XIV. who is said to have been raised to the papacy for that express purpose; yet even Ganganelli, who for his liberal opinions was called the protestant pope, at first hesitated to annihilate a society which he knew not how to condemn: but times were changed; and the successor of those pontiffs who trampled on the neck of kings, was now obliged to bow in turn to



the monarchs of his own communion. In fact, he dreaded a schism; and sacrificed his army of the faith to preserve his empire.

CHAP.  
X.

1767.

Origin of  
the mea-  
sure.

The measure thus effectually accomplished is said to have owed its origin to M. de Choiseul, who was disposed to it, no less by the liberal opinions which he had imbibed in the school of French philosophy, than by political considerations. The jesuits, who at first had been with difficulty admitted into France, were impatiently endured there by all to whom they were not confessors. When we think of the direction they gave to their opinions, of the abuse they made of their credit, and of their remorseless disposition, we cannot be surprised that they were objects of general dislike to the people, and especially to the parliament, which had the merit of constantly repelling the attempts of the court of Rome, against the liberties of the French church and the rights of the nation; whilst it was scarcely possible for ministers not to conceive a deadly aversion to an ambitious, meddling society, which had so often affected their credit with the prince, and destroyed in the confessional what had been resolved on in the cabinet. No one felt this aversion to the jesuits more strongly than M. de Choiseul: he had been ambassador at Rome; and in a conversation there with the general of the order, was not a little surprised, on learning, that his own opinions respecting them, expressed in society at Paris, were perfectly well known. 'We know every thing,' said father Ricci to him, with more *naïveté* than prudence; 'we know perfectly well our friends and our enemies; and we have powerful means of discovering what it is interesting for us to know.' From this time, M. de Choiseul sought the means of rooting out so dangerous an evil from the state; and most men in France were inclined to second him, except the indolent and voluptuous Louis XV.; because he feared their importunities less than the trouble he must take to get rid of them.

In the mean time, the bankruptcy of R. P. Lava-

CHAP.  
X.

1767.

lette took place, who was chief of the missions to Martinique ; when it was found that all the property of the society was administered by a general committee for the common interest, which was accordingly condemned to reimburse the creditors : and this suit gave an opportunity of inspecting the society's statutes to the parliament, who became alarmed at the power over the French people, which was placed in the hands of a monk at Rome, and which extended its despotism over every catholic country. A common clamor was raised against an institution so dangerous, and the most opposite parties united for its destruction ; but all their exertions would probably have been in vain, had they not been strengthened by the mere will of a woman.

The marchioness de Pompadour, who had been raised by her beauty to the highest pitch of grandeur, sought to maintain a reputation in society ; for which reason she solicited an appointment as lady of honor to the queen ; and to obtain this from so pious a princess as Maria Leczinski, she not only feigned that all intimacy was broken off between the king and herself, but took the habit of a monastic order, and gave herself up to practices of the most austere devotion. To complete the delusion, she resolved to take a confessor ; and as the direction of court consciences at this period belonged to the jesuits, she selected father de Sacy as her spiritual counsellor : he however was not like a father la Chaise, or le Tellier : he did not understand compromises and capitulations of conscience ; but looking on the affair in a serious point of view, he required that his fair penitent should quit the court which she intended to edify, and recommended the example of la Vallière to one who would rather have emulated the part of Madame du Maintenon. In vain he was requested to be less rigid : he remained obstinate, and declared it was on such terms only that he could guide the marchioness in the way of safety. She then abandoned the jesuit, and confessed herself to a *Récollet*, who willingly gave her unconditional

absolution : but she retained a most rancorous hatred, not only against father de Sacy, but the whole fraternity of Ignatius, which the good man had unluckily compromised, by calling in their authority to support and justify his rigor in this delicate affair. From that moment the ruin of the jesuits was sealed : in France they had been suppressed in 1764 ; and the marchioness died the same year. This important measure was not executed in Spain till three years after : but there, as elsewhere, the influence of the jesuits had been felt in all public affairs ; and projects most prejudicial to the honor and rights of the reigning monarch were imputed to the general of their order. Whether this accusation was well founded or not, Charles III. was not less disposed to follow the example which had been set him, almost involuntarily, by Louis XV. ; nor, in all probability, was that prospect of wealth, to be acquired by the confiscation of their immense property, a slight inducement to the sovereigns who then sat on the thrones of Spain and the two Sicilies. In Mexico alone the sum thus raised was computed at 385,000,000 French livres ; that in Peru and the southern provinces of the Spanish West Indies being still larger.<sup>3</sup>

Whatever may have been the faults, errors, and vices of this fraternity, it is impossible not to compassionate the lot of individuals, and the misery of so many men, who on account of their age and services were worthy of regard, and were struck by a blow as terrible as it was unexpected. To have reformed a society, like that of the jesuits, which included in it so much talent and industry, might have been practicable, and would have been safe : but to dissolve it suddenly, when those religious ties, which are found to be the great safeguards of government, were much relaxed, tended to give spirit and encouragement to men who aimed at overturning all government in church or state ; and

<sup>3</sup> See Annual Register for 1767, p.

CHAP. without doubt hastened that grand catastrophe which  
 X. soon followed. The effect must indeed have been  
 1767. strongly felt in France ; which, according to the  
 accounts of all who visited that country at this  
 period, was in a state of dreadful demoralisation ;  
 and where, under the plea of destroying popery, the  
 subversion of every thing that is sacred was medi-  
 tated.<sup>4</sup>

Affairs of  
 Corsica.

It was not however likely that the libertine Louis XV. would see this danger ; and his minister Choiseul was so intent on schemes of conquest and augmentation of territory, that nothing but an exhausted treasury prevented him from throwing the whole of Europe into confusion. Restrained from attempting more extensive operations, he had seized on the pope's possessions at Avignon, under pretence of forcing him to issue his bull to suppress the jesuits ; and feigning offence at the introduction of those exiles into Corsica, he contrived to embroil that country, and then to purchase it for the French government from the Genoese. This measure was expected to produce much opposition from the European courts ; but Choiseul by his representations induced the British cabinet to abstain from opposing the transfer ; while Sardinia, the only other power particularly interested in the transaction, was too weak to counteract the designs of France.

The Corsicans, when informed of this sale of themselves and their country, held a general meeting, and swore to defend their liberties to the last gasp : the detail of skirmishes and pitched battles between their brave troops and the French, long engaged the attention of Europe, without drawing to them any succors : so that, after a gallant resistance, they were at length defeated, and the brave Paoli was obliged to seek his safety by flight : but the whole island was not completely subdued till 1769, when it was finally incorporated into the

<sup>4</sup> See Lord Orford's Works, vol. v. page 221 : also two curious letters in Ellis's Original Correspondence, second series, vol. iv. page 484.

dominions of Louis XV.; its ecclesiastical affairs being subjected to the jurisdiction of the Gallican church.

CHAP.  
X.

1767.

When parliament reassembled after the holidays, the principal objects of its attention were the supplies to be granted to his majesty; since the land-tax, and the malt and cider duties only were settled before the recess. The estimate for the whole exceeded £8,000,000: in addition therefore to the former resources, and the annual payment from the India company, a loan of £1,900,000 was found necessary; of which £600,000 were to be raised by a lottery, and the remainder by redeemable annuities at three per cent. The interest of this new loan was charged on the sinking fund, out of which £2,500,000 were also to be issued for the service of the current year, besides £1,800,000 to be raised by exchequer bills, chargeable on the first aids of next session.

The act for restraining the East India company from augmenting their dividend, being expired, was now renewed for the ensuing year. The company presented a strong remonstrance against this exercise of authority, claiming exemption not only as a chartered body, but as British subjects, from interference, which, if made a precedent, might affect all public and private property in the nation: but the bill passed both houses with a large majority.

The ministry however were more closely run, when Sir G. Savile, a distinguished member of opposition, made a motion for introducing into the commons a bill to settle and secure the possessions of the subject from all obsolete claims, especially those of the crown; against which, according to an old maxim of the law, no length of time could plead prescription: hence this measure took the appellation of the *Nullum tempus* bill;<sup>5</sup> its object being to make sixty years' possession a bar against all claims

<sup>5</sup> From the old maxim, *nullum tempus occurrit regi*, or, 'no time is a bar to the claims of the crown.'

CHAP.  
X.

1767.

whatsoever. It originated in a litigation between the families of Bentinck and Lowther, the former of whom had now held the honor of Penrith in Cumberland, with its appurtenances, as a grant from king William III., about seventy years; and, together with this, the forest of Inglewood, and the soccage of Carlisle castle, included under the same tenure, though not specially named in the instrument. The omission was supposed to be a mere stroke of policy in the monarch, who was unwilling to excite jealousy by too large a specification of terms in his grant to a favorite and a foreigner: nevertheless, Sir James Lowther, being aware of the omission, applied to the lords of the treasury for a lease of the premises in question, on such conditions as might be thought proper; which he obtained, owing to the surveyor-general's report, that the said premises were not conveyed by the grant from king William to the first earl of Portland, but were still invested in the crown. During the debates which ensued, it was argued, on the ministerial side of the question, that, the right being in the crown, the assertion of it was not more unfair than in the case of a private individual: that the resumption of many such grants would be not only equitable, but useful in alleviating the burdens of the public: that the founder of the Portland family and his successors had been sufficiently remunerated for services performed; and that after the enjoyment of an estate, to which they had no claim, for seventy years, they might contentedly resign it to the real owner; especially as no demand would be made for arrears. The duke of Portland's friends, on the other side, asserted that the original grant comprised, in its general terms, the premises now contended for; or if not, that length of possession ought, as in the case of private persons, to be a bar against all questions of title. The unpopularity, tyranny, and danger of a resumption by the crown were strongly urged: and the revival of this dormant prerogative appeared so alarming, that it was with great difficulty, and with

a majority of only twenty, that ministers could obtain a postponement of the bill to the ensuing session. The clamor against them out of doors was greater than within: Sir James Lowther was son-in-law of lord Bute, and a strong partisan of ministers: the favor shown to him appeared so evidently tending to electioneering purposes, and originating in party views, that Junius himself had fair grounds for asserting 'that they had hoarded up those unmeaning powers of the crown, as a grand military magazine, towards breaking the fortunes and depressing the spirit of the nobility; for drawing the common people from their reliance on the natural interests of the country, to an immediate dependence on the crown; and principally for enabling ministers, public or secret, to domineer and give the law in future elections.'<sup>6</sup> Of all the faults which a statesman can commit, there is perhaps no one more destructive to his own power, than that of conferring the favors and patronage of the crown on unworthy persons, or making them serve unworthy purposes: yet from the history of cabinets, one would suppose that the reverse of this was held to be true.

CHAP.  
X.

1767.

As it was certain that a dissolution of the present parliament would take place at the end of this session, great efforts were made to obtain influence at the approaching general election: all the engines of corruption were set in motion; advertisements even appeared in the public papers, offering premiums for a seat in the house of commons; and the mayor, bailiffs, and principal members of the corporation of Oxford went so far as to demand from their representatives, Sir T. Stapleton and Mr. Lee, a sum of money for their re-election, in order to pay off an

Mayor and  
corporation  
of Oxford  
imprisoned.

<sup>6</sup> Woodfall's Junius, vol. iii. page 16. Mr. Adolphus confesses 'that it is obvious there was a disposition in the ministry to gratify Sir James Lowther at the expense of the duke of Portland; and in that view the transaction was not honorable either to the ministry, or to the person preferred.' Sir James Lowther derived but little advantage from the delay obtained through the majority, as the grant was reversed by the court of exchequer, in November, 1771; the reserved rent, on which he obtained the lease from the crown, being less than one third of the clear annual value of the estate, contrary to a statute in the first year of queen Anne.

CHAP. encumbrance which lay heavy on the city. This  
 X. demand being made during the session, the sitting  
 1767. members very properly laid the letter before the  
 house; when the magistrates who had signed it,  
 being ordered to appear at the bar, were committed  
 to Newgate. After some days, a petition was pre-  
 sented from the offending parties, acknowledging their  
 guilt, and expressing deep contrition; when, as it  
 appeared they had not been actuated by selfish  
 motives of private gain, they were again brought to  
 the bar, and discharged, after receiving on their  
 knees a severe reprimand from the speaker.

Dissolution  
 of parlia-  
 ment.

When the supplies and some private bills were  
 passed, the king put an end to the session: in his  
 speech he thanked parliament for their signal proofs  
 of affectionate attachment to his person, family, and  
 government; their faithful attention to the public  
 service, and zeal for the preservation of our excellent  
 constitution: nor did he forget to express confi-  
 dence, that in the approaching elections, his people  
 would give fresh proofs of their attachment to the  
 true interests of their country, which he should re-  
 ceive as the most acceptable mark of their affection  
 to himself. Two days afterwards, on the twelfth of  
 March, the fiat of dissolution went forth, and an  
 end was put to the first parliament of George III.  
 With regard to its character, it cannot be said to  
 have exhibited any remarkable traits of legislative  
 wisdom, if we except the treaty of Paris in 1763:  
 but this will not surprise us, when we consider the  
 rapid changes of loosely-formed administrations,  
 which during its continuance left England with little  
 more than the name of a government: the principal  
 objects that occupied its attention, were the prose-  
 cution of individuals, and the regulation of our trans-  
 atlantic provinces: in the one case, passion seems  
 to have predominated over cool policy; in the other,  
 a succession of irritating and conciliating measures  
 created in the colonists a permanent dissatisfaction  
 and ill-will toward the parent state. But though  
 the policy of this national assembly, in the aggre-



gate, was either inefficient or hurtful, it exhibited many instances of individual talent; particularly among the peers, where a mature and well-sustained eloquence was conspicuous. In the house of commons, its ablest orators had not yet reached that height of excellence, at which many of them were destined to arrive: after the fiery spirit of Charles Townshend was extinguished, few specimens of vivid eloquence were heard within its walls; for Burke had scarcely plumed the wing, with which he afterwards soared so high above the crowd; and though the contest of the political arena was kept up with vigor and effect, few triumphs were won on the ground of that political wisdom, which, while it delights the present age, enlightens and instructs posterity.

CHAP.  
X.

1768.

In America, the new revenue act, imposing duties on various articles of merchandise, excited great resentment; and the obvious marks of weak and wavering policy in the British government encouraged resistance: the legality of such a measure had been conceded, when it was found necessary to oppose the obnoxious stamp act; but after this was repealed, the Americans would no longer acknowledge that distinction between external and internal taxation, on which at first they grounded their claim for relief: their presses teemed with invectives against the British legislature, which was represented as pledged to reduce the colonies to an abject state of distress and slavery.

Proceed-  
ings in A-  
merica.

The province of Massachusetts-bay, which by its situation was most likely to suffer from any acts affecting commerce, took the lead in opposing the measures of government. The first congress had done irreparable injury to British interests, by uniting the provinces in a common cause, and enabling the turbulent and rebellious to express their sentiments, and paralyse the exertions of timid and loyal subjects. The fierce republicans of New England soon engaged in such a system as impelled the other colonies again to join them in resisting the

CHAP.

X.

1768.

mother country. On the twenty-seventh of October, 1767, when intelligence of the new act arrived at Boston, the inhabitants assembled in their town-hall, and formed associations for encouraging home manufactures, discountenancing luxuries of every description, and discontinuing the importation of all articles from Great Britain, except such as were absolutely necessary. In the first session of their legislative assembly they took the most effectual means to make their opinions known in England, and draw the attention of other colonies to the subject. On the twelfth of January, 1768, the house sent a letter of instructions to Mr. De Berdt, their agent in London, containing an elaborate vindication of their rights, and discovering a familiar acquaintance with the principles of government, especially those of the British constitution: the whole argument against colonial taxation was therein clearly stated; the identity of object between the rescinded stamp act and Mr. Charles Townshend's new law, was forcibly laid down; and he was ordered to controvert the obnoxious measure on every ground of right and policy. This document adverted also to the appropriation of the revenue intended to be thus unconstitutionally raised: in the first place, it stated, that a support for governors and judges, in those colonies where it should be thought necessary, was to be thence supplied: now it had long been a subject of apprehension with the assembly, that they should be deprived of all check on those public functionaries, by these latter being rendered independent of the people: 'this house,' it was observed, 'apprehends that it would be grievous, and of dangerous tendency, if the crown should not only appoint governors over the colonies, but allow them such stipends as it shall judge proper, at the expense of the people, and without their control.' And although they could not have questioned the benefits of an independent judicial establishment, yet they remarked, 'that if the judges of England have independent salaries, it must be remembered, that the

tenure of their commission is, 'during good behavior;' which is a safeguard to the people.' In the next place, the revenue was to be 'applied by parliament from time to time in defending and securing the colonies;' in other words, appropriated to the support of a standing army, against which the following remonstrance was inserted:—'As Englishmen and British subjects, we have an aversion to an unnecessary standing army, which we reckon dangerous to our civil liberties: and considering the examples of ancient times, it seems a little surprising that a mother state should trust large bodies of mercenary troops in her colonies, at so great a distance from her; lest in process of time, when the spirits of the people shall be depressed by the military power, another Cæsar should arise, and usurp the authority of his master.'

The house likewise addressed a petition to the king; and sent letters, signed by their speaker, to the marquis of Rockingham, the earl of Chatham, lord Camden, and the commissioners of the treasury, containing a similar statement of their rights and grievances, and soliciting the assistance of those officers and noblemen in their application for relief. At home they attempted to re-organise the confederacy which had been adopted so successfully against the stamp act; and a circular letter was sent in the name of the house to the other provincial assemblies, informing them of the measures already taken: but being aware that considerable differences of opinion prevailed between some of the colonies and themselves, they cautiously endeavored to avoid all occasion of misunderstanding or jealousy; concluding their letter with an appeal to the generous and liberal spirit of the different legislatures; assuring them that the communication proceeded from no ambition of taking the lead or of dictating to others; and freely submitting their opinions and acts to the judgment of those whom they addressed. This show of candor and moderation had the effect of quieting

CHAP. suspicion, and making many of the assemblies firm  
X. adherents to their cause.

1768.

In the mean time a violent altercation took place between governor Bernard and the assembly, in consequence of a letter addressed to the former by lord Shelburne, which was read in the house, highly approving his conduct in refusing to nominate the members of council, and casting severe reproaches on the spirit shown by the legislature. Anxious to obtain this document, as a means of inflaming the public mind, the house, by publishing in the newspapers such passages as could be collected, with severe comments on them, goaded the governor into a communication of the original, which was sent with a short indignant message, and entered on the journals: the assembly then wrote to lord Shelburne, animadverting on it, as well as on the proceedings of Sir Francis Bernard, with great asperity; and having displayed a strong disposition to encourage libels and inflammatory letters out of the house, the governor prorogued them, on the fourth of March, after severely reprobating their conduct, and vindicating his own character.

This fresh attempt of the assembly of Massachusetts to raise a confederacy against the authority of parliament excited strong indignation in the ministry. Lord Hillsborough, the new secretary of state, wrote to the governor, expressing high displeasure against those who had endeavored to revive the unhappy dissensions which had been so injurious to the interests of both countries: but to afford the assembly an opportunity of rescinding the vote which gave rise to their obnoxious circular, he chose to consider it as obtained by surprise, and contrary to the real sense of the majority: Sir Francis however was instructed, if they should obstinately decline to rescind their resolutions, to dissolve the assembly, and send an account of proceedings, to be laid before parliament.

This requisition was communicated to the assem-

bly, when they met on the thirty-first of May; and the house, after several attempts at evasion, replied at last, by justifying the spirit and language of their circular, and declaring, that, as it had been sent and answered by several of the provincial assemblies, the vote had been already executed, and could not be rescinded: 'but if,' said they, 'as is most probable, by the word 'rescinding,' be intended the passing a vote of this house, in direct and express disapprobation of the measure, as 'illegal, inflammatory, and tending to provoke unjustifiable combination against his majesty's peace, crown, and dignity,' we must take the liberty to testify, and publicly to declare, that we consider it to be the native, inherent, and indefeasible right of subjects, jointly or severally, to petition the king for redress of grievances; provided always that the same be done in a decent, dutiful, and constitutional way, without tumult, disorder, or confusion.' The conclusion of this determined and uncompromising answer was as follows:—

'We take this opportunity faithfully to represent to your excellency, that the new revenue acts and measures are not only disagreeable, but in every view are deemed an insupportable burden and grievance, with very few exceptions, by all the freeholders and other inhabitants of this jurisdiction: and we beg leave, once for all, to assure your excellency, that those of this opinion are no 'party or expiring faction:' they have at all times been ready to devote their time and fortunes to his majesty's service. Of loyalty, this majority could as reasonably boast as any who may happen to enjoy your excellency's smiles: their reputation, rank, and fortune are at least equal to those who may have sometimes been considered as the only friends to good government; while some, of the best blood in the colony, even in the two houses of assembly lawfully convened and duly acting, have been openly charged with the unpardonable crime of oppugnation against the royal authority. We have now only to

CHAP.  
X.

1768.

inform your excellency, that this house has voted not to rescind, as required, the resolution of the last house; and that in a division on the question, there were ninety-two nays and seventeen yeas. In all this we have been actuated by a conscientious, and finally by a clear and determined sense of duty to God, to our king, our country, and our latest posterity; and we most ardently wish and humbly pray, that in your future conduct, your excellency may be influenced by the same principles.<sup>7</sup>

On the first of July, the day after this message was sent, the governor dissolved the assembly, but not before they had written a letter of great length, and to the same import, which was sent to lord Hillsborough: the province was left for the remainder of the year without a legislature; but opposition was not likely to be checked by such a measure: indeed it went on quite as systematically, and probably with more spirit. Those among the people who were disposed to exhibit a licentious disposition, being now secure of impunity and support, laid no restraint on their conduct: even before the dissolution of the assembly, a serious disturbance had occurred at Boston, in consequence of the seizure of a sloop belonging to a merchant named John Hancock, which had landed its cargo in defiance of the regulations made by the commissioners of customs. The populace, outrageous against the board, which had thrown great and almost insurmountable difficulties in the way of smuggling, assailed the collector and comptroller of the customs with sticks and stones, threatened the commissioners, and obliged them to seek refuge on board the Romney ship of war, then lying in the harbor; after which, they seized the collector's boat, and carrying it in triumph to Mr. Hancock's door, there burned it: the commissioners sought the protection of the governor, and were referred by him to the legislature; but being unable to obtain any advice or assistance from

<sup>7</sup> Massachusetts State Papers, p. 150.

that body, they were obliged\* to secure themselves in a fortress called Castle William, at the entrance of the harbor. Town meetings were held on the affair, at which the minds of the people were excited by inflammatory speeches, and the greatest contempt for the mother country was inculcated; while the assembly beheld all these proceedings with outward indifference, but secret satisfaction; and took no measures to enforce the governor's authority.

In this disturbed state of things, the report of two regiments being despatched from Ireland, and of the assembling of troops at Halifax, created a violent commotion: a meeting of the people was convened, and a committee appointed to wait on the governor, and request him to call an assembly without delay: to this he answered, 'that it was not in his power, since he had dissolved the late assembly by the king's command, to convene a new one without instructions; and the affair was under examination.'

This reply increased the resentment of the people, and gave occasion to the factious for exertion; in consequence of which, a general convention of delegates from all the towns of the province<sup>6</sup> was summoned; and the Boston committee even proceeded so far as to recommend the inhabitants to provide themselves with arms and ammunition, under the pretext of a war with France being apprehended. The convention, which was attended by deputies from every town except Hatfield, met on the twenty-second of September, and sent a communication to the governor, disclaiming all intention of performing any act of government; being chosen, as they said, in dark and distressing times, to consult and advise measures for the peace and good order of his majesty's subjects in the province; and they prayed him to call together the legislative assembly. Sir Francis Bernard however refused to receive any communication from such a meeting, which would be an admission of its legality: but next day he

<sup>6</sup> Ninety-six in number.

CHAP.  
X.

1768.

sent them a letter, in which, proceeding on the supposition that they might have acted under the advice of persons ignorant of the criminality of such proceedings, he seriously admonished them of their irregularity, and assured them, from authority, that his majesty was determined to maintain his intire sovereignty over the province: another deputation sent officially by the convention having been refused admission to the governor, that body, apparently disconcerted by his firmness, merely appointed a committee of nine persons to consult on the best method of promoting peace and good order in the province; and having waited to receive its report, they drew up a petition to the king, which they enclosed in a letter to their colonial agent, and then broke up on the twenty-ninth of September. The same day two regiments and a detachment of artillery arrived from Halifax; and soon afterwards general Gage brought two more regiments from Ireland: some difficulties respecting their lodging were obviated by hiring houses, to which the denomination of barracks was given, to prevent the establishment of a precedent for quartering soldiers on private individuals: thus for a season tranquillity was restored; the commissioners of customs resumed their functions, and business went on in its usual course.

New York, intimidated by the suspension of its legislature, had submitted to the terms required by the mutiny act, and its assembly was again permitted to meet: harmony seemed to be restored; and it was thought that confidence might have followed, but for the associations formed throughout the provinces in consequence of the proceedings of Massachusetts. These associations indeed stirred up and kept alive the flame of discord; but nothing could have extinguished it, except the recognition of American independence: it would have mouldered under its ashes, only to burst out with increased violence, when fanned by the breath of popular



commotion ; and this would have been excited whenever the British legislature had exercised any act toward the colonists interfering with those rights and privileges, of which they were becoming more sensitive in proportion as they were acquiring greater means of resistance.

CHAP.  
X.  
1768.

## CHAPTER XI.

## GEORGE III. (CONTINUED.)—1768.

Domestic troubles and commotions—Difficulties in arranging the government—Democratic spirit—Wilkes—His application to the duke of Grafton neglected—His return—Is a candidate to represent the city of London—Fails, and is returned for Middlesex—Popular triumph—Legal proceedings against him—Is committed to prison—Popular tumults—Wilkes's conduct in prison—New parliament opened by commission—Prorogued to November—Riot in St. George's fields—Unfortunate consequences of it—Treatment of the soldiers—Wilkes's outlawry reversed, but verdicts against him confirmed—Lord Mansfield's vindication of himself—Wilkes in the zenith of his fame—The king patronises science—Death of princess Louisa—Visit of the king of Denmark to England—Birth of princess Augusta, and city address—Death of the duke of Newcastle and of archbishop Secker—Epitome of continental policy—Affairs of Ireland—Disensions in the cabinet, and resignation of lord Chatham—Letters of lord Weymouth and Wilkes—Meeting of parliament, and king's speech—Debates on the address, &c.—Wilkes's petition—Lord Weymouth's motion against him for libel—Expelled the house—Speeches by Mr. Burke and G. Grenville, &c.—New writ issued for Middlesex—Acts of the populace—New election—Wilkes and colonel Luttrell—The latter declared sitting member by the house of commons—Affairs of North America—Affairs of the East India company taken up by parliament—Arrears of the civil list—Prorogation of parliament—Conduct of the North American colonists—Discontents in England—Dr. Johnson and Junius—Addresses and counter-addresses, &c.—State of Ireland—Affairs of the East Indies and Hyder Ali—Alarm occasioned by them in England—Settlement between the company and the government.

Difficulties  
in arranging the go-  
vernment.

WHILST America was in the agitated state which has been described in the last chapter, Great Britain was scarcely less disturbed by domestic troubles and commotions. Excellent as was the private character of George III., and ardent as were his wishes for the happiness of his people, his reign had hitherto

brought tranquillity neither to himself nor to them : the scheme which he adopted, soon after his accession, of breaking the power of the whig aristocracy, and calling men of different parties to the service of the state, had encountered numerous obstacles, of which many were yet to be overcome. The long-established supremacy of the great families had almost given them a prescriptive right to office in public opinion ; and lord Bute, the first agent employed in dissolving that spell, attempted it without sufficient talent, and with too great precipitation : sudden and rapid change is not suited to the nature of long-established and extensive combinations. ‘ Our constitution,’ as Burke observes, ‘ stands on a nice equipoise, with steep precipices and deep waters on all sides of it : in removing it from a dangerous leaning toward one side, there may be a risk of oversetting it on the other : every project of a material change in a government so complicated, combined at the same time with external circumstances still more complicated, is a matter full of difficulties.’ And thus it was found in the present instance : the aristocratical phalanx, broken but not subdued, formed new parties, with new principles of action, tending to annoy the sovereign and impede his government. The more complying cabinets which he engaged in his service, being generally composed of discordant materials, were unable to withstand the shocks of their opponents, supported as they were by popular opinion, and by the great monied capitalists, who always attached themselves to the whigs. Thus different sections of that party forced themselves into office, and were again displaced, until the age became one of ministerial revolutions and cabinet abortions : even parliament itself began to lose its credit, passing acts one session which it repealed the next, and affirming principles which it was obliged to retract.

Lord Chatham was for a time looked to as a tower of strength ; and he was called on more than once to rescue his sovereign from distress : but his dispo-

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

sition, intractable at all times, had, by the united effects of opposition and ill health, become so irritable and imperious, that he was not content, unless he could yoke the cabinet, the people, and the monarch to his car. Besides, though a new man, he had by his overpowering talent forced his way into the stronghold of privilege, and was therefore inclined to support the few that had the strongest claim to it: if he coalesced with others, he lost his influence, which was chiefly personal, and depended on popular opinion. Another cause, which not only paralysed ministerial exertions, but affected the character of the king himself, was the prevalent notion of that mysterious power behind the throne, which furnished a ready topic for invective to the ranks of opposition: nor must it be forgotten, that George III., with all his estimable qualities, held certain opinions or prejudices, which rendered it difficult for him to form or to retain an administration; but which, being conscientiously entertained, were on that account not to be eradicated. At this period also a new and virulent source of evil arose, to harass the sovereign and distract his councils, in the encroaching spirit of the democracy. The disruption of the great aristocratical band caused the privileged orders to descend from their proud eminence, and court the favor of those classes on whom they had hitherto looked with a sort of hereditary scorn: the great increase also of wealth, flowing from sources which were developed as the pressure of war was removed, brought its usual evils in luxury and relaxation of morals: as the population grew rich, it became restless, jealous, and insubordinate: the wealthy upstart desired the abolition of those distinctions which separated him from the high-born aristocrat; while the recklessness of the ruined profligate excited him to repair his fortunes by the feigned assumption of patriotic principles. Besides, the rapid succession of ministerial changes, together with constant accusations of abject compliance and political treachery, taught the people to look with

diminished respect on their rulers: in fact, they began to neglect the affairs of domestic life for the formation of political associations; attempting to take the concerns of government into their own hands, and exalting the legislation of a tavern to an equality with that of a cabinet. Thus was the democratic spirit unchained and let loose on society: and as if an impersonation of this spirit was required to give it greater effect, Wilkes, who had fled into France from the arm of the law, now returned to brave its terrors; and by exaggerating every pressure, inflaming every discontent, and giving a shape to every imaginary evil, he soon became the idol of that mob, which requires its champion to be at once subtle, bold, and unprincipled: by its aid he was enabled to insult his sovereign and to trample on the legislature with impunity: whoever engaged in contest with him was ultimately defeated; and if out of so evil a source some good eventually arose; if by his agency some constitutional questions of great importance were determined; this is due more to the excellent principles on which our constitution is based, than to the wisdom and discretion of those who were entrusted with its administration.

When the Rockingham ministry came into power in 1766, this demagogue repaired to London; but failing in his overtures to that party,<sup>9</sup> though his distresses were relieved by a private subscription among its principal members, he returned again to France. Soon afterwards lord Chatham's administration was formed; when Wilkes, who had formerly been on terms of intimacy with the duke of Grafton, wrote in a style the most earnest and abject to that nobleman; congratulating the country, as well as his grace, on his promotion; entreating him to mediate a pardon for him with the king; professing the utmost duty and allegiance to his majesty; and appealing to that zeal in the sacred

<sup>9</sup> The impudence of the terms proposed almost exceeds belief: they were a reversal of his outlawry; a general pardon; £5000 in cash; and a large pension on the Irish establishment!

CHAP.

XI.

1768.

cause of liberty which warmed his own heart, and which, he observed, ought ever to meet with a favorable reception from the duke of Grafton.

This application was treated with neglect and disdain : so that Wilkes, in retirement, reflecting on his repeated mortifications and the disappointment of his arrogant pretensions, was inflamed to that degree of virulence, which excited him to brave every danger, and defy every appearance of decorum, in order to make his enemies feel the effect of his resentment. Though he had quitted England under circumstances disgraceful to his character, and dangerous to his personal liberty, yet he now returned from France, and boldly presented himself at Guildhall, as a candidate to represent the metropolitan city in parliament. Being a known enemy to the court, he was received with rapturous applause by the populace ; but he failed of success, principally through the exertions of Harley, the lord mayor, who had been sheriff of London when the North Briton was burned. At this period the conduct of the ministry was timid and pusillanimous : since the duke of Grafton had disdainfully rejected Wilkes's application for pardon, the grant of which would have detached him from the mob and consigned him to insignificance, the writ of outlawry ought immediately to have been put in force against him, before he had time to light up the flames of discord. Wilkes himself, knowing his liability to this process, very craftily prevented it, by writing to the solicitor and deputy-solicitor of the treasury, pledging his honor that he would appear personally in the court of king's bench on the first day of the ensuing term : having thus gained time, he declared himself, after his defeat in the city, a candidate for the county of Middlesex, where he rose at once on the waves of popularity, and was returned by a very large majority. Such was the joy of the people at his success, that they paraded the streets of the metropolis in large bodies, compelled the citizens to illuminate their houses, broke the windows of lord

He is chosen member for Middlesex.

Bute's residence, and grossly insulted the chief magistrate by an attack on the Mansion-house. The administration, however, which was so inert when Wilkes made his first appearance, now began to act with vigor, when this alone was wanting to increase the popular fury, and drive faction to its highest pitch of insolence.

As the law, though tardily, was about to lay its grasp on the demagogue, he prudently surrendered himself, on the first day of Easter term, to the jurisdiction of the king's bench; but under pretence of submission to the laws of his country, he took that opportunity of making a violent speech against the 'cruelties of ministerial vengeance,' and to charge lord chief justice Mansfield with causing the records to be altered; without which, he averred, the two verdicts could not have been found against him. As he was not brought legally before the court, no proceedings could be then had on his case; but lord Mansfield took that opportunity of vindicating himself against the charge of altering the records:<sup>10</sup> the slight amendment made therein he thought it his duty to allow; nor could he have refused it without opposing the uniform practice of all the judges: yet this change, consistent both with law and usage, was represented as an iniquitous measure, flowing from the arbitrary principles and designs of the chief justice, as a Scotchman, and a friend of lord Bute: an alarm was spread of the constitution being wounded through this worthless individual; and many, who would have shrunk from contact with the man, now espoused his cause under the specious pretence of defending the liberty of the subject.

On leaving the court, Wilkes was received by the surrounding multitude with loud acclamations; but

<sup>10</sup> It had been a common practice with the judges, at the request of the prosecutor, to amend informations, in order to make them more clear and precise. At the instance of the solicitor of the treasury, lord Mansfield had allowed the word *purport* in the information against Wilkes to be erased, and the word *tenor* to be substituted.

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

His confinement in the king's bench.

such precautions had been taken, by the magistrates of Westminster and of the city, to intimidate the disorderly, that no farther disturbances occurred: a few days afterwards, having been brought into court in a legal manner, his counsel moved that he might be admitted to bail; but the judges were of opinion that no person wasailable after conviction, and therefore ordered him at once to be committed to prison. The populace however, being determined to reverse this decree, stopped the coach in which he was conveyed, on Westminster-bridge, took off the horses, and dragged it in triumph through the city to a tavern in Spitalfields, where they kept him till night: he took an opportunity however, at a late hour, to withdraw privately, and surrender himself to the marshal of the king's bench. Next day, the people collected in great crowds round the prison; and pulling up the outward fence, made a bonfire with it on the spot: at night they compelled the inhabitants to illuminate their houses; but were at length dispersed by a detachment of the guards. From this period the metropolis was long kept in a state of riot and confusion; but government was sufficiently alarmed to provide means for immediate security. Wilkes himself, though imprisoned, was not inactive in feeding the flame which he had kindled: his address to the freeholders of Middlesex, published two days before a hearing was to come on at Westminster-hall concerning the errors of his outlawry, and five before the meeting of parliament, is a curious specimen of the incendiary style: in it he descants on his own innocence and sufferings; on the happy fruits which his countrymen were reaping from his labors and persecutions; and on the still greater services he could render them if released from confinement: he then rings all the changes on love of England, liberty, arbitrary power, star-chamber inquisition, and every other delusive term, with which he boasted that he could 'halloo the rabble, like so many bull dogs,' to any purpose, however desperate.



On the tenth of May the new parliament was opened by commission, and Sir John Cust re-elected speaker of the house of commons. The only business transacted was a renewal of the acts against the exportation of grain ; but the commons passed a vote of thanks to the lord mayor, for his vigilant and active conduct in support of the laws and preservation of the public peace during the late disturbances : a motion was also made to obtain information why the law was not enforced against John Wilkes immediately on his return to England, but the house was not disposed to take cognisance of this matter : it was then prorogued till November, and ministers had leisure to consider what specific measures prudence dictated, after the many errors that had been committed. As it was expected that Wilkes would attend in the house by virtue of his privilege, an immense multitude assembled in St. George's fields for the purpose of escorting him : but when he did not appear, they demanded him with loud outcries, and other indications of violence ; some county magistrates, attempting to read the riot act, being assailed with stones and bricks. Great pains were taken to make the people disperse, but all in vain : the tumult increased, and the rabble attacked, not only the magistrates, but the military who had been called out to guard them : at length, self-defence, as well as public duty, compelled the soldiers to fire ; four or five persons were killed, and about double that number wounded : among the former, was unfortunately a youth, of the name of Allen, who had taken no part in the affray, but fell a victim to his indiscreet curiosity : being mistaken for one of the rioters, he was pursued by a soldier, and shot in a hovel or cow-house, belonging to his father, whither he had run for refuge, and while he was in the act of protesting his innocence. This unhappy occurrence was heightened by the popular party with all the coloring that pity and resentment could assume, in order to inflame the public mind : the circumstances which preceded

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.  
Meeting of  
parliament.

Riots in St.  
George's  
fields, &c.

CHAP.  
XI.

1766.

and followed it were grossly misrepresented ; assertions were boldly made, that the justices alone had caused the tumult, by reading the riot-act ; and that the military had been stationed and prepared for the very purpose of doing execution on the people. The prosecution of a soldier, named Donald Maclean, for the murder of Allen, was said to have been defeated by the disingenuous arts of the government ;<sup>11</sup> and a letter from the secretary at war, thanking the guards for their zeal and good conduct under such trying circumstances, was represented as an encouragement to the shedding of blood : the fact is, that considerable effect had been produced on the minds of the soldiers by late events ; and various attempts had been made to seduce them from their allegiance. The guards, both horse and foot, had been employed for some time in keeping the peace, much to their own disquiet : eighteen of them had been wounded, and some severely ; they had long known that disobedience of orders subjected them to the extremity of martial law ; and they now discovered that obedience did not exempt them from the ignominy of a criminal trial : under

<sup>11</sup> The following may be considered as a true account of this so much misrepresented affair :—‘These riots began in March ; on the twenty-ninth of which month, lord Weymouth, then secretary of state, signified the king’s pleasure, that the troops within call should be in readiness to assist the civil magistrate on his application : on the twenty-seventh of April, lord Barrington ordered the horse and foot guards to give their assistance when required ; and on the twenty-ninth, the magistrates applied to him for cavalry, to be quartered in the Borough, on account of the violences committed the preceding day. This he declined doing. The riots continuing, on the sixth of May, lord Weymouth ordered 100 men to be sent to the king’s bench prison : this was done the following day ; and the guard was ordered to be relieved, whenever, on consultation with the justices, it should be deemed necessary. On the ninth, the magistrates sent for a detachment of the horse guards, and had them. On the tenth of May, Allen was killed by a soldier employed by order of the justices to seize a rioter. Ensign Murray, of the third regiment of guards, hearing the report of a gun, ran up, and inquired how it came to be fired without his orders : the soldier answered that his piece went off at half-cock, without intention. This man and two others were apprehended, but discharged next day, no one appearing against him : but evidence was produced against the other two ; of whom one was bailed, while the other continued in prison, till he was tried and acquitted at the assizes. The man who really did the act, immediately after his discharge, went to the parade, and told his comrades, it was very unjust that any body should be in prison for what he had done, though without intention : but soon after, being sensible of the danger to himself from this declaration, he went off, and was not afterwards heard of.’—Lord Barrington’s Political Life, p. 120—123.

these circumstances, it became doubtful how they would act ; when the slightest hesitation might have the effect of surrendering the metropolis into the hands of a lawless mob. Nothing could exceed the frenzy of the populace at this time, who assailed the Mansion-house so frequently, as to render a constant guard of soldiers necessary to defend it ; and who stuck up treasonable placards on the very walls of the palace : the sailors also had lately been petitioning for an increase of pay ; and these kept themselves together in a body, forcing the crews of trading ships in the river to join them : besides, the glass-grinders, journeyman-tailors, coal-heavers, and other classes, assembled in vast numbers, ready, as it were, to unite with Wilkes's mob, and restrained only by fear of the soldiery : in short, the arm of civil authority appeared too weak to curb the head-strong passions of the people, and to prevent the dissolution of social order.

While lord Barrington was considering what was best to be done in this critical and embarrassing situation, he received a visit from two of the most active justices, requesting a detachment of guards to defend the house of Mr. Gillam, one of the Surrey magistrates, from a violent mob, highly exasperated by the spirited opposition he had given to their proceedings : in the course of conversation, these gentlemen mentioned the admirable conduct of the soldiers who had been placed under their orders ; and this gave birth to an idea, that a letter addressed to the guards, commending their good behavior, and promising them protection while they continued it, might please and encourage them : his lordship, having consulted some intelligent officers on the subject, whose opinion coincided with his own, proposed the matter to the king, and with his approbation wrote the letter in question : nor did his attention to the military, who so well deserved it, end here : he ordered those who were under prosecution, with ensign Murray, to be defended by the crown lawyers, and the soldier in prison to be

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

maintained at the public cost : after the acquittal of this man, thirty guineas were given to him on parade by his captain, who thus addressed him :—

‘ I have received his majesty’s orders, through the secretary at war, to give you thirty guineas, for your having suffered so much, and been so long imprisoned on a false accusation : at the same time, I must tell you, that had you done any thing contrary to the laws, he would have been equally ready to have brought you to justice, as he is now graciously pleased to give you this, in compensation for what you have wrongfully suffered.’

Ten guineas were also given to the soldier who had been admitted to bail ; and two guineas to each of those, who, during their attendance on the magistrates, had been wounded by the mob.<sup>12</sup>

Wilkes’s  
outlawry  
reversed.

On the eighth of June, Wilkes’s case was again argued in the court of king’s bench ; when the outlawry against him was reversed, on account of some irregularity of proceedings : the verdicts however on his former trials, for publishing the *North Briton* and the *Essay on Woman*, were confirmed ; all the arguments used by the prisoner’s counsel in arrest of judgment being considered frivolous and inconclusive :<sup>13</sup> he was accordingly condemned to pay two fines of £500 ; to be imprisoned for two years, computed from the time of his arrest ; and to find two sureties in £500 each for his good behavior during seven years. An unfavorable decision of the case having been expected, chief justice Mansfield was threatened by anonymous letters, and attacked with

<sup>12</sup> As this proper and meritorious conduct of lord Barrington has been made a subject of the most virulent calumny, it has been thought proper to give this detail of the particulars :—‘ On the day for the supplies of the army in the next session of parliament lord Barrington was warmly attacked on this subject : he acknowledged and justified the fact. Soon after, a motion was made for a committee of inquiry, which his lordship did not decline ; but it was not agreed to by the house : the minority was only 39 to 245. Next year, on a similar motion, it was only 33. This showed the sense even of opposition on the subject : they had on other subjects divided more than 130 in each session.’—Lord Barrington’s *Political Life*, p. 128.

<sup>13</sup> These turned on the alleged impropriety of the informations being filed by the solicitor-general, and the alteration of the record at lord Mansfield’s chambers.

every species of insult and intimidation : in delivering the judgment of his court, he alluded in a most impressive speech to these unworthy proceedings ; declaring ‘ that the last event which can happen to a man never comes too soon, if he falls in support of the law and liberty of his country ; for liberty is synonymous with law and government : as for himself, the temper of his mind, and the color and conduct of his life, had given him a suit of armor against these arrows.’ Nor was the eulogy pronounced by this illustrious judge on his own character undeserved. Lord Mansfield, though he supported the administration, was never subservient to a minister ; least of all was he capable of turning aside the course of justice to advance the interests of a party : his decisions are considered to have been founded on very enlarged views of jurisprudence, and to form an admirable code on some of its most important branches ; equally liberal and just ; happily blending the venerable doctrines of the old law with the learning and refinement of modern times ; and admirably suited to the genius and circumstances of the age in which he lived : his mind was gifted with high natural endowments, and instructed in every species of learning that can serve for use or ornament. In the contests of parliament he was considered the antagonist of Chatham ; and on several occasions plucked the laurel from his brow, even where popular feeling was on the side of the latter : these talents, added to his private virtues and personal integrity, placed him in the foremost rank among the great men of his time.

The sentence passed against Wilkes afforded him a new subject for declamation on the harshness, cruelty, and illegalities of the whole case : he returned indeed to his prison ; but while there, he was in the zenith of his fame. Subscriptions were opened to pay off his debts ; valuable presents were conferred on him ; and his likenesses were so multiplied, that his face squinted at the passenger from almost half the sign-boards of the kingdom : he used to re-

CHAP.  
XI.

---

1768.

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

Domestic  
events.

late with great jocularly, that one day, an old lady, behind whom he happened to be walking, exclaimed with much spleen and bitterness, as she looked up to one of these public-house portraits,—‘ Ah! he swings every where, but where he ought.’

In the midst of all these public disturbances, the king preserved his equanimity, and occupied himself most advantageously for the encouragement of arts and science: during this year he employed Sir William Chambers in building the observatory at Richmond, which he furnished with a complete philosophical apparatus: the Royal Academy was also established under his majesty’s immediate patronage, Sir Joshua Reynolds being appointed its first president, and receiving the honor of knighthood on the occasion. In July, captain Cook sailed, under the same patronage, on his first voyage, to make observations, in a southern latitude, on the transit of Venus over the sun, and to explore the Pacific ocean: he was accompanied by the late Sir Joseph Banks, Dr. Solander a scientific Swede, and Mr. Charles Green, the colleague of Dr. Bradley, astronomer royal; and the honor of first planning an expedition for the joint purposes of promoting discovery and advancing science, is strictly due to George III.

In the month of May, his majesty lost his second sister, the princess Louisa; and during the summer, the king of Denmark paid a visit to this country, where he was received and treated with a splendid hospitality due to his exalted station, though scarcely merited by his personal character.<sup>14</sup> The princess Augusta’s birth, on the eighth of November, gave the corporation of London an opportunity of approaching his majesty, which they did with more propriety than on some previous occasions: steering

<sup>14</sup> The king and princess dowager, informed of the illiberal and unmerited treatment of his amiable consort, and despising the Danish monarch for his tame submission and pusillanimity, received him with considerable coldness and reserve; though they intimated a wish that the nobility and public bodies should contribute all in their power to his gratification and amusement.

clear of political animadversions, they confined themselves to congratulations on the happy event, and expressions of becoming loyalty, which the king acknowledged with marked satisfaction.

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

Toward the close of the year, died, at a very advanced age, and at the lowest ebb of political importance, Thomas Holles, duke of Newcastle, who for more than fifty years had occupied the highest offices and honors in the state. He was succeeded as chancellor of the university of Cambridge by the duke of Grafton, whose installation took place in July following; so that the same year saw him celebrated by the greatest lyric poet, and cauterised by the severest satirist that England has produced. Nearly at this time also died Dr. Secker, archbishop of Canterbury, a prelate of exemplary life, though not of commanding talents. Having communicated some observations to Warburton on his great work, bishop Hurd remarked, 'that he was a wise man, an edifying preacher, and an exemplary bishop; but the course of his life and studies had not qualified him to decide on such a work as the Divine Legation.' Being the son of a dissenter, he maintained a friendly intercourse with some eminent sectarians, as Watts, Doddridge, and others; considering them but temporary separatists from the church, whom conciliation might perhaps restore to her bosom. He had an ardent desire to establish episcopacy in America; and if too great a fear had not prevailed among the colonists, that the new bishops might be invested with temporal honors and jurisdiction, the plan would probably not have been opposed.

On the continent, the changes which various potentates were making in ecclesiastical government occasioned much anxiety to the see of Rome. The king of Spain, having banished the jesuits, now began to circumscribe the power of the clergy, especially of that iniquitous tribunal, the inquisition: he also reformed the universities, transferred the jurisdiction of the press from ecclesiastical to civil

Review of  
foreign po-  
litics.

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

authorities, prohibited appeals to the pope except in extraordinary cases, and permitted no order from the court of Rome to be put in execution unless sanctioned by his majesty in council. The king of Naples was engaged in similar reforms; and the grand duke of Parma, whose dominions were subjected to more exorbitant claims of papal authority than those of any other prince, resolved also to follow this example of sound policy: he accordingly prohibited appeals to his holiness, reduced the power and immunities of the church, and ordained that no benefices should be held in dependence on a foreign priest. The pope issued, as usual, decrees and bulls; but found, to his surprise, that they had lost their efficacy. Other popish states seconded the efforts of the Bourbon princes in this important amelioration of their realms.

With regard to continental politics, the principal interest lay in the north. The wretched country of Poland had long been the scene of a contention very singular in its causes and pretexts: spiritual tyranny first kindled the flame, and civil discord supplied it with fuel. The empress Catharine and Frederic the Great had formed very ambitious views; and they eagerly seized on the cause of the Polish dissidents as affording a pretext for interference: similarity in religious faith had induced Maria Theresa to patronise the catholics of that country; and France, though little influenced by religious motives, was prompted by policy to oppose the combined operations of Russia and Prussia. The empress-queen had prepared a force to assist the catholic party; but Frederic notified to her imperial majesty, that the entrance of her troops into that country would be followed by his invasion of Bohemia; and this threat had the effect desired. The influence of protestant courts, and especially the menaces of a Russian army, obtained an edict to confirm the privileges of the dissidents.

The French, though they did not engage in direct hostilities with Catharine, exerted their intriguing



policy to involve her in dissensions: they encouraged the Poles to form a new confederacy; they caballed at Stockholm to alter the government, in order to give absolute power to the king, who was under their influence; while their agents at Constantinople strongly excited the jealousy of the grand signor against the czarina. A confederacy of Polish catholics, formed during the summer, annulled the late laws, and adopted resolutions to oppose Catharine's designs, and dethrone Stanislaus; but the Russian troops defeated the army of these associates, pursued them to the eastern frontier, and burned the Turkish town of Balta, in which they had taken refuge. Already predisposed by French diplomacy to quarrel with Russia, the Turks denounced this as an act of direct hostility; sent the Russian ambassador to the castle of the Seven Towers; and in the beginning of October declared war against the empress.

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

An important bill which affected the Irish parliament, recalls our attention to the affairs of that part of the empire. The members of this assembly, which had been summoned by the present king, exhibited a strong attachment to their new sovereign: at the commencement of the war with Spain they passed a vote of credit for £500,000, and granted supplies for an addition to the troops: they also requested by an address to his majesty that the salary of their chief governor might be augmented to £16,000: even after the termination of the war, they assented to an increase of the public expenditure. Many however of their own body reaped the advantage of this measure; for a new mode was now adopted to secure a majority in parliament, by distributing places and pensions among members and their friends. Already the annual amount of pensions had risen to £80,000: but an expenditure so great, for such a purpose, became a fertile source of declamatory invective to the patriots,<sup>15</sup> whose chief object was to

Affairs of  
Ireland.

<sup>15</sup> At the head of these was the celebrated Dr. Lucas, who had returned from a voluntary exile, and was elected one of the members for Dublin.

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

bring about a change in the political constitution ; and a great obstacle to their designs was removed by the death of primate Stone, a zealous supporter of English interests, which took place in 1764.

Such was the intention of the patriots : but the English administration also had a plan of its own, which it was equally anxious to see effected ; viz. to establish the influence of government independently of the undertakers ; who, for their management of parliament, claimed a right to give away all places, pensions, and preferments according to their pleasure. This had been attempted by the duke of Bedford, who was nominated to the vice-regal office in 1757 : but the effort was transient ; and after a short struggle, his grace was obliged to submit, like his predecessors, to the bondage of the undertakers. In the year 1766, the earl of Bristol was appointed lord-lieutenant, avowedly for the purpose of breaking up the system ; but the parliamentary leaders mustered all their forces, and showed so determined a resolution to embarrass his government, that he also shrunk from the enterprise.

As a majority of the lords-justices were selected from the undertakers, and as it was usual for the chief governor to reside in the country only six months in two years, it could not be supposed that he would be sufficiently acquainted with parties to manage them with effect : it was therefore determined that in future he should reside constantly in Dublin, in order to qualify himself for business ; so that he might recover the patronage of which he had been so long deprived : for this purpose, lord Townshend, a nobleman of great convivial talents, and therefore pleasing to the Irish, was appointed lord-lieutenant in 1767 : his instructions were, not to establish a popular interest on the ruin of the oligarchy, but to render this latter subservient to the influence of the British government : the result however was not such as had been expected : the Irish oligarchy was indeed reduced ; but instead of an English ascendancy being created on its ruin,

a way was undesignedly opened to those political laborers, who effected for their country an independent constitution.

CHAP.  
XI.

---

1768.

In the hope of conciliating public favor, lord Townshend intimated, soon after his arrival, that he had been authorised to propose a measure, which would be beneficial and acceptable to the public: it was conjectured that a limitation to the duration of parliaments was the benefit proposed, to effect which the patriots had often attempted in vain; but it turned out to be a bill for securing the independence of the judges: the former measure however was proposed by Henry Flood; and by a singular combination of circumstances became a law, while the proffered boon of government was rejected. An alteration had been introduced into the bill respecting the judges, when transmitted to England, which, though acknowledged to be beneficial, occasioned its rejection on a constitutional principle: the other bill also, for limiting the duration of parliaments, had been altered, eight being substituted for seven years; but this was a measure not to be sacrificed to punctilio: the objection therefore was overlooked; and the bill was carried through both houses by a tide of popularity, which seems to have forced it on all parties concerned in the enactment. The parliamentary leaders hoped that it would be suppressed by the privy council, to which it was necessarily sent for transmission to England; the privy council, jealous of the popularity of parliament, and fearing to increase it, trusted to the British cabinet for rejecting the bill; while the cabinet relied on the above-mentioned alteration for operating on the constitutional jealousy of the Irish parliament.

In consequence of this bill the present parliament was dissolved, and a new one called, to meet in sixteen months; this unusual time being allowed, in order that the viceroy might have leisure to effect the purpose for which he was sent: but he found it very difficult to detach the subalterns from their

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

leaders, under whom they had acted so long ; and though his success was considerable, the expense was enormous. Besides, while he sought to aggrandise the crown, he was removing out of the way of freedom those powerful combinations which had so long obstructed its march. Being the first lord-lieutenant constantly resident in Ireland, he was able to make such official arrangements as he wished, and to watch every opportunity for detaching adherents from the great parliamentary leaders ; so that at last he succeeded in leaving those men in an unsuccessful opposition, who had subjected his predecessors to the hard conditions of their support. In the year 1769, the great undertakers, lord Shannon and Mr. Ponsonby, were dismissed from their employments, on account of their successful opposition to a money-bill ; which, because it originated in the Irish privy-council, was, after its return from England, rejected by the commons : on this occasion the patriots were joined by some placemen and pensioners, who had previously bargained for the liberty of opposing the court, if occasions of great importance should arise. The viceroy, incensed at his defeat, attempted to enter his protest on the journals of the commons, but without success : the lords he found more compliant. In another question concerning privileges he was defeated by the commons, which caused him to prorogue the parliament, after a session of only two months, leaving much important business unsettled.

A space of fourteen months now intervened before the next meeting in February, 1771 ; but of this intermediate time he had taken due advantage, and secured a majority on the court side. The commons passed an address to the king, expressing their humble thanks to his majesty for continuing lord Townshend in the government of Ireland ; but the speaker, Mr. Ponsonby, rather than convey such a message, resigned his place. In this and the following session the patriots made several attempts to resist the torrent, but were borne down by the force of num-

bers ; and in the midst of their struggles, they were deprived in 1771 of their incorruptible leader, Dr. Lucas. In the next year, lord Townshend resigned his government, after having succeeded in establishing a preponderancy of English interest by a profuse expenditure ; for it was in fact a contest of venality : he told the parliament in his last speech, that ' he had endeavored on every occasion to promote the public welfare, and expressed his acknowledgements for the very honorable manner in which they had declared their approbation of his conduct.' According to the account of those whom lord Townshend drove into opposition, he was an intemperate buffoon, debasing private manners, and destroying public principle : by those whom he attached to his interest, he was looked on as a delightful companion, convivial, humorous, and agreeable ; and his birthday continued for a long time to be celebrated by them with affectionate recollection : but though his habits and intimacies may have conciliated the attachment of individuals, it is generally confessed that they were not such as invested with becoming dignity the representative of majesty.

During his administration an extensive insurrection took place in the province of Ulster. On the expiration of the leases of an estate belonging to the marquis of Donegal, who was then an absentee, large fines, with high fees to the agent, were demanded for their renewal ; and as numbers of the tenants were unable to comply with these terms, their lands were let to others, who, in return for the exactions to which they had been subjected, demanded such rents as the old occupiers could not pay ; and these were of course dispossessed of their farms : being thus deprived of the means of subsistence, and rendered desperate, they rose up by night to seek for redress ; maimed the cattle of those who occupied their farms ; committed various other outrages ; and, to show their firmness of resolution, took the name of Hearts of Steel. One of their party being

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

captured, and confined in Belfast on a charge of felony, they marched to his rescue, having been joined by thousands of the peasantry; and the prisoner, to prevent the effusion of blood, was delivered into their hands: such compliance gave them confidence; and vast numbers of the people in the neighboring counties caught their spirit and assumed their title: they administered oaths, seized arms, and became general reformers; but were guilty of great excesses, and violent acts of inhumanity: some were taken and tried at Carrickfergus, but acquitted by the partiality or terror of the witnesses and jury. The legislature then interfered, and by an act of parliament sent the culprits to be tried at a distance from the place where they had committed their excesses: some were carried to Dublin, and put on their trial there; but so strong were the prejudices entertained against this law, that no jury of that city would find them guilty. The obnoxious act was soon after repealed; and the conduct of the insurgents becoming better appreciated, some of them were tried in their respective counties, where they were condemned and executed. By such examples and the exertions of the military, this insurrection was at last subdued; but the general discontent was so great, that in a very short time many thousands of protestants emigrated to America, carrying with them a spirit of vengeance against the British government, which was sensibly felt in the approaching contest.

Resigna-  
tion of lord  
Chatham.

It could hardly be expected that a ministry so heterogeneous in its composition as that which now administered the affairs of Great Britain, should act with perfect union in the momentous concerns which were brought under its notice: considerable differences were known to exist among its members; and these were made public in October, when lord Shelburne resigned his post of secretary for the southern department, in which he was succeeded by lord Weymouth from the northern, to whom the earl of Rochford

was appointed successor. Lord Chatham, the founder of the ministry, saw with dissatisfaction many acts of his colleagues: he was displeased with their conduct regarding America, and was indignant at the tranquillity with which they had suffered the French to possess themselves of Corsica: broken down by ill health, and annoyed at having his name connected with men and measures so generally unpopular, he determined to withdraw his name from the administration; and, either from ill health or ill humor, he would not attend at court to announce his resignation; but sent the privy seal by lord Camden.

: During the recess of parliament, and while ministers probably were in suspense regarding the proper course to be adopted in the disturbed state of the nation, a trivial event turned the scale in favor of what were called determined measures: in these a violent spirit of resentment predominated, which came with bad effect after the laxity that had permitted Wilkes to establish his popularity; and which, by placing the sovereign in direct opposition to a large portion of his subjects, exposed the kingdom to the mischiefs necessarily arising from such a contest. A letter from lord Weymouth, secretary of state, had been sent to the bench of magistrates for the county of Surrey, expressing approbation of their conduct, and recommending them no longer to allow tumults to arrive at so dangerous a height while they had the power of calling in military aid to assist the civil authority. This document having fallen into the hands of Wilkes, he published it, with a daring and inflammatory preface, in which he called the affair in St. George's fields 'a horrid massacre, and the consequence of a hellish project deliberately planned.' In fact, he had now set his fortune on the cast of a die, for the chance of popularity: the only way of playing the game was to inflame the passions of the people to the utmost; and the determination taken by ministers aided him in his ambitious projects.

Intemper-  
ance of  
Wilkes.

When parliament met on the eighth of November,

CHAP.  
XI.  
1768.  
Meeting of  
parliament.

the king's speech strongly recommended a renewal of its deliberations on our great commercial interests. His majesty regretted that the general tranquillity of the continental powers was endangered, but declared that no pacific assurances should divert his attention from the interests of Europe: he alluded in feeling terms to the state of our American colonies, and especially to the proceedings at Boston, which were stated as subversive of the constitution, and manifesting a disposition to throw off all dependence on the mother country: at the same time, he declared, that, 'with their concurrence and support, he should be able to defeat the mischievous designs of those turbulent and seditious persons, who under false pretences had but too successfully deluded numbers of his American subjects; and whose practices, if suffered to prevail, could not fail to produce the most fatal consequences to his colonies immediately, and in the end to all his dominions.' His majesty then expressed confidence in the affectionate loyalty of his new parliament, and satisfaction at the providential relief of his poorer subjects by the late plentiful harvest: having then pointed out the propriety of adopting the best precautions of human wisdom against the recurrence of the miseries they had experienced, he concluded with warmly recommending harmony in their deliberations, and a readiness to unite in measures which immediately concerned the interests of their country.

But notwithstanding this earnest recommendation of concord from the throne, the spirit of opposition manifested itself strongly in the very first debate on the address. Ministers were charged not only with gross inattention to our commercial interests and foreign relations, but with having taken such steps concerning America, as seemed deliberately formed for the purpose of exciting rebellion; while the balance of power was represented as endangered not more by the increasing influence of the family compact, than by the feeble and distracted state of our own cabinet.



The first particular subject which came under the deliberation of parliament was that of corn. To prevent, if possible, the recurrence of scarcity, a bill was prepared for enlarging the prohibition against exportation, and for preventing distillation from wheat; an act far too trifling in its object and operation, when agriculture ought to have been restored to its proper weight in the scale of political economy, and the cultivation as well as the inclosure of land diligently attended to: all measures however of this kind seemed to be put out of consideration by the approaching strife of civil discord. The great agitator of the day was determined not to let the zeal of his supporters cool, being well aware that whoever proposes to himself popularity as an object, must keep himself prominently before the public. In pursuance of this design, Wilkes deemed it expedient to present a petition to the house of commons, recapitulating all his grievances since his arrest in 1763: but the only new matter introduced was an allegation that lord Mansfield had tyrannically and illegally altered the record; and an accusation against Mr. Webb, late secretary to the treasury, of having bribed the petitioner's servant with the public money, to steal a copy of the *Essay on Woman*, which had formed one of the grounds of accusation against him. At the time appointed for considering his petition, which, owing to the great press of business, could not take place before the twenty-seventh of January, Mr. Wilkes was brought before the house in custody; but he objected, that by act of parliament he could not legally appear there without taking the oaths as a member: this however was overruled. The evidence in support of his petition substantiated only the isolated fact, that lord Mansfield had made an alteration on the record: but it was clearly determined that this was in accordance with ancient custom, and had been sanctioned by the approving voice of all the judges. As the charge also against Mr. Webb was not proved, a vote of severe censure against the petition was moved, but

CHAP.  
XI.

1768.

Debates on  
Wilkes.

CHAP. afterwards modified into a declaration, 'that the  
XI. aspersions contained in it were frivolous.'

1768.

After this, a complaint was made in the upper house by lord Weymouth, regarding a breach of privilege in the remarks on his official letter; and the printer of the newspaper acknowledging that he had received the communication from Mr. Wilkes, a conference of the lords and commons took place. Wilkes, at the bar of the lower house, exultingly avowed the publication, and claimed the thanks of his country for having exposed in a proper light 'that bloody scroll.' A motion was immediately made by lord Barrington, that the author of so false, scandalous, and seditious a libel, should be expelled the house.

In supporting this motion, ministers and their adherents spoke and acted rather as violent partisans, actuated by a determination to carry a measure, than as fair and impartial judges. The charge brought against their adversary was accumulative and indefinite, containing a recital of all his former offences, and expatiating on all the topics that could affect his character: their opponents contended that the libel on lord Weymouth formed the only specific ground of the motion; that his privileges as a peer were not cognisable by the commons; and that for any offence against him as a British subject, there was a remedy in the courts of law: for the other libels Mr. Wilkes had been expelled; and the house had already punished him for an attack on the legislature. Should he be twice chastised for the same offence? and should the house not only mingle new crimes with old, but blend the judicial and executive powers of the state with the legislative, extending its own authority for the purpose of trying and summarily punishing an offence which does not belong to its jurisdiction? Is it right to transfer the censures of a former parliament into the hands of the present, and make them the foundation of a new punishment? Is it proper for parliament to assume a power of determining the rights of the people and

their representatives, by no other rule but its own discretion or caprice?<sup>16</sup> The principal speakers in opposition to the motion were Mr. Burke and Mr. G. Grenville; the former of whom, in his animated and declamatory style, poured forth a torrent of invective against the folly and wickedness of ministers; enlarging on the abuse and ill consequences of that discretionary power which the commons appeared anxious to obtain, and calling the proposed vote of expulsion, 'the fifth act of a tragi-comedy, performed by his majesty's servants, at the desire of several persons of quality, for the benefit of Mr. Wilkes, and at the expense of the constitution.' Mr. Grenville, in a more plain, argumentative, and convincing manner, dwelt on the injustice and imprudence of the measure: he advised the ministry to conciliate rather than inflame the heated minds of the populace; and expressed a hope that they would consult the best guide to all human wisdom, the experience of past ages; illustrating his position by the example of Dr. Sacheverel, who was so unwisely prosecuted by the house of commons: he also pointed out the object of Wilkes himself; which was not to retain his seat in that house, but to stand forth, as the apparent victim of its resentment and injustice, to the deluded people: he deprecated any fear of his talents and power to do harm within its walls; though his exclusion would occasion a belief that he had the ability to redress every real or imaginary grievance: finally, he predicted the consequences of his expulsion, in his future returns through the spirit of the Middlesex electors; and the dilemma in which the house would be placed, when obliged either to refuse a new writ, and thus deprive the county of an important right; or to acknowledge a man for its representative, who might be chosen by a few voters against the declared sense of the majority. 'Are these,' said Mr. Grenville, 'the proper expedients to check and restrain the spirit of faction and disorder?' He concluded with

<sup>16</sup> Parliamentary Debates for 1769, February 3rd.

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

recommending a cool and temperate conduct, unmixed with passion or prejudice; and deprecated the exercise of a discretionary power, the extent of which no man knew, and the mischiefs of which no man could foresee.

Wilkes expelled the house.

But neither the eloquence of Mr. Burke, nor the force of Mr. Grenville's prophetic warnings, could subdue the indignation felt and expressed against the unparalleled insolence and criminality of Wilkes: the motion was carried by a large majority, and a new writ issued for the election of a member in his room.

It was not long before all the predictions above mentioned were fully verified: the popularity of the demagogue increased by what was termed persecution; and the violated name of liberty, associated with that of Wilkes, was profaned by the yells of the rabble, and chalked up on every wall in and around the metropolis. The freeholders of Middlesex were determined to re-elect him; and were encouraged in this resolution by alderman Sawbridge, who observed, that if once ministers should be permitted to say whom the freeholders should not choose, the next step would be to tell them whom they should choose. Wilkes was accordingly rechosen as their representative, free of all expense to himself; but next day, the house declared him incapable of being elected during the present parliament: the popularity however of the man increased, in proportion as the persecution of him assumed a vindictive character; and the favor of his supporters reached a high pitch of enthusiasm, which was answered by the sympathy of a large portion of the kingdom. On the twentieth of February, a subscription was opened for his benefit at the London Tavern, which provided a sufficient fund to pay his fines, and left an ample surplus for his future maintenance. All attempts to check the prevailing spirit were useless: petitions and remonstrances were addressed to the king, complaining of the tendency of measures to destroy that harmony which ought to

subsist between a prince and his people; and when a meeting was called at the King's Arms tavern to propose a loyal and counter-address to his majesty, the partisans of Wilkes were so numerous as to defeat and turn to ridicule its object. They, however, who had convened the assembly, prepared an address, and procured signatures to it elsewhere; but in their progress to present it, they were pelted with mud, and assailed with every species of violence and insult: a hearse was dragged before them, decorated with paintings representing the death of Allen, and also a murder committed at an election at Brentford last year:<sup>17</sup> this vehicle attempted to pass into the very court of St. James's, before the few that remained of the original procession: it was resisted by the guard; but the mob persevering in their outrages, two of them were secured by the intrepidity of lord Talbot, and fifteen by the soldiers.

A fresh election was held on the sixteenth of March, when Mr. Dingley, a chief promoter of the loyal meeting just described, appeared as a candidate; but he was so ill treated by the populace, that he retired before nomination, and Wilkes was returned without a competitor: but the house of commons, on the motion of the chancellor of the exchequer, again declared his election null and void. At length, in order to terminate a contest so disagreeable to the house, colonel Luttrell, son of lord Irnham, had the courage voluntarily to vacate his seat, with a view to offer himself a candidate for Middlesex; being previously assured, that whatever might be the number of his votes, he should be declared the sitting member. This conduct appeared so rash, that policies of assurance on his life were actually opened at Lloyd's; and the house of commons, apprehensive of the event, ordered the sheriffs to take every precaution to preserve the public peace.

The election was conducted with the utmost order,

<sup>17</sup> Two men were tried for it, and found guilty, but received a pardon.

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

Wilkes  
again re-  
turned and  
rejected.Is chosen  
alderman.Debates on  
America.

though an outrageous mob filled all the roads leading to Brentford, compelling passengers to shout 'Wilkes and Liberty,' and to allow his badge, 'No. XLV.' to be chalked on their clothes and carriages. The numbers on the poll showed an immense majority for Wilkes against his competitor,<sup>18</sup> and the sheriff declared him duly elected on the thirteenth of April: a motion however was made in the house, and carried, by a majority of 221 to 139, to alter this return, and to insert the name of Luttrell in place of Wilkes. Fourteen days being allowed for petitions against this resolution, one was signed by several freeholders, and presented on the twenty-ninth, which brought the matter again under a warm discussion on the eighth of May, when the former resolution was confirmed by a still greater majority. It was even debated whether the sheriffs of Middlesex should not feel the displeasure of the house for their conduct; but Sir Fletcher Norton declared that they were bound to act as they had done; and this intention was then renounced. Ten days afterwards, the object of so much passionate resentment was chosen alderman of the city of London; being represented as a meritorious patriot, suffering under tyranny and oppression for the courage with which he advocated the people's cause.

During this session America occupied as large a share of parliamentary attention as could be abstracted from domestic feuds: the ministry and opposition were both desirous of an inquiry, but with different motives: the former wished to show that all blame rested on the captious and intractable spirit of the Americans; the latter would refer it to the vacillating counsels and arbitrary measures of the British government; and with these different opinions each party desired a different mode of investigation. Ministers were for confining the question to the last acts of the colonists; the opposition asked for a general examination of the mea-

asures adopted during several years by Great Britain ; as it was only by tracing the disorder to its source that a remedy could be applied : but this broad plan of discussion did not suit the administration, who determined that the question should be debated on narrower grounds. The house resolved itself into a committee ; and various motions were made for the production of papers, to illustrate the measures of government, but were uniformly over-ruled : those only which related to the conduct of the colonists were laid before the house : with such incomplete materials, and with an implicit confidence in ministers, did a majority of the legislature undertake to deliberate on the important affairs of America. The upper house had already voted strong resolutions relative to the unwarrantable and rebellious conduct of the people and legislature of Massachusetts ; with an address to his majesty, praying that he would direct the governor of that colony to transmit the names of persons conspicuous for their illegal acts, since December, 1767 ; and, if the information afforded sufficient ground, that he would issue a special commission for trying the offenders in Great Britain, according to a statute of the thirty-fifth of Henry VIII.

A spirited debate ensued on the question, whether the committee should concur in the resolutions and address : the right and expediency of taxing the colonies were ably argued, and the acts of the legislature of Massachusetts were strongly arraigned and ingeniously defended : but after a long debate, in which governor Pownal, who possessed an extensive knowledge of American affairs,<sup>19</sup> took a principal part, the resolutions and address were both carried. In a subsequent discussion, when the report of the committee was laid before the house, Mr. Pownal again distinguished himself in opposition to the measure : he entered at great length into the constitutions and charters of the different colonies, and con-

<sup>19</sup> He had himself held the situation of governor of Massachusetts.

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

tended against the right of internal taxation: he dwelt with great force on the impolicy of urging the Americans to acts of resistance; depicted with truth and precision the spirit which animated the inhabitants of Massachusetts-bay, and warned the ministry against giving a spring to their fanaticism, or urging them to quit their native character of husbandmen and merchants, to display their energy in acts of resistance. 'That spirit,' he said, 'which led their ancestors to break away from every thing which is near and dear to the human heart; from every connexion which friendship, relation, blood could give; which led them to quit every comfort that a settled and civilised country, their own native country, could afford, and to encounter every difficulty and distress which a wilderness of savages could oppose to them, to struggle even for their existence; that spirit, equally strong and equally inflammable, has but a slight sacrifice to make at this time: they have not to quit their native country, but to defend it; they have not to forsake their friends and relations, but to unite with and stand by them in one common union: the only sacrifice they have to make, is that of a few follies and a few luxuries. Necessity is not the ground of their commerce with you; it is merely an affectation of your modes and customs; the love for home, as they call England, that makes them like every thing which comes from thence: but passion may be conquered by passion; they will abominate as sincerely as they now love you; and if they do, they have within themselves every thing requisite to the food, raiment, or dwelling of mankind: they have no need of your commerce.' He then described the resources of the Americans, and the facility with which they could obtain all necessaries without applying to England: in conclusion, the governor gave this prudent advice: — 'Do nothing which may bring into discussion questions of right, which must become mere articles of faith: go into no innovations in practice, and suffer no encroachments on government: extend not the



power which you have of imposing taxes, to the laying internal taxes on the colonies: continue to exercise the power, which you have already exercised, of exacting subsidies, imposts, and duties; but exercise this, as you have hitherto done, with prudence and moderation, directed by the spirit of commercial wisdom. This spirit and mode of government will cement again that union which is shattered, if not quite broken; will restore that spirit of obedience, which the loss of authority on the one hand, and of affection on the other, has interrupted; and will re-establish the authority as well as force of civil government, which has almost lost its force by losing its authority. Exert the spirit of policy, that you may not ruin the colonies and yourselves by exertions of force.'

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

The resolutions and address however were finally adopted; but amendments being made, they were sent back to the lords for their assent: this gave rise to a motion for recommitting the address; and the proposal to revive the obsolete statute of Henry VIII. came more particularly under discussion: the intention of enforcing it was reprobated with great ability by captain Phipps,<sup>20</sup> who showed that its original intention was quite contrary to that for which it was to be revived: it was passed, when a portion of the French territory was in our possession, to secure for the king's subjects on the other side of the channel that trial by a jury of their countrymen, of which it would deprive the colonists: for an American brought over to England could have none of those advantages which the law would willingly secure to every one. How could he effectually challenge jurors, of whose characters and connexions he must be ignorant? How avail himself of the assistance of counsel, to whose abilities and very names he would be a stranger? And by what process could he enforce the appearance of witnesses from the other side of the Atlantic? But if the culprit, with all these disad-

<sup>20</sup> Afterwards lord Mulgrave.

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

vantages, should be acquitted,<sup>1</sup> what reparation could be made to an ingenuous mind for so foul an imputation as disloyalty? for dragging him from the endearments of domestic life, from the land of liberty, flowing with milk and honey, to drink at the bitter fountain of oppression? Would he return less possessed of the confidence of his fellow-subjects, less convinced of the inconveniences attending a state of dependence, or less anxious to cast off the yoke, from this new outrage?

Ministers however alleged, that the atrocious spirit of Massachusetts rendered a revival of this statute necessary, though it was improbable that it would ever be put into execution; since a proper display of vigor and lenity must bring back the colonists to a sense of duty. The ignorance displayed at this time by English ministers of the American character is very surprising; nor can we help wondering at the infatuation of men, who, when they had so highly irritated the colonists by the infringement of one great constitutional right, sought to calm them by attacking another still more dear to British subjects. The motion for recommitment was lost by a great majority.

On the 14th of March the house again took up the consideration of American affairs, in consequence of a representation from New York, denying the right of parliament to tax them: lord North opposed its reception; and colonel Barré observed, that his predictions respecting the loss of our colonies, when the stamp act was passed, were now about to be accomplished. Some observations were made on the unproductiveness and expense of American taxes. Mr. Grenville said, with great truth, that there was no medium: we must either resolve strictly to execute the revenue laws in America, or abandon the right with a good grace, and repeal

<sup>1</sup> 'And acquitted he must be,' said Mr. Phipps; 'for the act of Henry VIII. is for treasons committed out of the realm, and the twenty-fifth of Edward III. makes levying war within the realm treason; so that whether America is in or out of the realm, it cannot be within the letter of both these acts.'

the declaratory act, as well as these laws. Mr. Burke answered, there might be and was a proper medium: the right of taxation was undoubted; but a minister ought to be well convinced of its expediency before he attempted to enforce the same. It was resolved not to receive the representation. At a later period, governor Pownall moved to repeal the revenue acts affecting North America, and supported his motion by a long and able speech; but as the session was far advanced, the discussion of this important subject was deferred. The *Nullum Tempus* bill of last session was passed, and its benefits extended to America.

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

The charter of the East India company was prolonged for the farther term of five years, on conditions similar to those in the last agreement: they were however allowed to augment their dividends to twelve and a half per cent., provided the addition did not exceed one per cent in any single year: should the company be obliged to reduce their dividends in that period, a proportionate sum was to be deducted from their annual payment of £400,000 to government; and should they fall to six per cent. this payment was to cease. The company was also bound to export British goods, at an average, of equal value with those sent to India during the last five years; and should any surplus of cash remain in England, after payment of specified debts, it was to be lent to government at the rate of two per cent. These stipulations were considered a favorable specimen of financial talents in lord North, the chancellor of the exchequer.

East India  
affairs.

On the last day of February a message from the king was delivered to the house, informing them that the arrears of the civil list amounted to £513,000, and desiring the assistance of his faithful commons to discharge this heavy encumbrance. In the present state of financial difficulties, when it was determined in the royal mind to subdue the rebellious spirit of America at any cost, and when every attack on prerogative was felt so sensibly, this wasteful ex-

- CHAP. XI.  
1769.
- penditure of the public resources naturally excited the opponents of administration to demand the production of papers to account for these arrears ; but such was the zeal and loyalty of the house, that after three days of warm debate, the motion was negatived, and the sum granted, without the formality of an inquiry. On the ninth of May, parliament was prorogued ; and the king, in his speech, exhorted the members, with more than ordinary earnestness, to exert themselves in repressing the efforts of the disaffected in their several counties, and in maintaining public peace and good order.
- Prorogation of parliament.
- Conduct of the Americans.
- The effects produced in America by the revival of the obsolete statute of Henry VIII. corresponded to the predictions of those who opposed it ; for it not only enraged the disaffected, but alarmed the loyal. Many, who had uniformly supported the legislative supremacy of Great Britain, now began to question an authority which afforded such ready means of oppression. In Massachusetts, the projected scheme, assisted by the presence of the military, inspired some awe for a time : but political writers soon resumed their avocations ; and the new assembly, adhering to the spirit of the last, stated, in a message to the governor, that they could not proceed to business while ships of war were in their harbor, and a military force stationed, not only within their city, but in the very street where the assembly met ; nay, even with cannon pointed towards the door of the court-house : the answer was, that he had no power to remove either ships or troops. When the assembly proceeded to elect a council, they carefully excluded every person attached to government, or opposed to the turbulence of party ; and they entered a resolution on their journals, protesting that the transaction of business was an act of necessity, not to be drawn into a precedent. After many violent altercations, and an interruption of public business for three weeks, the governor informed them, that although he had not power to remove the troops from Boston, he could adjourn

the assembly to another town; and accordingly he did adjourn them to Cambridge: but their indignation was not lessened, when, as they observed, 'instead of the least abatement of military parade, the general assembly was made to give way to an armed force;' and the cannon were withdrawn from the neighborhood of the court-house on the very night after the adjournment.

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

But whatever resentment the house might feel at this removal, they could now consistently proceed to business, which was greatly in arrear; and in their attention to the internal affairs of the province they did not overlook the interesting subjects relating to their disputes with Great Britain. On the twenty-seventh of June, they voted a petition to the king for the removal of their governor; and on the following day, a message was received from Sir Francis Bernard, containing no reference to such petition, but informing the house that his majesty had required his presence in England for the purpose of ascertaining the real state of the province: but as he was to attend the king in quality of governor, he added, that the same necessity for a grant of the usual salary existed as heretofore; and desired that such grant, according to the forty-ninth instruction, should precede all other business of the session: the house however thought proper to put a different construction on the order; and having refused compliance, entered into several warm resolutions, in language of greater exasperation than had yet appeared in the official acts of any provincial legislature.

On the sixth of July, the governor sent a statement of expenses incurred by the royal troops quartered in Boston, with a request from general Gage, that funds might be provided to discharge the same, agreeably to the provisions of the mutiny act. The house had frequently found means of misunderstanding or evading the royal instructions; as in the case of the stamp act, when a resolution was passed to use no stamped paper: but here no room was left

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

for misunderstanding or evasion ; the terms of the mutiny act were clear and explicit ; and it was now to be seen whether they would openly refuse to comply with an act of parliament, or by one vote give up the great principle of taxation, and make a provision for the very troops which were sent to force them into such compliance. After an indignant denunciation of the act in question, and observing that ‘ of all the new regulations, the stamp act not excepted, it was the most excessively unreasonable,’ they thus declared their resolution :—‘ your excellency must excuse us in this express declaration ; that as we cannot, consistently with our honor or interest, and much less with the duty we owe to our constituents, so we never will make provision for the purposes in your several messages mentioned.’

Thus ended the attempt to enforce the mutiny act in Massachusetts. On receiving this decision, the governor prorogued the assembly, and took his final leave of them in the following terms :—‘ To his majesty therefore, and if he pleases, to his parliament, must be referred your invasion of the rights of the imperial sovereignty : by your own acts you will be judged : you need not be apprehensive of any misrepresentations ; as it is not in the power of your enemies, if you have any, to add to your publications : they are plain and explicit, and need no comment. It is my duty, and I shall do it with regret, to transmit to the king true copies of your proceedings : and that his majesty may have an opportunity to signify his pleasure thereon before you meet again, I think it necessary to prorogue this general court immediately, to the usual time of the winter session.’<sup>2</sup>

At the departure of Sir Francis Bernard, the powers of government devolved on lieutenant-governor Hutchinson, a native of the province, and in point of abilities one of the foremost men that it has produced ; but actuated by a grasping ambition, and

<sup>2</sup> Massachusetts State Papers, p. 188.

an inordinate love of office and aggrandisement. Whilst a member of the house of representatives, he had in a time of peculiar embarrassment been of great service to the province, and acquired an extensive influence: as chief justice, he was upright, impartial, and popular; but when, as lieutenant-governor and governor, he lent the aid of his powerful talents to the cause of the ministry, his popularity and influence were lost, and his name was execrated. When the disputes with Great Britain commenced, he was already a man of distinction, in favor with ministers, and justly calculating on higher preferment from them: therefore although he seems at first not to have approved the plan of taxing the colonies; yet when the dispute came to be one about the extent of the royal prerogative and of the power of parliament, his habits, and what he probably considered his interest, naturally drew him to the side of the crown; and his talents placed him at the head of the royal party.’<sup>3</sup>

The example of Massachusetts was followed by other provinces: bitter altercations took place between the legislatures and governors, several of whom, like Sir Francis Bernard, dissolved the assemblies. The spirit of disaffection every where increased; and associations against British commerce were instituted to such an extent, that the exports to America were found to fall short of those in the preceding year by £740,000: the revenue also derived from that country was reduced from £70,000 to £30,000: <sup>4</sup> manufactured articles began to be smuggled from other countries, especially from France; and thus the narrow views of ministers not only destroyed the resources of Great Britain, but tended to enrich its commercial and political rivals.

The transactions above mentioned, and the consequent loss of profits, greatly alarmed our merchants: so that about this period a circular letter

<sup>3</sup> North American Review for October, 1820, p. 328.

<sup>4</sup> In 1767 it was £110,000.

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

was sent from lord Hillsborough to the provinces, acquainting them, 'that his majesty's ministers intended to propose, in the next session of parliament, the taking off all duties on glass, paper, and colors, as having been enacted contrary to the true principles of commerce;' and assuring them, that no additional taxes were contemplated for the purpose of raising a revenue from the colonies: this concession was wisely made to conciliate America, in the present state of disaffection and discontent prevailing in England. 'But,' says Mr. Belsham, 'as the wisdom of man is generally blended with a portion of folly, the duty on tea was purposely and invidiously left, as a mark of the legislative supremacy of Great Britain, very contrary to the inclinations and earnest endeavors of the minister, who by cogent arguments demonstrated in council the impolicy of leaving that fatal germ of contention to expand into incurable animosity. But though the duke of Grafton was on this occasion powerfully supported by lord Camden, and various other names of the highest respectability, his system of moderation was unfortunately overruled in the cabinet, on a point of primary importance within his own department, by the operation of that secret and baleful influence, which, it might surely have been imagined, the evil genius of Britain alone could at this momentous conjuncture have awakened into action. From this period the duke entertained fixed and serious ideas of relinquishing his station so soon as a successor could be provided by his majesty.'<sup>5</sup>

Discon-  
tents in  
England.

During the summer, discontents rose higher in England than at any preceding period of the reign. The disputes with America, and the expulsion of Wilkes, kept the public mind in a state of constant excitement; especially since to this latter cause of dissatisfaction, was added that arising from the nomination of a man supported only by a minority;

<sup>5</sup> History of England, vol. v. p. 286. It has been thought proper to quote this passage, because Mr. Belsham had the opportunity of consulting private documents relating to the duke of Grafton's public life.



which involved a constitutional right of great importance. The question was, whether expulsion constituted disqualification during the current parliament. The great abilities of Dr. Johnson were employed in proving the affirmative :<sup>6</sup> and his chief argument was, that the power of disqualification was necessary to the house of commons ; for otherwise expulsion would be a nominal, not a real punishment. It was contended, on the other side, that although the house of commons could expel, the concurrence of all branches of the legislature was necessary to incapacitate ; and on these grounds the city of London petitioned the king to dissolve the parliament. The writer who entered most fully into this question, on the grounds of law and precedent, was the celebrated author of Junius's Letters, who began his fierce implacable warfare against the conductors of government in the beginning of this year. His argument rested on the axiom, that political expediency does not prove existing law. He defied his opponents to produce any statute applicable to the subject ; and with regard to the precedent of Walpole, on which they mainly rested, he took it to pieces, and showed that it was not a case in point.<sup>7</sup>

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

Junius's  
Letters.

The Middlesex election also drew forth the powers of this extraordinary writer, who eagerly embraced so favorable an opportunity of advancing the great object he had in view, the restoration of the whig aristocracy to power : to effect this it was necessary to overthrow the duke of Grafton's administration, which he accordingly attacked with the most virulent invective and the most energetic eloquence. To an indignation against this hated cabinet in general, he added strong personal resentment against individual members of it ; and availing himself of his impenetrable secrecy, mixing up truth with falsehood, supplying deficiency of information with bold conjecture or shameless fiction, combining public

<sup>6</sup> In his essay intitled False Alarm.

<sup>7</sup> See Letter xv, dated July 19, 1769.

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

grievances with popular clamor, and national pressure with party interests,—he formed a strong and masked battery, which he brought to bear with terrific effect on the fortress of ministerial power. But though we may start at the boldness of his calumnies, or shudder at the almost demoniacal spirit which sometimes appears in his denunciations against the highest characters in the realm, it must be confessed that good arose from the alarm which he rang throughout the kingdom: the people were roused to watch the designs of their rulers, to inspect vigilantly the state of public affairs, and to examine questions in which the safety of the constitution and their own liberties were concerned: ‘from that period,’ as an ingenious writer observes, ‘no erring politician was suffered to remain in peace, no guilty one to escape with impunity: the supporters of arbitrary power, the ministers of secret corruption, all who sought in any manner to trample on the liberty of the people, trembled at the very name of Junius. To fly from his wrath, or to contend with his censure, was equally hopeless: the endeavor to refute his accusations in most cases only rendered their truth more evident and their power more sure. An expedient to destroy the force of his satire acted in the hand of the inventor like a sword of steel against the forked lightning of heaven;—it gave a steadier direction and a more burning intensity to the angry flash.’<sup>a</sup>

Assuming the country to be verging towards ruin from evil counsels, popular commotions, wasted finances, and the jealousy of foreign powers, he made his attacks on specific measures and political characters, for a double purpose: he wished to trace the source of all this evil to the system introduced by lord Bute in the beginning of the reign, and to show that the present members of administration were the fittest tools for carrying that system into effect: the Middlesex election therefore offered him

<sup>a</sup> North American Review, No. 20, p. 316.

a fine occasion of assailing them through the parliament, which he represented as their worthless instrument in violating the elective franchise, and thus wounding the constitution in one of its most vital parts. But not content with laying ministers, with lords and commons, prostrate at his feet, he determined to attack the system in the very highest quarters; and in a letter addressed to the king himself, which was dexterously adapted to the popular prejudices, and to the views of the whig aristocracy, he imputed all the errors of his majesty's reign to a dereliction of the policy of his predecessors, and his adhesion to those new counsellors, who are designated as Scotchmen, in allusion to the country of lord Bute. 'I am ready,' says he, 'to hope for every thing from their new-born zeal, and from the future steadiness of their allegiance; but hitherto they have no claim to your favor. To honor them with a determined predilection and confidence, in exclusion of your English subjects, who placed your family, and, in spite of treachery and rebellion, have supported it on the throne, is a mistake too gross even for the unsuspecting generosity of youth: we trace it however to an original bias in your education, and are ready to allow for your inexperience.'

The precaution of his printer and publisher served only to increase the fame and exasperate the attacks of Junius: but though he succeeded by the artillery of his wit and eloquence to effect a breach in the political fortress, the whigs were unable to enter: its defenders changed their leader and a few subalterns, but kept firm possession of the place.

Alarmed at the prevailing spirit of the people, ministers now sought to counteract it by procuring loyal addresses from various parts of the country; but only four counties, and very few corporations, beside the two universities, were found willing to forward their views; while numerous petitions of a contrary tendency, accompanied by virulent remonstrances and insolent expostulations, had the effect

Prevalence  
of faction.

CHAP.  
XI.

1769.

of raising discontent to an extraordinary height, before the legislature could assemble.<sup>9</sup> With a farther view of embarrassing government, the city of London again elected alderman Beckford to the mayoralty : an attempt was made to prevent it, by reference to some ancient by-laws, which forbade the same person to be chosen twice within the space of seven years ; but the objection was overruled by precedents.

Ireland, as well as England, was in a state of trouble and commotion : the great expenses of elections, after the octennial bill had passed, were severely felt ; and the constant residence of the chief governor offended many, with whose power and influence it began to interfere. Loyal addresses however having been voted without much opposition in both houses, a motion was made, and after considerable trouble carried, to augment the military force in that country by a completion of the battalions on the Irish establishment : many important regulations also were introduced into the routine of service.

Affairs of  
India.

The affairs of India now require some portion of our attention. It was to be expected that a dominion like that of the British would remain for some time in a state of weakness, and be subject to continual attacks : accordingly, soon after lord Clive's departure, hostile operations were commenced by Hyder Ali, a soldier of fortune, and of great talents, who had usurped the government of Mysore, and devoted the resources of his powerful mind to the establishment of a vigorous and efficient administration. Finding the British power a strong barrier against the extension of his dominion, he artfully attempted to engage the native princes to combine with him

<sup>9</sup> How unexpected by ministers were the tumults raised on account of Wilkes, may be seen from the following letter of lord Rochford to Sir A. Mitchell :—' I write only to have the satisfaction of acquainting you, that on Friday last the expulsion of Mr. Wilkes from the house of commons was determined by a majority of 219 to 137 ; which, it is hoped, will undeceive foreign courts with regard to the embarrassment they might suppose would continue to be given to government by that turbulent spirit.'

against their protectors ; in pursuance of which scheme, he prevailed on the nizam, or subahdar of the Deccan, to forego his alliance with the English, and to join him in a declaration of war. An English corps under colonel Smith, which was in Hyder Ali's dominions, but had separated from the nizam's army in consequence of some intimation of his designs, was attacked on its march, near Changamal, by the united forces of the new allies. The assault was sustained for the space of an hour, and the enemy at length vigorously repelled ; but the British were obliged to hasten, in a march of thirty-six hours without any refreshment, to Trinomalee. Here they took refuge within the fortress, from which they beheld the surrounding country covered with the enemy's troops, and devastated with fire and sword. Colonel Smith however did not long remain idle, though obliged to act with caution. After some engagements, the nizam, whose resources and disordered government could ill endure a protracted contest, grew heartily tired of the war, and signified to the English a desire of negotiation. As a security against deception, colonel Smith insisted that he should first separate his forces from those of Hyder ; but in the mean time the period of operations returned ; and the English commander, being reinforced, defeated the enemy in a severe action near Amboor. This disaster quickly brought the nizam to terms ; and a treaty was concluded in February, 1768, by which he ceded the dewanee of Carnatic Balagaut to the company, subject however to a payment of seven lacs per annum, and the same tribute to the Mah-rattas : the English agreed to assist him with two battalions of sepoys and six pieces of cannon as often as required ; and the tribute due to the nizam for the Circars was reduced from a perpetual rent of nine lacs, to that of seven for the space of six years.

The defeat and separation of the allies raised the tone of the Madras government ; and to bring the conduct of the war more under its control, two members of council were injudiciously sent to

CHAP.  
XI.

1767-69.

act as field deputies, without whose concurrence no operations could be carried on. These members compelled the commander of the troops to renounce his own plan of operations, in order to act offensively against Mysore; but the army, too feeble for the enterprise, could not proceed with energy; and the summer passed away in unavailing movements. Hyder, whose government required his presence, made in September overtures for peace, which were haughtily rejected; but he was by no means inattentive to the concerns of the war. Taught by experience, he now avoided a general engagement with the English; but he straitened their quarters, cut off their supplies, and exhausted them in an unavailing pursuit: having also increased his army by alliances with the Mahrattas, he took the considerable fortress of Mulwaggle, and gained some advantages over colonel Wood, who in vain attempted to recover the place. The presidency, dissatisfied with the progress of the war under colonel Smith, who in return was highly exasperated by the control of the field deputies, recalled that excellent officer, and commanded their ally, Mohammed Ali, nabob of Arcot, to join the army, which was becoming weak and despondent through sickness and desertion. Hyder now displayed increasing vigor: he fiercely attacked colonel Wood, and that officer was unable to save his baggage: before the end of the year he recovered all the territory he had lost; and in January, 1769, he carried his usual ravages into the Carnatic; the whole southern part of which he plundered and laid waste, except the dominions of the rajah of Tanjore, who saved himself by a timely accommodation. The British army, being unprovided with cavalry, could neither overtake the enemy nor interrupt his devastations. Under these circumstances, colonel Smith was again sent to take the chief command, who straitened the enemy's movements, and dexterously interposed a detachment between Hyder and his own dominions: this however was of less consequence to that chief, as he

drew his resources from the countries in which he fought.

CHAP.  
XI.

1767-69.

Hyder now, in his turn, meditated a stroke, which he executed with great address : sending home all his heavy baggage and plunder from Pondicherry, where he had been twice to confer with the French, he drew the British army, by a series of skilful movements, to a considerable distance from Madras : then putting himself at the head of 6000 horse, and performing a march of 120 miles in three days, he appeared suddenly in the neighborhood of that city. His demands were, that a negotiation for peace should be opened instantly, during which all advances of the army in the field should be forbidden. The council were struck with consternation : the fort indeed might have held out till the arrival of colonel Smith ; but the open town with all its riches, the adjacent country with the fine garden-houses of the governor and council, would have been ravaged and destroyed. Hyder's proposition therefore was accepted, and a treaty concluded on the fourth of April, 1769, which stipulated, first, for mutual restitution of conquests ; and, secondly, for mutual aid and alliance in defensive wars.

Hyder Ali was discovered to be the ablest foe with whom the British had been yet engaged in India ; and this was the first war, in which, without acquiring any advantage, they had incurred the loss of all their expenses. The price of East India stock, in consequence of these disasters, fell sixty per cent. ; and the treaty with Hyder was for the directors a never-failing source of resentment and reproach : they accused the presidency of irresolution and incapacity, and blamed the pusillanimity with which peace had been made at the dictation of an enemy, and the foundation laid of future insult : yet they pretended not that the renunciation of conquests was worse than a continuation of the war ; or that the vain boast of driving Hyder's cavalry from the walls of Madras would not have been dearly purchased with the plunder of the city and adjacent country. The

CHAP.  
XI.

1767-69.

answer of the presidency was, 'that they were compelled to make peace for want of money to wage war.'<sup>10</sup>

In the mean time, the government of Madras, unable alone to support the expenses incurred, was obliged to draw on the council of Calcutta for supplies: the money remitted from Bengal, during a depreciation of coinage, occasioned an immense loss from the enhanced rate of exchange; and the possessors of unadulterated silver were so tenacious of it, that few rupees were in circulation: investments could no longer be made to China, and the labors of manufacturers were at a stand. At this time also a new subject of alarm arose with regard to Sujah Dowla, who was said to be augmenting and disciplining his troops; but a deputation sent from Calcutta to examine into his conduct, induced him to disband a great part of his forces, and enter into a treaty not to increase them beyond a limited number.

The alarm excited in England by this dangerous state of the company's affairs induced the directors to propose sending out new commissioners, called supervisors, with authority to examine and rectify every department, even so far as to countermand the operations and suspend the authority of the presidents and councils. The scheme was vehemently opposed by the friends of the present rulers in India, and by those who disliked the accumulation of exorbitant powers in a few hands: but the general disappointment of the proprietors in their golden dreams prevailed; and this important trust was delegated to Mr. Vansittart, Mr. Scrafton, and colonel Ford, who had all distinguished themselves in the affairs of India.

These differences however were scarcely terminated, before the directors were embarrassed by a claim of the government, in consequence of an application made for two ships of the line with some frigates,

<sup>10</sup> Mill's British India, vol. iii. p. 425.



that the naval officer whom the crown might appoint should be allowed to take a share in transactions with native princes, and act as a principal in the offensive and defensive policy of the country. The directors represented this proposal as affecting the honor and existence of the company, and illustrated its bad policy from the ruin of the French East India company. The great argument on the other side was furnished by lord Clive, and the directors themselves, who had used the most emphatical terms to create a belief that the unprosperous state of their government was wholly produced by the rapacity and misconduct of those who conducted it in the east: the authority of a king's officer was held up as an indispensable security against these delinquencies; and the dignity of the master whom he served was represented as necessary to add weight to the negotiations of a commercial body. After long and acrimonious debates, the powers demanded by government were condemned in a court of proprietors; but a compromise was at last effected; the company consenting to sanction the interference of the naval commander within the gulf of Persia, where they were embroiled with some of the neighboring chiefs: the demand for two ships of the line was suspended on one side, and the legal objection to the commission of the supervisors withdrawn on the other. Two frigates, beside the squadron for the gulf of Persia, were ordered on the Indian service: in one of them the supervisors took their passage; but she never reached her port; nor was any intelligence of her, or of her passengers, ever received.

## APPENDIX.

No. I. p. 158.

LETTER FROM MR. PITT TO A FRIEND IN THE CITY.

[Quoted in Woodfall's edition of Junius, v. ii. p. 454.]

‘Dear sir,

‘FINDING, to my great surprise, that the cause and manner of my resigning the seals is grossly misrepresented in the city, as well as that the most gracious and spontaneous marks of his majesty’s approbation of my services, which marks followed my resignation, have been infamously traduced as a bargain for my forsaking the public, I am under a necessity of declaring the truth of both these facts, in a manner which I am sure no gentleman will contradict. A difference of opinion with regard to measures to be taken against Spain, of the highest importance to the honor of the crown, and to the most essential national interests, and this founded on what Spain had already done, not on what that court may farther intend to do,—was the cause of my resigning the seals. Lord Temple and I submitted in writing, and signed by us, our most humble sentiments to his majesty; which being overruled by the united opinion of all the rest of the king’s servants, I resigned the seals on Monday the fifth of this month, in order not to remain responsible for measures which I was no longer allowed to guide. Most gracious public marks of his majesty’s approbation of my services followed my resignation: they are unmerited and unsolicited; and I shall ever be proud to have received them from the best of sovereigns. I will now only add, my dear sir, that I have explained these matters only for the honor of truth, not in any view to court return of confidence from any man, who, with a credulity as weak at it is injurious, has thought fit hastily to withdraw his good opinion from one who has served his country with fidelity and success, and who justly reveres the upright and candid judgment of it; little solicitous about the censures of the capricious and the ungenerous. Accept my sincerest acknowledgements for all your kind friendship, and believe me ever, with truth and esteem, my dear sir, your faithful friend,

‘W. PITT.’

No. II. p. 159:

LORD BUTE TO LORD MELCOMBE.

' My dear lord,

October 8th, 1761.

' Whatever private motives of uneasiness I might have in the late administration, I am far from thinking the dissolution of it favorable in the present minute to the king's affairs. Without entering into the causes of the war, it is sufficient to observe that it was a national one, and that the honor of the nation is pledged to support its allies. You, my dear lord, cannot dislike it more than I do; but as we have to do with a most treacherous enemy, whose infamous prevarications have been so lately experienced, we must act with redoubled vigor and spirit before we can hope to bring them to such a peace, as, from our repeated conquests, this country has a right to expect; such a peace as I, with this load of responsibility, durst put my name to. This being so, the change of a minister cannot, at present, make any remarkable change in measures. I sigh after peace, but will not sue for it: not out of pride, or from motives of self-preservation, though both might without dishonor be urged; but from a thorough conviction that begging it from France is not the way to procure it. Indeed, my good lord, my situation, at all times perilous, is become much more so, for I am no stranger to the language held in this great city: our darling's resignation is owing to lord Bute, who might have prevented it with the king, and he must answer for all the consequences; which is, in other words, for the miscarriage of another's system, that he (Pitt) himself could not have prevented. All this keeps up my attention, strengthens my mind without alarming it, and not only whispers caution, but steadiness and resolution.'

LORD MELCOMBE TO LORD BUTE, IN ANSWER.

'October 8th, 1761.

' I look on the late event as an obstacle removed, not as added, when peace is to be treated. Your lordship may remember some months ago I said I thought Mr. Pitt would never make peace, because he could never make such a peace as he had taught the nation to expect. I suppose he now sees that we are within a year or two of an impracticability of carrying on the war on the present footing; and may think, by going out on a spirited pretence, to turn the attention and dissatisfaction of the public on those, who, at a ruinous expense, are to carry on his wild measures; and whom they have been taught to dislike by a total abandonment of the press to him and his creatures, which I humbly hope you will now think proper to employ better. I

can say nothing to the treachery and prevarication of France in the late negotiation, being totally ignorant of all those transactions. I intirely agree with you, that we must act with redoubled vigor in carrying on the war, to obtain a proper peace; but it may be a doubt whether carrying it on in the same manner may be prudent, or even long practicable. I also agree with your lordship, that where honor is pledged it must be maintained; but whether, after what we have done to support our allies, we cannot maintain it at a less expense than ruin to ourselves without effect to them, may be worthy of consideration. I am sensible I am writing on a subject I am no ways informed about: the mention made of it in your letter drew me into it: I have done: as you approve of the war, in what manner soever you carry it on, I shall never say one word more against it, public or private; but will support it whenever I am called on, as well as my distance from the scene of business will allow me: I told you I would do so, after having told you my opinion, when you did me the honor to command me to be your friend. Indeed, my dear lord, I wish and mean to serve you, and am sure I never will disserve you, which is, I fear, as far as my poor abilities are likely to go. I am glad the king has given the seals; and as you approve of it, I suppose they are well disposed of: the sooner it is public the better: I wish they had been given as soon as they were resumed. I think there can be nothing in the house of commons; if there should, Mr. Grenville, no doubt, will do his best: I fear he is not very popular there; but you have friends there that are so, and very able too. The insolence of the city is intolerable: they must, and they easily may be, taught better manners. I was bred a monarchy man, and will die so; and I do not understand that men of that rank are to demand reasons of measures, while they are under his majesty's consideration. As to you, my dear lord, I am sure you laugh at them; and know that the moment they are threatened with the king's displeasure, those who were at your throat will be at your feet.'

END OF VOL. I.

PRINTED BY A. J. VALPY,  
RED LION COURT, FLEET STREET.











This book should be returned to the  
Library on or before the last date stamped  
below.

A fine of five cents a day is incurred by  
retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

Br 2035.14  
The history of England,  
Widener Library 005352121



3 2044 081 147 365